

University of Groningen

The protection pyramid approach

Janssen, Laura

IMPORTANT NOTE: You are advised to consult the publisher's version (publisher's PDF) if you wish to cite from it. Please check the document version below.

Document Version

Publisher's PDF, also known as Version of record

Publication date:

2017

[Link to publication in University of Groningen/UMCG research database](#)

Citation for published version (APA):

Janssen, L. (2017). *The protection pyramid approach: A contribution to the protection of internally displaced persons by combining bottom up coping mechanisms and top down protection strategies into a partnership approach to protection*. University of Groningen.

Copyright

Other than for strictly personal use, it is not permitted to download or to forward/distribute the text or part of it without the consent of the author(s) and/or copyright holder(s), unless the work is under an open content license (like Creative Commons).

The publication may also be distributed here under the terms of Article 25fa of the Dutch Copyright Act, indicated by the "Taverne" license. More information can be found on the University of Groningen website: <https://www.rug.nl/library/open-access/self-archiving-pure/taverne-amendment>.

Take-down policy

If you believe that this document breaches copyright please contact us providing details, and we will remove access to the work immediately and investigate your claim.

Downloaded from the University of Groningen/UMCG research database (Pure): <http://www.rug.nl/research/portal>. For technical reasons the number of authors shown on this cover page is limited to 10 maximum.



university of
 groningen

The Protection Pyramid Approach

A Contribution to the Protection of Internally Displaced Persons by
 combining Bottom Up Coping Mechanisms and Top Down Protection
 Strategies into a Partnership Approach to Protection

PhD thesis

to obtain the degree of PhD at the
 University of Groningen
 on the authority of the
 Rector Magnificus Prof. E. Sterken
 and in accordance with
 the decision by the College of Deans.

This thesis will be defended in public on
 Monday 18 September 2017 at 16.15 hours

by

Laura Janssen

born on 21 October 1980
 in Rotterdam

Supervisors

Prof. J. Herman

Prof. J.J.M. Zeelen

Co-supervisor

Dr. Patrick F. Gibbons

Assessment Committee

Prof. A.J. Zwitter

Prof. P. Valenzuela

Prof. J.H. de Wilde

With Special Thanks to External Expert Dr. B.J. Jansen in his Capacity as Additional Assessor.

Cover: Aart Brinks and Marloes Viet

**ISBN: 978-90-367-9944-7 (Printed Book)
ISBN: 978-90-367-9943-0 (Ebook)**

Copyright © Laura Brinks Janssen 2017

The Protection Pyramid Approach

A Contribution to the Protection of Internally
Displaced Persons by combining Bottom up Coping
Mechanisms and Top Down Protection Strategies into
a Partnership Approach to Protection

Laura Brinks Janssen

University of Groningen and University College Dublin
September 2017

Acknowledgements

Get wisdom, get understanding; do not forget my words or turn away from them. Do not forsake wisdom, and she will protect you; love her, and she will watch over you. The beginning of wisdom is this: Get[a] wisdom. Though it cost all you have,[b] get understanding. (Proverbs 4:5-7 New International Version)

When starting this PhD ‘Wisdom’ and ‘Understanding’ were almost secondary to my burning desire to change the world, ‘to make it a better place’. Thanks to ever so kind reminders of my supervisors, I was able to centre this PhD on ‘wisdom’ and ‘understanding’. Now, upon completion of the PhD process, I can utilise my model to accomplish change, fight for those who deserve protection and unleash the activist who has been slumbering inside me. However, before I do this warm words of thanks need to be written. My utmost gratitude goes to my chief supervisor Prof. Dr. Joost Herman. Without him this PhD would never have been completed. He has encouraged me during all moments of uncertainty, frustration, and outright despair. His kindness, constructive criticism and personal interest have made it possible that I am now writing these acknowledgements. I also want to thank my second supervisor Prof. Dr. Jacques Zeelen. Our mutual love for Uganda and keen interest in Giddens’ theory have made working with him a great pleasure. His comments have been extremely helpful and I enjoyed the talks we had in our office. This PhD would never have started without the faith put in me by Dr. Pat Gibbons. He welcomed me into his faculty, helping me reintegrate into academic life upon my return from Sudan. His background in Sociology and his commitment to ensure this PhD had the highest standard, resulted in the current ‘breadth and depth’ (his favourite words) of the Theoretical Framework. Other academics (and friends) who were instrumental to this PhD are Prof. Dr. Andrej Zwitter, Prof. Dr. Jaap de Wilde and Dr. Pedro Valenzuela.

This PhD was written thanks to the support of the Network on Humanitarian Action (NOHA) and the Research Institute for the Study of Culture (ICOG) of University of Groningen. I am very grateful for the support and encouragement I received from the staff members and fellow academics. I would like to specifically mention Lada Roslycky and Pieter Swieringa, who became dear friends. Additionally I would like to mention the other universities and their people who contributed in one way or another to this research; University College Dublin (Dublin, Ireland), Makerere University (Kampala, Uganda), Gulu University (Gulu, Uganda), Javeriana University (Bogotá, Colombia), Columbia University (New York, USA) and Gadjah Mada University (Yogyakarta, Indonesia).

Though the people and institutions mentioned above have been crucial for this research, true wisdom and understanding came from the Bottom Up and Top Down actors I interviewed in my case study countries. I am humbled by the trust, honesty, open-heartedness

and kindness with which all my questions were answered. Being told all the stories and share the (often extremely painful) memories of these people was a privilege. Each story made me realize how blessed I am and strengthened my commitment to pass these blessings on. Special thanks goes to my three translators who enabled me, regardless of language and culture barriers, to communicate with people with true rapport (Alisa Bilalic, Indiana Ramirez Nates and Daphine Ayat Ongai). Equally instrumental was the assistance offered to me by the Norwegian Refugee Council in Northern Uganda (Lamin Manjang and his great team). Without their knowledge, (logistical) support and kindness it would have been very difficult to reach the interviewees in the remote parts of Acholiland. Incredible and heart-warming support has also been given to me by Rudolf Muller, Mladen Kakuca, Sandra Borda, Robert Kabumbuli, Ernst Suur, Reint Bakema, Sanne van Brink and Lina Schönfeld. Some of who even welcomed me into their homes and offered me a (couch) place to sleep!

Two people who should be elaborately thanked are Mark Aiken and Marloes Viet. Their patience, creativity and friendship has made this PhD the impressive and beautiful book it has become. Intellectual stimulation, improving the content of the PhD and for which I am very grateful, has been provided to me by Ulla Pape, Cecile de Miliانو, Peace Buhwa, Alice Wabule, and Bastiaan Aardema. Also important was the support provided by Jarno Hoving, Elena Herman-Pletjugina, Anne Markey, Jim Phelan and John Telford.

My deepest gratitude goes to my family and friends who have supported, encouraged and consoled me during my bumpy PhD ride. These people know about my PhD abbreviation obsession, thanks for our laughs. Friends near and far who have always been there for me and whom I love dearly are Anne Huser, Aminta Gutierrez, Philip Dive, Christiena de Vries, Jonneke Swieringa and Delices Sine. The most important person is my husband Aart Brinks. He experienced, first-hand, the ups and downs of the PhD. His assistance was essential in the final stages of the PhD. More importantly however, is his unwavering trust in me. He always believed in me, respected every choice I made and never stopped loving me. I love him very much. He, and our son Willem, are the most precious things in the world to me.

Also unmeasurably precious to me are my paranimphs, Marjolein Annen-Conner and Jennifer Bosch-Meyer. These two ladies, together with my other best friend, Gea Finken, bore the brunt of my PhD ranting and despair and have been there for me throughout the years. Without these ladies I would not be defending my PhD. Their husbands Menno Conner, Rudolf Bosch and Leon Niehof have become great friends too. I would like to thank my aunt Miriam Koning, for answering my calls day or night. I also want to thank my friends in the Oosterkerk. Their encouragement, interest and prayer gave me the energy to keep going. Special words of love and appreciation go to my parents in law, Jan and Willy Brinks, who treat me like their daughter. Finally, I could not have completed this PhD without my parents, Rob and Els Janssen. Their love, encouragement, support and faith has enabled (and continues to enable) me to reach for the stars. To all these people, and the ones I might have forgotten, I say thank you!!

Table of Contents

Acknowledgements	1
Acronym List	11
Executive Summary	14
Introduction	17
Research Question:.....	21
Overall Objective:	22
Specific Objectives:.....	22
Hypotheses:	22
Theoretical Framework and Research Methodology:	23
Pilot Case Study Country History - Bosnia Herzegovina	26
Case Study Country History - Colombia.....	27
Case Study Country History - Uganda	31
Concluding Remarks	35
Chapter Two: Theoretical Framework	36
2.1 Protection Definitions, Models and Approaches.....	37
2.1.1 Protection Evolution	37
2.1.2 Protection Definitions, Models and Approaches	46
2.1.3 Application Protection Criteria and Typologies	50
2.2 Dualisms, Protection Providers and Needs	56
2.2.1 Protection and Dualisms	56
2.2.2 Protection Receivers and Providers and their Needs	57
2.2.3 Application Dualisms, Providers and Needs	59
2.3 Protection and Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Theory	62
2.3.1 Explanation Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Theory.....	62
2.3.2 Criticisms Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Theory	64
2.3.3 Application Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Theory for Protection	66
2.4 Revised Definition of Protection.....	68
2.4.1 Elements of the Revised Definition of Protection	68
2.4.2 Application of Revised Definition of Protection	70

2.5 Protection and International Human Rights Instruments	72
2.5.1 Creation of the Protection Pyramid.....	72
2.5.2 Application of the Protection Pyramid	74
2.6 Protection and Anthony Giddens’ Structuration Theory.....	76
2.6.1 Explanation of Giddens’ Structuration Theory.....	76
2.6.2 Criticisms on Giddens’ Structuration Theory	80
2.6.3 Application of Giddens’ Structuration Theory	81
2.7 Protection and Phases in IDP Displacement	84
2.7.1 Explanation of Different Phases in IDP Displacement.....	84
2.7.2 Application of Displacement Phases in IDP Protection	85
2.8 Protection Analysis and Feedback	87
2.8.1 Introduction of the Protection Pyramid Approach.....	87
2.8.2 Protection Potential of the Protection Pyramid Approach.....	89
2.9 Summarising Remarks	91
Chapter Three: Research Design & Operationalisation.....	92
3.1 Research Design.....	92
3.1.1 Ontology	93
3.1.2 Epistemology	96
3.1.3 Methodology.....	99
3.1.4 Research Principles.....	103
3.1.5 Exploration.....	107
3.1.6 Summarising Remarks	108
3.2 Research Operationalisation.....	108
3.2.1 Operationalisation Elements	108
3.2.2 Sampling	110
3.2.3 The remaining Parts of the Research Process (Data Collection, Processing, Analysis, Interpretation and Reporting).....	113
3.2.4 Summarising Remarks	119
Chapter Four: BU Data Presentation & Analysis - Colombia & Uganda	120

4.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology	121
4.1.1 Colombia.....	121
4.1.2 Uganda.....	123
4.1.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component One	124
4.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities	126
4.2.1 Colombia.....	127
4.2.2 Uganda.....	128
4.2.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Two	130
4.3 Component Three: Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid	132
4.3.1 Colombia.....	133
4.3.2 Uganda.....	135
4.3.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Three	137
4.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction	139
4.4.1 Colombia.....	140
4.4.2 Uganda.....	142
4.4.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Four	143
4.5 Component Five: International (Human Rights) Law	146
4.5.1 Colombia.....	147
4.5.2 Uganda.....	148
4.5.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Five	149
4.6 Component Six: Giddens’ Structuration Theory.....	151
4.6.1 Colombia.....	152
4.6.2 Uganda.....	154
4.6.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Six	157
4.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement.....	159
4.7.1 Colombia.....	160
4.7.2 Uganda.....	161
4.7.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven.....	162

4.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD	164
4.8.1 Colombia.....	164
4.8.2 Uganda.....	170
4.8.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight.....	176
4.9 Conclusion.....	178
Chapter Five: TD Data Presentation & Analysis - Colombia & Uganda.....	180
5.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology	181
5.1.1 Colombia.....	181
5.1.2 Uganda.....	183
5.1.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component One	185
5.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities	186
5.2.1 Colombia.....	186
5.2.2 Uganda.....	188
5.2.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Two	189
5.3 Component Three: Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid	192
5.3.1 Colombia.....	193
5.3.2 Uganda.....	195
5.3.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Three	198
5.4 Component Four: Revised Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction	200
5.4.1 Colombia.....	201
5.4.2 Uganda.....	204
5.4.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Four	206
5.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law	208
5.5.1 Colombia.....	208
5.5.2 Uganda.....	210
5.5.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Five.....	212
5.6 Component Six: Giddens’ Structuration Theory.....	214
5.6.1 Colombia.....	215

5.6.2 Uganda.....	217
5.6.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Six	220
5.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement.....	222
5.7.1 Colombia.....	222
5.7.2 Uganda.....	225
5.7.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven	226
5.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD	229
5.8.1 Colombia.....	230
5.8.2 Uganda.....	234
5.8.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight	239
5.9 Conclusion.....	241
Chapter Six: Partnership Approach - Colombia & Uganda	243
6.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology	244
Figure 6.1: PPA Component One - Protection Criteria and Typologies.....	244
6.1.1 Colombia.....	244
6.1.2 Uganda.....	246
6.1.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component One	247
6.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities	249
6.2.1 Colombia.....	249
6.2.2 Uganda.....	251
6.2.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Two	252
6.3 Component Three: Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid	254
6.3.1 Colombia.....	254
6.3.2 Uganda.....	256
6.3.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Three	259
6.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction	261
6.4.1 Colombia.....	262
6.4.2 Uganda.....	263

6.4.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Four	265
6.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law	267
6.5.1 Colombia.....	267
6.5.2 Uganda.....	269
6.5.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Five.....	270
6.6 Component Six: Giddens’ Structuration Theory.....	272
6.6.1 Colombia.....	273
6.6.2 Uganda.....	274
6.6.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Six	276
6.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement.....	277
6.7.1 Colombia.....	277
6.7.2 Uganda.....	279
6.7.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven.....	280
6.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD	282
6.8.1 Colombia.....	282
6.8.2 Uganda.....	284
6.8.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight	286
6.9 Conclusion.....	288
Chapter Seven: Synergy between Theory and Practice.....	289
7.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology	290
7.1.1 Ten Protection Criteria.....	290
7.1.2 Five Protection Typologies	291
7.1.3 Discussion Component One.....	292
7.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities	294
7.2.1 Protection Providers.....	294
7.2.2 ‘Felt’, ‘Perceived’ and ‘Derived’ Needs.....	295
7.2.3 Discussion Component Two.....	296
7.3 Component Three: Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid	299

7.3.1 Physiological, Safety, Love, Esteem Needs and the need for Self-Actualisation	299
7.3.2 Discussion Component Three	300
7.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction	304
7.4.1 Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity	304
7.4.2 Discussion Component Four	305
7.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law	311
7.5.1 International Human Rights Law	311
7.5.2 IDP-related Law	312
7.5.3 Discussion Component Five	313
7.6 Component Six: Giddens’ Structuration Theory	317
7.6.1 Agency	317
7.6.2 Structure	318
7.6.3 Interaction Agency and Structure leading to the Duality of Structure	319
7.6.4 Other Elements of PPA Component Six	320
7.6.5 Discussion Component Six	322
7.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement	327
7.7.1 Phases of IDP Displacement	327
7.7.2 Discussion	328
7.8 Component Eight: Feedback of PPA to BU and TD Actors	333
7.8.1 Inter-Component Analysis Discussion	333
7.8.2 Feedback BU and TD actors	338
7.9 Conclusion	342
Conclusion	346
Main and Sub Research Questions	347
Theoretical Framework	348
Methodology	350
Answers to Sub Research Objectives	351
Sub Research Objective One (Chapter Four)	351

Sub Research Objective Two (Chapter Five)	352
Sub Research Objective Three (Chapter Six)	353
Sub Research Objective Four (Chapter Seven)	355
Appendices	360
Appendix 1: IDP Protection Framework in Colombia	361
Appendix 2: Ugandan Presidents Following Independence.....	367
Nederlandse Samenvatting	368
Curriculum Vitae.....	371
Reference List	372

Acronym List

Acronym	Explanation
A	Agency
ALNAP	Active Learning Network for Accountability and Performance
AU	African Union
AUC	Autodefensas Unidas de Colombia (United Self-Defence Forces of Colombia)
BU	Bottom Up
CB	Capacity-building
CBA	Community-based Approach
CBO	Community-based Organisations
CPEs	Complex Political Emergencies
DCs	Dignifying Centres
DDMC	District Disaster Management Committees
DfID	UK Department for International Development
DS	Duality of Structure
DV	Dependent Variable
ECOSOCC	Economic, Social and Cultural Council
ELN	Ejército de Liberación Nacional (National Liberation Army)
ERC	Emergency Relief Coordinator
FARC-EP	Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia - Ejército Popular (Revolutionary Armed Forces of Colombia—People's Army)
GoU	Government of Uganda
GPCWG	Global Protection Cluster Working Group
GT	Grounded Theory
GWOT	Global War on Terror
HA	Humanitarian Action
HAP	Humanitarian Accountability Project
HR	Human Rights
HSM	Holy Spirit Movement
IASC	Inter Agency Standing Committee
ICCPR	International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights
ICESCR	International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights

Acronym	Explanation
ICRC	International Committee of the Red Cross
ID	Independent Variable
IDMC	Internal Displacement Monitoring Centre
IDPs	Internally Displaced Persons
IHL	International Humanitarian Law
IHRL	International Human Rights Law
IOM	International Organisation for Migration
IRL	International Refugee Law
LDU	Local Defence Unit
LRA	Lord Resistance Army
LSA	Lord Salvation Army
M19	Movimiento 19 de Abril (19th of April Movement)
NGOs	Non-Governmental Organisations
NRA	National Resistance Army
NRM	National Resistance Movement
OHCHR	Office of the High Commissioner of Human Rights
PAP	Partnership Approach to Protection
PPA	Protection Pyramid Approach
PRDP	Peace Recovery and Development Plan
Procap	Protection Standby Capacity Project
R2P	Responsibility to Protect
RBA	Rights-based Approach
RSG	Representative of the Secretary General
S	Structure
SNAIPD/SNARIV	National System for the Attention to IDP Populations
ST	Structuration Theory
TD	Top Down
UAOs	Units of Attention
UCDA	Uganda Common Defence Army
UDHR	Universal Declaration of Human Rights
UN	United Nations
UNDP	United Nations Development Programme
UNGA	UN General Assembly
UNHCR	United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees
UNICEF	United Nations Children's Fund

Acronym	Explanation
UNLA	Uganda National Liberation Army
UNPRAP	UN Peace Building and Recovery Assistance Plan for Northern Uganda
UNRC/HC	UN Resident and Humanitarian Coordinator
UP	Unión Patriótica (Patriotic Union)
UPDA	Uganda People Democratic Army
UPDF	Uganda People Defence Force
USA	United States of America
USSR	Union of Soviet Socialist Republics
WFP	World Food Programme
WHO	World Health Organisation
WWI	World War One
WWII	World War Two

Executive Summary

In the current debate around Protection and Assistance to Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) two sets of actors can be identified. On the one hand IDPs and on the other hand State, non-State actors and other (aid) actors. Research into IDP protection often focuses on either one of these groups with most attention being given to the latter group (the State etc.). In some way, this is rather surprising as it could be argued that IDPs themselves have the most knowledge on IDP protection. This is why, in this research, IDPs are seen as the driving force in their own protection. At the same time, however, IDPs do not succeed in ensuring their full protection. As such State, Non-State actors and other (aid) actors also have key roles to play in IDP protection. The interaction between these two sets of actors is at the core of this research. To support the research, data collection has been conducted in three case study countries; Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda. The research question and objectives that guided this research were:

‘What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations; which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors; and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?’

1. To document and analyse strategies being adopted by IDPs to protect themselves in Complex Political Emergencies (CPEs);
2. To identify and analyse, in general, and specifically, the approaches and strategies protection providers, mandated to protect IDPs, adopt towards IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms;
3. To critically analyse both the effect and impact of the Bottom Up and Top Down protection strategies, used by IDPs and State, Non-State and other (aid) actors, when connected in an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection, to contribute to IDP protection; and
4. To make recommendations on further improving the way in which IDPs and State, Non-State and other (aid) actors can contribute to increased IDP protection by building on their individual activities as well as utilising an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection.

Research into IDP protection is not only warranted by the large number of Internally Displaced Persons (38 million), but also because the existing protection models and approaches do not succeed in protecting these people. Extensive literature review revealed that a new model for the protection of IDPs was necessary. Utilising the methodology of Grounded Theory, academic research methods were combined with empirical data collected from both groups of

actors in the selected case study countries. The result was a model which ensures the infinite interaction between theory and practice, different protection perspectives as well as between Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) protection providers. The new model for IDP protection is called the **Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA)**.

This Approach consists of eight components which can be utilised by both BU and TD actors to obtain a comprehensive overview of IDP protection in any protection crisis worldwide. At the same time the different components of the model allow both groups of protection providers to increase their contribution to IDP protection. A single focus approach limits protection providers when trying to understand and address the challenges experienced by IDPs. The different components of the models both complement each other as well as offer alternative ways to address protection gaps.

The different components of the Protection Pyramid Approach are; Component One protection criteria and typologies to determine the protection context and culture. Component Two protection providers, needs and dualities, identifying in any given protection crisis which actors positively (or negatively) influence IDP protection and which needs they conceive IDPs have, while grounding their activities in the academic debate on Dualisms. The latter element of this component led to the realisation that the best way for Bottom Up and Top Down actors to work together is through the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). Component Three adds Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory to the PPA, enabling the visualisation of the identified needs, showing the priority of needs and providing a roadmap to the fulfilment of those needs. Component Four introduces a Revised Protection Definition, as the definitions in the literature do not pay sufficient attention to the contribution of both sets of actors in IDP protection. The revised definition centres around three elements which are Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. Component Five expands the knowledge base on the Rights element by including International Human Rights Law. As such the two Covenants on International Civil, Political, Economic, Social and Cultural Rights are located alongside Maslow's pyramid, creating a Protection Pyramid which serves as a translation device between BU and TD actors. Component Six introduces Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST). This theory provides an abstract, non-political, and extensively researched understanding of the interaction between elements. For Giddens, the key elements are Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure. These elements resemble the Bottom Up, Top Down and Partnership Approach to Protection elements introduced in Component Two, and as such they provide additional ways to facilitate interaction between the elements. Component Seven moves away from the abstract level to reality by focusing on the three phases of IDP displacement. Finally, Component Eight consolidates the previous components, showing the benefits of their interaction and feeding the lessons learned back to the different protection providers.

The Protection Pyramid Approach has been introduced in its theoretical form in chapter two, the Theoretical Framework, and operationalised in chapter three, the Methodology. Part of the methodology includes the findings of the explorative research

conducted in Bosnia Herzegovina as well as United Nations headquarters in both New York and Geneva. In line with the Grounded Theory methodology, data collection and analysis occurred simultaneously. Therefore, the findings of the field trips to Colombia and Uganda further informed the PPA, until after the last field trip the new Approach to IDP protection was finalised. The empirical data analysis has been presented in chapters four, five and six. Chapters four and five focused on the contribution of respectively Bottom Up and Top Down protection providers, while chapter six analysed their interaction in the Partnership Approach to Protection. The last (seventh) chapter of this research shows how the empirical data can improve the theoretical PPA, making the Approach even more suitable to be used by all protection providers in any protection crisis. At the same time the analysis in chapter seven also highlighted the need for continuous (represented by the infinity symbol) interaction between academics and practitioners. This occurs in the same way as, within PPA, Bottom Up and Top Down protection providers should continuously work together in the Partnership Approach to Protection, utilising each of its eight components in an intra and interactive way.

Introduction

Around 38 million Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) exist worldwide. The Internal Displacement Monitoring Centre (IDMC) recorded 11 million newly displaced people in 2014. This translates to one person having to flee their home every three seconds. The countries in which 77% of the world's IDPs live, and IDP total numbers are shown in table 1.1 (IDMC, Global Overview 2015). The high number of IDPs is due to protracted crises in five of the top ten IDP holding countries listed in table 1.1 (IDMC, 2015, p7). Comparing the IDP figure to the worldwide refugee figure, there are almost three times as many IDPs than refugees (13 million) (UNHCR, Refugee Figures). IDPs, compared to refugees, are particularly vulnerable as they are still in their home country but without a special legal framework to protect them (whereas refugees are protected by the 1951 International Refugee Convention). A common definition of who is an IDP states that *'internally displaced persons are persons or groups of persons who have been forced or obliged to flee or to leave their homes or places of habitual residence, in particular as a result of or in order to avoid the effects of armed conflict, situations of generalized violence, violations of human rights or natural or human-made disasters, and who have not crossed an internationally recognised State border'* (Reliefweb, 1998). This definition however, has, for its broadness, been disputed by some¹. In the discussion on displacement of people three phases are identified. These three phases are the flight phase, the phase during which IDPs remain outside their places of habitual origin and the return phase.

Country	Number of IDPs
Syria	7.600.000
Colombia	6.044.200
Iraq	3.376.000
Sudan	3.100.000
DR Congo	2.756.000
Pakistan	1.900.000
South Sudan	1.498.200
Somalia	1.106.800
Nigeria	1.075.300
Turkey	953.700

Table 1.1: Top 10 Ranking of Countries with IDP crisis

Refugee Figures). IDPs, compared to refugees, are particularly vulnerable as they are still in their home country but without a special legal framework to protect them (whereas refugees are protected by the 1951 International Refugee Convention). A common definition of who is an IDP states that *'internally displaced persons are persons or groups of persons who have been forced or obliged to flee or to leave their homes or places of habitual residence, in particular as a result of or in order to avoid the effects of armed conflict, situations of generalized violence, violations of human rights or natural or human-made disasters, and who have not crossed an internationally recognised State border'* (Reliefweb, 1998). This definition however, has, for its broadness, been disputed by some¹. In the discussion on displacement of people three phases are identified. These three phases are the flight phase, the phase during which IDPs remain outside their places of habitual origin and the return phase.

In order to provide protection to IDPs, it is important to have a clear understanding of what constitutes protection. At first protection was understood merely as the provision of material assistance to those in need. Over time the definition has widened and now is best summarised by the consensus reached in 1999 by a wide group of humanitarian and human rights agencies convened by the ICRC in Geneva. This group stated that protection is: *'all activities aimed at ensuring full respect for the rights of the individual in accordance with the letter and the spirit of the relevant bodies of law, i.e. human rights law, international humanitarian law and refugee law. Human rights and humanitarian organisations must conduct these activities in an impartial manner and not on the basis of race, national or ethnic origin, language or gender.'* This means that apart from physical needs, the safety, dignity

¹ Borton et al. as well as Marc Vincent, Cathrine Brun and Nina Birkeland have disputed the common IDP definition. The Norwegian Refugee Council Internal Displacement and Monitoring Centre and UNOCHA have offered an alternative approach to IDPs by developing an IDP Profiling methodology (NRC IDMC and UNOCHA, 2008).

and integrity of human beings also need to be safeguarded. (ICRC, 2001) Actors mandated to provide protection, are, most importantly, the state (UDHR, 1948), as well as the International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC), the United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees (UNHCR), the United Nations Children Fund (UNICEF) and the Office of the High Commissioner for Human Rights (OHCHR) (Slim, 2005).

From the time when International Law was developed, identifying the State as the primary duty-bearer for IDP protection, the way wars are fought and the casualties that occur as a result, have changed. Wars are increasingly fought within, instead of between States. Civilians are not only the victim of these changed war tactics; they are often even the specific target of warring parties. As a result, their rights are violated, they are deprived of their possessions and restricted in their freedoms (Deng, 2007). A common manifestation of modern warfare is Complex Political Emergencies (CPEs), defined by the Inter-Agency Standing Committee (IASC) as *'a humanitarian crisis in a country, region or society where there is a total or considerable breakdown of authority resulting from internal or external conflict and which requires an international response that goes beyond the mandate or capacity of any single agency and/or the ongoing United Nations country programme.'* (OCHA, 1999). CPEs severely threaten the provision of protection to people, as could be observed during the crises in Rwanda, Srebrenica and (South) Sudan.

During CPEs, IDPs protect themselves and are offered protection by the UN and numerous other protection providers. However, these protection providers have not been altogether successful in alleviating the suffering of IDPs. It is safe to say that the protection of IDPs has fallen in-between the responsibilities linked to state sovereignty and international involvement. IDP protection has also suffered from the absence of a designated IDP agency, instead being dependent on the different mandates of the UN family (Charny, 2007). To address this gap in IDP protection the UN increased its involvement in IDP protection and assistance. This included appointing a Representative of the Secretary General (RSG) on Internal Displacement (1992), developing the Guiding Principles of Internal Displacement (G.P.) (1998)², and setting up an Internal Displacement Division in UNOCHA in 2002 (IDD, 2002). Additionally, the Collaborative/Cluster Approach, led by an UN Humanitarian and/or Resident Coordinator, was developed. This Approach enables a broad range of actors, based on their individual mandate and expertise, to work together in displacement crises (Brookings-SAIS, 2004). As envisioned by the Guiding Principles a number of States have incorporated the Principles into their national legislation, including the case study countries chosen for this research. Still, there remains a great divide between inclusion in national legislation and the actual implementation and impact of the principles on IDPs (Kalin-2, 2007).

² Discussed in the Theoretical Framework chapter, the Guiding Principles are a legally non-binding document, drawn up by experts, listing the most relevant rights and guarantees applicable to IDPs (Reliefweb, 1998).

According to Hugo Slim this gap between national legislation and actual IDP protection can be explained by the fact that the commonly used definition of protection is inadequate because it does not pay enough attention to people. Slim believes that people are the key actors in their own protection and should always be part of any protection discussion. This is why, in this research, attention is paid to the Coping and Self-protection Mechanisms developed by people to protect themselves. There are many different points of view on what constitutes a coping or self-protection mechanism, but theoretical models dealing with coping are limited (Hobfoll et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p322). Twigg, in his Disaster Risk Reduction Paper, defines coping mechanisms as the application of indigenous knowledge in the face of hazards and other threats (Twigg, 2004). According to Holahan *'coping is a stabilizing factor that can help individuals maintain psychosocial adaptation during stressful periods; it encompasses cognitive and behavioural efforts to reduce or eliminate stressful conditions and associated emotional distress'* (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p25). Lepore and Evans define coping as *'behaviours and cognitions that a person uses to adjust to a stressor'* (Lepore and Evans in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p351).

Coping mechanisms vary depending on the environment IDPs find themselves in (rural or urban), the nature of the threat and the social, financial, legal and other resources available to them as well as cultural and historical practices (Frontline Defenders, 2008). For Hobfoll this means that people first need to lose access to their resources before they engage in coping, progressively being less able to cope as a crisis protracts (Hobfoll et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p324/327). Some authors disagree with this observation maintaining that people who are forced into coping mode are better able to cope in future or ongoing stressful situations because of their earlier experience (Lepore and Evans in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p355). Regardless of how coping is described, coping data can be obtained through introspection or observation (Schwarzer and Schwarzer in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p107).

According to Holahan et al. coping can be visualised as a process. In order to understand coping mechanisms, a researcher must first understand the 'focus' of coping, this means that it is necessary to understand the stressful event causing a person to revert to coping mechanisms (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p27). At the same time a researcher also needs to be aware of the 'method' of coping an individual uses, this includes describing the way a person copes with a stressful situation (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p28). This method is influenced by the resources at its disposal. For coping mechanisms to be successful they need to 'fit the situation', meaning that situational factors influence coping and its success (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p34).

Unfortunately, coping mechanisms often do not 'fit the situation' and IDPs are unprotected. This is the case regardless of impressive IDP legislation, as was observed by the RSG on IDPs. This interest in IDP coping mechanisms and the disconnect between extensive IDP legislation and actual IDP protection, prompted the researcher to go to the field. As a pilot the fall of Srebrenica (July 1995) in Bosnia Herzegovina was identified. The choice was based

on the fact that it is considered the largest contemporary IDP crisis in Europe and as a result is well-documented. The Dutch involvement and the fact that IDPs have gone through all three phases of displacement, made it additionally interesting. The pilot not only demonstrated that protection gaps exist in relation to IDP protection, but, more importantly, that they can be alleviated. Alleviation occurs when IDPs are acknowledged as the driving force behind their own protection and by better supporting IDPs' own resources and initiatives. These findings led to the realisation that IDPs and protection providers can and should work together as this leads to comprehensive and people-centred protection.

Strong involvement of both actors became one of the defining characteristics in the selection of case study countries. Additionally, the IDP crisis should be ongoing at the time of the release of the Guiding Principles (as this was not the case during the fall of Srebrenica). Taking these requirements into consideration, the two countries selected for this research are Colombia and Uganda. The choice for Colombia is based on its listing in the top ten ranking of ongoing IDPs crises (Table 1.1 above). Additionally, the Colombian legislation shows active involvement of both groups of actors. Uganda was selected based on the long duration of its conflict, which included phases of active involvement of protection providers as well as phases during which IDPs were left to their own devices. The fact that Uganda was amongst the first countries in which the Cluster Approach was rolled out made it additionally interesting for this research. A geographical spread (over three continents) increases the scope of the research, while the role of ethnic/tribal considerations in each of the selected case study countries ensures comparisons can be made. To give an idea on how the three countries relate to each other, a comparison, on key characteristics, has been made in table 1.2 (CIA Factbook Bosnia, 2016), (CIA Factbook Colombia, 2016), (CIA Factbook Uganda, 2016).

Feature	Bosnia	Colombia	Uganda
Inhabitants	4 million	47 million	37 million
Birth rate per 1,000	8.87 births	16.47 births	43.79 births
Land Mass	51,187 sq. km	1,038,700 sq. km	197,100 sq. km
Age Structure	0-14 years: 13.48%	0-14 years: 24.94%	0-14 years: 48.47%
	15-24 years: 12.36%	15-24 years: 17.81%	15-24 years: 21.16%
	25-54 years: 46.48%	25-54 years: 41.71%	25-54 years: 25.91%
	55-64 years: 14.01%	55-64 years: 8.62%	55-64 years: 2.43%
	65+ years: 13.67%	65+ years: 6.93%	65+ years: 2.04%
Land Use	agricultural land: 42.2% forest: 42.8% other: 15%	agricultural land: 37.5% forest: 54.4% other: 8.1%	agricultural land: 71.2% forest: 14.5% other: 14.3%
Ethnic Groups	Bosniak 48.4%, Serb 32.7%, Croat 14.6%, other 4.3%	mestizo and white 84.2%, Afro-Colombian (includes multatto, Raizal, and Palenquero) 10.4%, Amerindian 3.4%, Roma <.01, unspecified 2.1%	Baganda 16.9%, Banyankole 9.5%, Basoga 8.4%, Bakiga 6.9%, Iteso 6.4%, Langi 6.1%, Acholi 4.7%, Bagisu 4.6%, Lugbara 4.2%, Bunyoro 2.7%, other 29.6%
Literacy Level	98.5%	94.7%	78.4%
Independence	1 March 1992 (from Yugoslavia)	20 July 1810 (from Spain)	9 October 1962 (from the UK)
GDP Per Capita	\$9,900 (2014 est.)	\$13,500 (2014 est.)	\$1,900 (2014 est.)
Labour Force by Occupation	agriculture: 19% industry: 30% services: 51%	agriculture: 17% industry: 21% services: 62%	agriculture: 82% industry: 5% services: 13%

Table 1.2: Key Characteristics Compared between Case Study Countries

IDP protection warrants in-depth analysis because of the issues of; who constitutes an IDP, what IDP protection is, why IDPs are not fully protected during CPEs, IDPs falling in between the cracks of the existing protection architecture, and studying the data collected during the pilot research in Bosnia. Especially, according to Hugo Slim, the neglect for the protective capacity of people, in addition to the disconnect between extensive IDP legislation and actual IDP protection, prompted the desire for further research. The research will be guided by the following research question, overall and specific objectives and hypotheses.

Research Question:

‘What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?’

Overall Objective:

To contribute to IDP protection by increasing the understanding and explanation of coping and self-protection mechanisms employed by IDPs, as well as the formal IDP policy and strategies of other protection providers such as State, Non-State and other (aid) actors. By analysing the interaction and intertwining of Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) protection mechanisms, a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) will be developed.

Specific Objectives:

1. To document and analyse strategies being adopted by IDPs to protect themselves in CPEs;
2. To identify and analyse, in general, and specifically, the approaches and strategies protection providers, mandated to protect IDPs, adopt towards IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms;
3. To critically analyse both the effect and impact of the Bottom Up and Top Down protection strategies, used by IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors, when connected in an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection, to contribute to IDP protection; and
4. To make recommendations on further improving the way in which IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors can contribute to increased IDP protection by building on their individual activities as well as utilising an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection.

Hypotheses:

- a) People faced with displacement have and develop coping and self-protection mechanisms,
- b) Cultural and social backgrounds, as well as development level and geopolitical orientation, influence IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms,
- c) Based on hypothesis a) IDPs are the main stakeholders for the improvement of IDP Protection through the strengthening of IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms.
- d) IDPs do not succeed in providing for their own protection.
- e) Other actors, such as the State, non-State actors and other (aid) actors need to contribute to IDP protection.
- f) These other actors do not pay enough attention to IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms and the process of interaction between these mechanisms and the activities of the State, non-State actors and other (aid) actors.

To answer the main research question, captured in overall and specific objectives, a theoretical framework and research methodology have been developed which will be introduced below.

Theoretical Framework and Research Methodology:

The focus of this research is on internally displaced people fleeing alone or in a group as a result of armed conflict, situations of generalized violence or violations of human rights by their State or non-State actors. People who have been displaced by natural disaster are not included. This research (similarly to the Response Strategies Project) regards IDPs as human beings with histories, backgrounds, ambitions and resources, who should be considered and included in every response strategy (Response Strategies of the Internally Displaced, 2001). In addition to IDPs, the focus of this research is on other actors engaged in the protection of IDPs. The models and approaches used by this group will be analysed. The aim of the research is to introduce a new approach to IDP protection, which builds upon the capacities of these two groups. Therefore, the benefits and deficiencies of the approaches to protection used by IDPs, the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors are analysed for their individual merits to IDP protection, as well as the extent to which they can work together. An approach in which BU and TD actors work together is deemed necessary as current protection models and approaches tend to emphasise the macro, top-down, and structure component of protection or focus on the micro, bottom up and agency of IDPs, instead of taking the best of both. Intertwining BU and TD actors' protection strategies will be further developed in chapter two.

In chapter two, the theoretical framework for this research will be presented. This framework discusses the key concepts of this research and provides an overview of the historical development of the protection concept and its relation to refugee protection. It also introduces the main protection models and approaches, developed and utilised in the current humanitarian arena. Studying these models and approaches, as well as other protection literature, will lead to the identification of the main protection criteria and typologies, which will become part of the newly developed approach to IDP protection, called the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). This approach, utilising Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid, as well as Anthony Giddens' concepts of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure, will also present a new definition of protection. This new definition consists of three elements, Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. The Rights element is further developed by including the International Human Rights Covenants; the International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR) and the International Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR). The newly developed Protection Pyramid Approach consists of eight components which interact with each other. Through the components and their interaction, a comprehensive overview of both BU and TD strategies and approaches to IDP protection in all phases of displacement is created. The overview underlines protection gaps and shows how to strengthen existing mechanisms.

In chapter three (the methodology) a justification is provided for the way this research is conducted. The theoretical framework will be operationalised. Led by an ontology and epistemology based on Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory, the research utilises Grounded Theory. Grounded Theory influenced the research design, collection of data, data analysis and the interpretation of the research findings. Inductive and deductive reasoning alternated throughout the whole research process. This means that Grounded Theory both informs the development of the PPA presented in chapter two, and dictates how the PPA model should be used in the data collection process. At the same time, Grounded Theory ensures the PPA model is, where necessary, improved based on the data collected in the case study countries. Given the fact that the actual contribution of Grounded Theory is only shown after the completion of the research process, the section on the use of the methodology is written in the past tense.

The research principles draw upon both quantitative and qualitative methodologies. The replicability of the research is low, as are representativeness and generalisability, but the data collection process employed within PPA allows for actor and case study comparisons, increasing the reliability of the research findings. Internal and external validity is ensured by the way interviews with BU and TD actors have been conducted, such as employing the principle of double hermeneutics. The development of PPA was facilitated by the explorative research conducted in Bosnia and research trips to United Nations Headquarters in New York and Geneva. The most important outcome of this explorative work, creating the foundation for PPA, was the realisation that, though BU and TD actors each have an individual contribution to make, their interaction has the largest positive effect on IDP protection.

The use of Grounded Theory allowed for the operationalisation of both the individual and interactive contribution of BU and TD actors to IDP protection. Though case studies are used, Yin's Case Study's methodology has not been, for reasons which will be explained in chapter three (Yin, 2003). The case studies, together with the different PPA components, allows for triangulation of the research's findings, positively influencing the research's validity, credibility and utility. Given the influence of Grounded Theory on the sampling procedures, few sampling decisions could be made prior to the data collection process. Instead, the alteration between data collection and analysis ensured that sampling was tailored to the research needs and adequately represented the development of the PPA model. The information, gathered through semi-structured interviews, comes from both BU actors and TD actors at different hierarchical levels. Theoretical sampling (following Grounded Theory) was the most commonly used form of sampling; however, simple random sampling, cluster and area sampling and snowball sampling were also used. Theoretical sampling means that the sample units are identified during (not prior to) the field trips, ensuring that the sampling units represent the needs of the emerging theory.

Grounded Theory informed each field trip by developing a similar routine. This routine commenced with desk research prior to departure. The desk research centred on

collecting information on TD actors, as they were a good starting point for data collection once in country. As much as possible, meetings would be secured with TD actors before arriving, to increase the efficiency of the data collection process. The interviews with TD actors led to interviews with additional TD actors and were often a starting point for contacting BU actors, which expanded through snowball sampling. Interviews were conducted utilising a research guide and, often, with the assistance of a female translator.

During the field trips information was analysed, to determine the next actor to be interviewed. Analysis conducted in between field trips was more in-depth and allowed for case study comparisons. The analysis between the Colombian and Ugandan field trip determined the necessity to increase the number of subgroups in Uganda to lift the developing PPA from a substantive to formal theory. The data analysis conducted after the Ugandan field trip finalised the theoretical PPA model and paved the way for the re-analysis of all collected data utilising the newly developed PPA. Chapters four and five present the empirical findings, while chapter six analysis BU/TD actors' interactions, the results of which are reinserted, (according to Grounded Theory logic) into the PPA (which can be read in the last chapter).

Chapter four presents and analyses the empirical data relating to the first Specific Objective. Research trips have been organised to Colombia and Uganda to collect information on the coping and self-protection mechanisms of IDPs. An elaborate interview guide, centring around the three elements of the new protection definition (Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity), ensures that the semi-structured interviews collect information on the same topics. The collected information is analysed both within a case study country as well as between case study countries, utilising the Protection Pyramid Approach developed in chapter two. A similar set up is applied to chapter five. The Bottom Up interview guide is adapted to Top Down protection providers, such as the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors. Similar topics are discussed but the information collected is in line with the goods and services provided by the TD actors. Similarly to chapter four, in chapter five both an inter and intra case study analysis, utilising the PPA, is conducted. Chapter five answers the Second Specific Objective.

In chapter six the Bottom Up coping and self-protection mechanisms of IDPs are compared and contrasted to the approaches and strategies used by Top Down protection providers. The Partnership Approach to Protection which emerges is, for reasons discussed within the theoretical framework presented in chapter two, the best way to contribute to IDP protection. The eight components of the PPA make up the framework through which the BU and TD information will be presented and researched. For each component, the goods, services, capacities and needs of both BU and TD actors will be summarised, showing gaps or overlaps within the provision of protection to IDPs. This will be done by first comparing and contrasting BU and TD's understanding of the Partnership Approach to Protection within each PPA component. After that an inter case study component comparative analysis is conducted to determine how PAP materialises most easily and effectively contributes to IDP protection. Chapter Six provides an answer to the Third Specific Objective.

In the final chapter, chapter seven, the protective capacities of Bottom Up and Top Down actors, combined within the Partnership Approach to Protection, will be fed back into the Protection Pyramid Approach. The lessons which can be learned from analysing the findings of BU and TD interaction are inputted into the theory in order to increase the protective capacity of PPA. In addition to making changes to the theoretical Protection Pyramid Approach, feedback to BU and TD actors will also be provided in chapter seven. The focus of chapter seven is therefore on improving PPA theory as well as BU and TD actors' activities in relation to IDP protection, thereby meeting the Fourth Specific Objective.

This PhD research ends with a Conclusion in which the main research question will be answered. The utility of this research lies in the fact that, though models and approaches to enhance IDP Protection already exist, reality shows that IDPs are still not well protected. Too little attention has been paid to IDPs themselves and the way their coping and self-protection mechanisms could and should interact with the policies and programmes of the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors. This research aims to contribute to the improvement of IDP protection by paying specific attention to the qualities, capacities and potential of IDPs without ignoring the legal and historic roles, responsibilities and activities of the States, Non-State actors and other (aid) actors. This research will serve both the theoretical discussion on IDP Protection and feed into trainings, guidelines, manuals etc. to have a tangible effect on IDP protection. To ensure that the research is applicable to the field, one pilot and two case study countries have been included. Collecting empirical data in these countries will not only inform the theoretical framework, it will ensure that it remains applicable to real life situations featuring IDPs in need of protection. The chosen pilot case is Bosnia Herzegovina while the two case study countries are Colombia and Uganda. In the sections below an overview is given of their history, focusing both on their general history as well as reasons leading to the displacement crisis in the country. First the pilot case study of Bosnia is presented.

Pilot Case Study Country History - Bosnia Herzegovina

The fall of Srebrenica, which led to the death of approximately 8,000 Muslim men and boys, was the climax of a period following the break-up of Yugoslavia and the descent into war for the newly created independent States. In March 1992, by means of a referendum, Bosnia Herzegovina became independent. Bosnia's independence followed the independence of Croatia and Slovenia in 1991. Similarly to these two countries, almost immediately after independence Bosnia descended into war with Serbia. The Serbian inhabitants of Bosnia had boycotted the referendum for independence. In addition to this the Serbs were overrepresented in the Yugoslav National Army, turning this army into a Serb nationalist force. Stand-alone Serbian forces, such as the Arkan 'Tigers', continued the practice of ethnic cleansing which they had started in Slovenia and Croatia. Though the international community was informed

about the scale and nature of the subsequent refugee and IDP movement, they were late in intervening. The Bosnian army, due to lack of ammunition, was unable to protect Srebrenica.

The blocking of aid transports, together with the continuous shelling of the city made the situation in Srebrenica a living hell. In April 1993 Srebrenica was therefore declared the first of six safe havens, to be protected by the international community. With only half of the original force present on the ground, the 370 Dutch Blue helmet force stationed in Potočari, near Srebrenica, were not prepared and lacked backup to protect the people in the city. Amidst increased shelling on the 6th of July 1995 the Dutch Commander on site, Lieutenant Colonel Ton Karremans, asked for airstrikes, but they were denied. When they did finally arrive on the 11th of July 1995, the airstrikes were too little, too late. By then the inhabitants of Srebrenica had already fled the city. Around 25,000 fled to the Blue Helmet compound in Potočari, while an additional 15,000 (mostly men) fled to the woods for protection. The Dutch Blue Helmets witnessed the separation of men and boys from women and small children, and could not prevent these men and boys from being taken away to their deaths (Honing and Both, 1996) (Silber and Little, 1996).

The majority of IDPs in Bosnia have gone through all phases of displacement, which means that they have now returned to their home areas or (re)settled in other areas. The return process however, took longer than anticipated. Reasons for this are the severity of the crisis and the subsequent need felt by IDPs to deal with its aftermath before returning. This included setting up criminal courts, identifying mass graves and erecting memorials (Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement and UNHCR, 2007, p8).

Case Study Country History - Colombia

The history of Colombia starts around 1549 when the Spanish created the New Kingdom of Granada (called New Granada for short), which covered a territory much larger than current day Colombia (Simons, 2004, p19). Spanish rulers ruled this Kingdom till 1718 when the Viceroy System was introduced. Under this system, the President received more power. This system stayed in place till the end of Spanish rule in the early 19th century (Simons, 2004, p20). When in 1821 Simon Bolivar liberated New Granada from the Spanish, he became the first President and Francisco de Paula Santander the Vice-President (Simons, 2004, p22) (Palacios, 2006, pxi) (Livingstone, 2003, p36). Each leader subsequently developed his own political party. Bolivar's party, originally known as the Centralists, became the current day Conservative Party, enjoying support from the Catholic Church, while



Santander created the Federalists, which developed into the Liberal Party, backed by the business class (Hylton, 2006, p17). Disagreements between the two parties caused political instability. The secessions of Venezuela, Ecuador and Panama resulted in the territorial entity of Colombia as it is known nowadays (see map) (Nations Online, 2015) (Simons, 2004, p34).

Political insecurity, exploitation of the poor by the elites and other injustices led to the War of a Thousand Days between the two Parties, and when this was not successful, to numerous revolts (OAS,1999, p2) (Simons, 2004, p35) (Livingstone, 2003, p38) (Hylton, 2006, p24). These revolts were led, amongst others, by Quintin Lame who fought to end the suffering of the poor and Jorge Eliecer Gaitan, whose assassination started the *Bogotazo* (Simons, 2004, p40). After Gaitan's death a period of fighting called *La Violencia* started in which the Colombian people no longer accepted the exploitation by the elites and rose up to address the injustices³. To end the violence and counter communist tendencies the National Front (a Government supported by both Parties) arose⁴. The National Front however, did not pay enough attention to existing and increasing calls for agrarian reform (McLean, 2002, p125) and curbed democracy (Romero, 2000, p54). Violent uprisings under President Turbay Ayala ended the National Front (Simons, 2004, p38). Insecurity increased significantly with the growing importance of drugs and the creation of the Medellin and Cali cartels. Though some Presidents tried (and failed) to break the power of the cartels, the influence of the drug cartels on the agricultural sector resulted in 'counter-agrarian reform'⁵.

In the end the peasants still suffered disproportionately, and this led, in 1966, to the creation of the *Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia* (FARC) (Simons, 2004, p42-43). Not only did the FARC want to protect the peasants against the violence they were experiencing, it also wanted to overthrow the state⁶. In an attempt to increase its image and emphasise it was an army for the people, FARC added *Ejército Popular* (Popular Army) to its name to (Bouvier, 2007, p6). Not succeeding militarily to overthrow the state FARC set up a political party called the *Unión Patriótica* (Patriotic Union)⁷.

In addition to the FARC other guerrilla groups were also created, such as the *Ejército de Liberación Nacional* (the National Liberation Army – ELN) and the *Movimiento 19 de*

³ For more information on the revolts please consult: (Simons, 2004, p38) (Livingstone, 2003, p42) (Sanin, 2006, p140) (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 1)

⁴ For more information on the National Front please consult: (Simons, 2004, p38) (Elhawary, 2010, p389) (Ugarriza and Craig, 2012, p451) (Boudon, 2000, p37) (Livingstone, 2003, p45) (Hylton, 2006, p12)

⁵ For more information on the power of the drug cartels please consult: (Simons, 2004, p39) (Bagley, 1988, p75) (McLean, 2002, p126-127) (OAS,1999, p3) (Romero, 2000, p61) (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 1). (Theidon, 2009, p8) (Theidon, 2007, p70) (Gutiérrez Sanín, 2008, p15) (Sweig, 2002, p128) (Bagley, 1988, p76) (Richani, 1997, p40) (Livingstone, 2003, p57).

⁶ For more information on FARC's agenda please consult: (Theidon, 2009, p6) (Gutiérrez Sanín, 2008, p12) (Gomez-Suarez, 2007, p639) (Gutiérrez Sanín, 2004, p263) (Rangel Suárez, 2000, p580) (Ugarriza and Craig, 2012, p452) (Braun, 2009, p460) (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 1).

⁷ For more information on the UP please consult: (Theidon, 2009, p10) (Theidon, 2007, p71) (Gomez-Suarez, 2007, p638) (Gomez-Suarez and Newman, 2013, p822/824) (Livingstone, 2003, p55)

Abril (19th of April Movement – M19)⁸. These guerrilla groups were countered by paramilitary and Bacrim, which developed under Law 48⁹. The different regional paramilitary groups united under an umbrella organisation in 1997 called the *Autodefensas Unidas de Colombia* (United Self-Defence Forces of Colombia AUC) and were responsible for killing and threatening the general population and Human Right (HR) defenders specifically¹⁰.

To halt the violence several Presidents embarked upon peace initiatives. President Betancur set up an Amnesty Law while the 1991 Constitution, including progressive provisions for the protection of Internally Displaced Persons and Indigenous people, was adopted under the lead of President César Gaviria Trujillo. President Pastrander signed Plan Colombia, while President Uribe engaged in Democratic Security and created the Justice and Peace Law. The current President Santos, as part of his Integrated Approach set up peace negotiations with the FARC in Havana, Cuba, which lead to a Peace Accord between the parties but was dismissed by the Colombian people in a referendum¹¹. Negotiations with the ELN have also commenced.

Regardless of the various peace initiatives large scale displacements have occurred in Colombia. All actors have been responsible for displacement, though the paramilitary used it as a tactic of war (IDMC, 2011, p21). Reasons for displacement are linked to landownership, political influence and control over natural resources including drugs (Hylton, 2006, p6) (Elhawary, 2010, p396) (Sanín, 2006, p141). Four types of displacement can be identified in Colombia; deliberate displacement of peasants, non-deliberate displacement as a result of armed confrontations; displacement as a result of land occupations and displacement towards the jungle to grow illicit drugs (OAS-2, 1999, p4) (Braun, 2009, p472). Patterns of displacement are characterised by an initial movement from the home areas to nearby towns often followed by a secondary displacement to even larger towns further away due to insecurity or lack of facilities. Many IDPs ended up in poor urban areas (Kunder, 1998, p10).

In many cases displacement was related to conflict over land. Throughout Colombia's history land disputes have been common. The issue of land in Colombia increased in intensity in the 1920s as peasants voiced their dissatisfaction with their land rights and land tenure and

⁸ Additional information on other guerrilla groups can be found in: (Hylton, 2006, p2) (Beittel, 2015, p10) (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 1) (Hoskin and Murillo Castraño, 2001, p33)

⁹ For more information on Law 48 and paramilitary and self-defense groups activities please consult (Simons, 2004, p43-44) (Beittel, 2015, p11-12) (Acemoglu, 2009, p16) (Theidon, 2009, p8) (Gomez-Suarez, 2007, p642 + 823) (OAS, 1999, p3) (Ugarriza and Craig, 2012, p452) (Braun, 2009, p461) (Gray, 2008, p68) (Angrist and Kugler, 2005, p3).

¹⁰ For more information on AUC please consult: (Villegas de Posada, 2009, p264-265) (Gomez-Suarez, 2007, p643) (Díaz, 2004, p18) (Romero, 2000, p66) (Braun, 2009, p461) (HRC, 2010, p7)

¹¹ For more information on Presidential peace plans please consult: **Amnesty Law** (Beittel, 2015, p14), **1991 Constitution** (Hylton, 2006, p1) (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 2), **Plan Colombia** (Elhawary, 2010, p393) (Beittel, 2015, p4) (López Caballero, 2013, p169) (Díaz, 2004, p37) (Sweig, 2002, p128) (Hoskin and Murillo Castraño, 2001, p38-40), **Democratic Security** and the **Justice and Peace Law** (Elhawary, 2010, p394/7) (Ince, 2013, p21) (Sweig, 2002, p130) (Gray, 2008, p65) (Hylton, 2006, p5) (Acemoglu, 2009, p17), **Integrated Approach** (Beittel, 2015, p8) (Ince, 2013, p20/22) (Elhawary, 2010, p388/398) (Gomez-Suarez and Newman, 2013, p819).

the lack of Government protection (Simons, 2004, p51) (Richani, 1997, p40). Additionally, IDPs suffer from a number of challenges, such as threats, death and the lack of documentation (IDMC, 2011, p9/45). Though this is a common problem for IDPs, in Colombia it led to suspected membership of guerrilla groups, and as such created a life-threatening situation (Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement and UNHCR, 2007, p5).

As part of the 1991 Constitution citizens (including IDPs) can use the *tutella* system to appeal any breaches to their rights (McLean, 2002, p131). The Constitution also introduced a focus on the development of the regions, taking into account that the needs and capacities of each region are different. The problem with the Constitution however, is its implementation (Gomez-Suarez and Newman, 2013, p823). Land problems of Afro-Colombian people became increasingly protected by the enactment of Law 70 of 1993 (Hylton, 2006, p1) (Oslender, 2007, p752). The foundation of IDP protection was laid by Law 387 of 1997. In order to fulfil the law, Units of Attention (UAOs), led by Accion Social, were set up. IDPs would make a declaration, and upon approval of the declaration, become part of a Registry. However, in 2004, the Colombian Constitutional Court, in landmark sentence T-025, ruled that Law 387 was not adhered to, leaving Colombia in an Unconstitutional State of Affairs. T-025 indicated that the State did not uphold its responsibilities towards its citizens. The Constitutional Court indicated to the State what needed to be improved and how, making specific recommendations for 13 groups including IDPs. T-025 can be seen as the start of the Victim's Law (Elhawary, 2010, p396) (Kunder, 1998, p2) (OAS-2, 1999, p2)/ (IACHR, 1999, Chapter 6) (IDMC, 2011, p23).

During the Presidency of Uribe, a Democratic Security policy was created, aimed at establishing a human rights culture. The Victim's Law was drafted, but was not approved by Congress. When Santos became President, the law was reintroduced, approved by Congress, signed by the President and then sent to the Constitutional Court for approval, which it gave in June 2011. The Victim's Law provides economic compensation or restitution of land to victims of the conflict (Beittel, 2015, p16) (Ince, 2013, p23) (HRC, 2011, p3) (HRC, 2012, p4). The Victim's Law (Law 1448) is a transitional law, with a ten-year lifespan and puts the responsibility of IDP protection at the level of the territorial entities¹². For IDPs the Law means that their needs are dealt with by the National System for the Attention to IDP Populations (SNAIPD/SNARIV). To manage the new law, the old IDP protection system, the Units of Attention, led by Accion Social, will be replaced by Dignifying Centres (DC), led by the Victim's Unit. In order to obtain the goods and services promised in this law, IDPs need to go to a public ministry or institution and fill out a form (i.e. make a declaration)¹³.

¹² For the purpose of Law 1448 Colombia is divided into seven regions, 32 department, several districts (such as Bogota, Cartagena, Santa Marta and Barranquilla) and numerous municipalities.

¹³ The form the Government entity fills out collects personal information on IDPs such as name and family composition, while also recording why a person fled and because of which actor.

According to Government surveys, 80% of the IDPs do not want to return due to insecurity. Other reasons preventing return is the level of services in urban areas, IDPs' land is used by others and there is a generational difference in which the younger generation feels more comfortable in the cities than on the country side (Mundt and Ferris, 2008, p7).

Case Study Country History - Uganda

In pre-colonial times Uganda was ruled by kingdoms in the South and chiefdoms in the North. When the British arrived, they used the most powerful Buganda Kingdom, to consolidate their rule, making the Baganda people their representatives. The root cause of Uganda's problems can be found in an opposition between the North and the South of the country, which was institutionalised by the British. Northern Uganda was colonialised later than the South. The British appointed Baganda chiefs were one of three groups active in the North. The other groups were traditional chiefs (the *rwodi-moo*) and the petty bourgeoisie, who were only interested in power and influence (Branch, 2007, p99). The underdevelopment of the North started under the British and lasted till independence in 1962¹⁴.

Some of the Northern Presidents who took office after independence tried to tip the balance in favour of the North (most notably President Obote). Favouritism and repression, led to an explosive situation in which ethnicity and tribal origin played a very important role. The coup by Museveni, making him President in 1986, started 20 year of civil war between the North and the South. The main actors in this war were the Government in the South and its army, the Uganda People Defence Force (UPDF)¹⁵, opposing the North, represented by different actors over the course of the conflict. These included the Uganda People Democratic Army (UPDA) and, subsequently, the Holy Spirit Movement (HSM) led by Lakwena. The most influential actor in the North was the Lord Resistance Army (LRA) created by Joseph Kony in 1994 (existing since 1987 under different names (Lord Salvation Army (LSA)/ Uganda Common Defence Army (UCDA)). The Ugandan war is typically divided into seven phases, as can be seen in table 1.3¹⁶.

¹⁴ For more information on Uganda's early history please consult (Ibingira, 1973, p11/20/21), (Broere and Vermaas, 2005, p8), (Mutibwa, 1992, p1), (Finnstrom, 2003, p91), (Ofcansky, 1996, p23), (Branch, 2007, p106) (Branch, 2011, p49).

¹⁵ UPDF replaced Museveni's National Resistance Army (which had been responsible for the 'Luwero Triangle Massacre' (Weinstein, 2007, p62).

¹⁶ For more information on the first three phases please consult (Behrend, 1991) (Branch, 2005) (Branch, 2007) (Branch, 2010) (Branch, 2011) (Dolan and Hovil, 2006) (Doom and Vlassenroot, 1999) (Finnstrom, 2003), (Jackson, 2010) (Otto, 2002) (Tripp, 2010) (Weeks, 2002) and (Weinstein, 2007).

Phase	Main Actor	Developed Out Of	Time Period
Phase I	UPDA	UNLA	March 1986 – July 1988
Phase II	HSM I (Alice Lakwena)	UPDA	Late 1986 – November 1987
Phase III	HSM II (Severino Likoya)	HSM II	January 1988 – August 1989
Phase IV	LSA/ UCDA /LRA	HSM II	Late 1987 – February 1994
Phase V	LRA		March 1994 – August 2006
Phase	Main Activity	Result	Time Period
Phase VI	Operation Iron Fist	LRA increased activities in Northern Uganda	May 2002 – January 2004
Phase VII	ICC Indictments of LRA commanders	Undermined Amnesty Process and hardened positions	January 2004 – August 2006

Table 1.3: Phases of Civil War in Uganda including Main Actors in each phase

Within two months of Museveni seizing power in 1986, the National Resistance Movement (NRM), Museveni’s political arm of the National Resistance Army (NRA), abolished political parties, which had started to develop from 1952¹⁷. Museveni stated that political parties caused division and strife (Barkan, 2011, p6) (Broere and Vermaas, 2005, p19) (Mwenda, 2010, p46) (Branch, 2011, p78). Instead, Museveni introduced the Movement system, which is a no-party political system in which people were chosen based on personal competence, not on party association (Barkan, 2011, p6) (Broere and Vermaas, 2005, p20) (Barya, 2000, p30) (Leggett, 2001, p5) (Tripp, 2010, p83).

In the war both sides committed serious human rights violations. Although the LRA seemed to lack a clear political agenda, they used widespread terror to pursue their aims strongly influenced by the Ten Commandments¹⁸. The LRA justified the violence against the Acholi (the inhabitants of the North) because they wanted to purify them (Branch, 2010, p42) (Branch, 2011, p75) (Titeca, 2010, p66) (CSOPNU, 2004, p51). Human rights violations committed by the UPDF and Government consisted of the encampment strategy, called ‘protected villages’¹⁹, when IDPs were used as a human shield. Another Government’s shortcoming was its inability to protect the Acholi, the traditional inhabitants of the North.

¹⁷ For more information on the formation of the different political parties in Uganda please consult (Broere and Vermaas, 2005, p13) (Mugaju, 2000, p15-16) (Ofcansky, 1996, p36) (Mutibwa, 1992, p13/15).

¹⁸ Accounts of LRA’s use of **terror** have been discussed by (Otto, 2002, p36) (Dolan, 2005, p118) (ARLPI, 2001, p8) (HRW, 2005, p9) (MSF, 2004, p3) (Boas, 2005, p38) (Branch, 2005, p5) (Finnstrom, 2010, p75) (Pham, 2005, p7) (CSOPNU, 2004, p51). Disagreement on whether the LRA lacked a specific **political goal** has been discussed by (Gersony, 1997, p59) (Pham, 2005, p13), (IRIN, 2004) (RLP in Branch, 2005, p6), (Dolan, 2005, p127) (Branch, 2007, p206) (Branch, 2011, p77) (Tripp, 2010, p160), (IRIN, 2003) (IRIN, 2004) (Branch, 2005, p4) (Titeca, 2010, p60) (Finnstrom, 2010, p81) (Schomerus, 2010, p123), (Doom and Vlassenroot, 1999, p35).

¹⁹ For more information on ‘protected villages’ please consult (Dolan, 2005, p78) (Dolan, 2006, p11) (ARLPI, 2001, p8) (MSF, 2004, p3) (IRIN, 2003) (Branch, 2005, p19) (Branch, 2007, p203) (Branch, 2008, p154-155), (Branch, 2009, p482-486), (Branch, 2011, p76) (CSOPNU, 2004, p60) (RLP, 2012, p19) (Gelsdorf, 2012, p3).

The Northern war was seen as a foreign war. Civilian protection was left to Local Defence Units (LDUs)²⁰, which often were without proper equipment or training.

Attempts at peace negotiations and lulls in fighting occurred at several points during the war. Betty Bigombe, the Acholi Minister for Pacification of the North, in cooperation with the Acholi elders set up peace talks at the end of 1993. Both the LRA and the Government of Uganda (GoU) participated in these talks in 1994, until the mutual suspicion became too great and fighting resumed. In 1999 it seemed peace had come to northern Uganda as there was a lull in fighting when the LRA were in south Sudan²¹. High intensity fighting commenced however, during Operation Iron Fist (2002). This GoU initiative increased LRA activity which harmed especially Pader district²². Even amidst this intense fighting peace was sought, for example by LRA's second in command, Vincent Otti (IDMC, 2010, p15) (Dolan, 2006, p13). The Government's response, in 2003, consisted of providing the LRA with means of communication and setting up a presidential peace team (IDMC, 2010, p15). Operation Iron Fist II, executed in 2004 by the UPDF together with the Government in Sudan, aimed to wipe out the LRA (HRW, 2005, p10) (Branch, 2005, p2) (Pham, 2005, p17) (Pham, 2007, p16). Though the operation did not succeed it decreased the rebels' morale (CSOPNU, 2004, p31).

Until 2004 the involvement of the international community in Northern Uganda was low. This changed after the visit of Under-Secretary General Jan Egeland (Perrot, 2010, p187) (Oxfam, 2008, p5). Then the international community increased its activities to alleviate the suffering of the Acholi people. With almost the entire Acholi population in camps, the situation looked bleak in 2005²³. Nevertheless, in July 2006 peace negotiations commenced in Juba which, in August 2006, resulted in a Cessation of Hostilities Agreement²⁴. Though this agreement ended the fighting, official peace is still elusive, as a final peace agreement was never signed²⁵. Instead, Joseph Kony (wanted by the International Criminal Court) and the LRA, moved to neighbouring countries²⁶.

²⁰ For more information on LDUs please consult: (Doom and Vlassenroot, 1999, p31) (HRW, 2005, p70) (Boas, 2005, p35) (Branch, 2007, p166) (Branch, 2011, p69) (CSOPNU, 2004, p61)

²¹ For more information on the peace processes please consult: **1993/1994 Process** (Tripp, 2010, p165) (IDMC, 2010, p14) (Dolan, 2006, p11) (Dolan, 2005, p131) (Branch, 2007, p180) (Branch, 2011, p74) (Atkinson, 2010, p205) and **1999 Process** (Gersony, 1997, p33) (Branch, 2011, p74) (IDMC, 2010, p15) (Dolan, 2006, p11).

²² For more information on Operation Iron Fist and its effect on Pader District please consult: (CSOPNU, 2006, p10), (IRIN, 2005) (HRW, 2005, p9) (MSF, 2004, p3) (Boas, 2005, p1) (IRIN, 2003) (IRIN, 2004) (Pham, 2005, p17) (Tripp, 2010, p145) (Joireman, Sawyer, and Wilhoit, 2012, p198).

²³ For more information on the situation in 2005 please consult: (HRW, 2005, p13) (Reynolds Whyte et al, 2012, p287) (GoU - PRDP, 2007, p25) (IDMC-2, 2012, p1).

²⁴ For more information on the peace negotiations and cessation of hostilities agreement please consult (Tripp, 2010, p168) (Pham, 2007, p9/19) (Pham and Vinck, 2010, p9) (Dolan and Hovil, 2006, p5) (Dolan, 2006, p13) (Perrot, 2010, p197) (Atkinson, 2010, p209/214) (Oxfam, 2008, p5/7) (CSOPNU, 2007, p1) (Wairimu, 2014, p40) (GoU-OPM, 2008, p1) (IDMC-2, 2012, p2).

²⁵ For more information please consult: (IDMC, 2010, p35) (Tripp, 2010, p168) (Pham and Vinck, 2010, p9) (Oxfam, 2008, p5).

²⁶ For more information on LRA's move please consult: (Tripp, 2010, p168) (Pham and Vinck, 2010, p7/9) (Atkinson, 2010, p221) (Allen, 2010, p279) (IDMC-2, 2012, p2).

Though displacements occurred throughout the war, the Iron Fist Operations and the ‘encampment strategy’ had a stronger effect on displacement numbers. The move into the camps was not always voluntary but also enforced by the UPDF by shelling and burning people’s houses (ARLPI, 2001, p9) (Otto, 2002, p46). Notices were not always provided, but when given (of between 24 hours and seven days) were still insufficient to prevent the suffering and hardship of forced relocation (ARLPI, 2001, p9) (Boas, 2005, p33). Refusing to go into the camps meant being perceived by the UPDF as belonging to the rebels (ARLPI, 2001, p9). Additionally, army detachments were sometimes located within the camps and often did not provide protection against LRA attacks²⁷.

In order to protect all the people in the camps, the GoU in 2004 developed a national IDP Policy (Rugadya, 2006, p12) (CSOPNU, 2004, p43) (RLP, 2012, p3) (IDMC, 2010, p153) (OPM-DDRR, 2004). This policy aimed to ensure that IDPs were well protected in the camps, equal to other Ugandan citizens. The policy also looked ahead to the return and resettlement of the IDPs after the conflict (Rugadya, 2006, p12) (CSOPNU, 2004, p43) (RLP, 2012, p4). While the development of the policy meant a large theoretical step forward for IDP protection, the lack of implementation meant that in practice not much changed for the IDPs (Rugadya, 2006, p12) (CSOPNU, 2004, p43) (Dolan, 2006, p23).

Though many IDPs returned after the signing of the Cessation of Hostilities Agreement, the process was drawn out. In the beginning IDPs who left the main camps came back regularly, to benefit from Government assistance and camp facilities (Joireman, Sawyer, and Wilhoit, 2012, p199). Return or resettlement was hampered by poor infrastructure and population growth was high (Joireman, Sawyer, and Wilhoit, 2012, p201) (OPM-DDP, 2012, p11). By 2010, the Internal Displacement Monitoring Centre reported that only 182,000 IDPs were still in IDP main or transition camps (IDMC, 2010, p1) (IDMC in Joireman, Sawyer, and Wilhoit, 2012, p198). Wairimu quotes UNHCR reporting 97% of IDPs in IDP camps had moved home or to a transit camp by 2010 (Wairimu, 2014, p117). While the 2012 Humanitarian Profile says that 98% of 1.8 million IDPs have returned or resettled (OPM-DDP, 2012, p3) (Gelsdorf, 2012, p2).

The return process initiated by the Cessation of Hostilities agreement, coincided with the implementation of the Cluster Approach in Uganda (Steets and Grünewald, 2010). With the introduction of the Peace Recovery and Development Plan (PRDP)²⁸ in 2007, the Cluster Approach transformed its activities to give a larger role to Government humanitarian assistance and coordination mechanisms (Martin, 2010, p41). Governmental Coordination structures used the District Disaster Management Committees (DDMCs). With recovery only coming slowly to Northern Uganda, the Cluster Approach introduced the ‘Parish Approach’

²⁷ For more information on camps being used as human shields please consult: (Otto, 2002, p28/37) (HRW, 2005, p15) (Boas, 2005, p34) (Tripp, 2010, p161).

²⁸ For more information on the PRDP please consult (No Author, 2008)

to ensure access to basic services at the Parish level. At the same time the responsibility for coordination was strengthened at the District level (Martin, 2010, p42). The United Nations further aimed to strengthen the Government's (PRDP) efforts by developing the UN Peace Building and Recovery Assistance Plan for Northern Uganda (UNPRAP)²⁹. Different programmes within different sectors including human rights and livelihoods aimed to strengthen the Governmental recovery process (Martin, 2010, p43). Though land was an asset for those actors responsible for displacement, the practice of land wrangling started during displacement, making return difficult or even impossible³⁰. This concludes the historic overview of the pilot and case study countries.

Concluding Remarks

Some important final remarks need to be made. The researcher acknowledges that the generalizability of the empirical data, being based only on t(most notably President Obote), hree case study countries, might be questioned. Keeping in mind this is qualitative research, the researcher nevertheless has compensated for the non-exhaustiveness of the empirical data by developing a strong academic, theoretical framework in chapter two. Though more empirical input would have strengthened the framework, the researcher is convinced that the total amount of interviews was sufficient to correctly depict IDP's needs, capacities, vulnerabilities and preferences, as well as the activities and constraints experienced by the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors. Furthermore, the researcher had to take security and financial constraints into consideration. All in all, the researcher is confident that the Protection Pyramid Approach enables BU and TD actors to positively contribute to IDP protection and invites everybody to meticulously study the research presented below.

²⁹ For more information on UNPRAP please consult (UNPBF, 2009).

³⁰ For more information on land (wrangling) please consult: (Levine and Adoko, 2006) (Martiniello, 2013) (Mabikke, 2011).

Chapter Two: Theoretical Framework

In this chapter the concept of protection, which was already introduced in chapter one, will be elaborated upon. Starting with the first section, an overview of the historic understanding of the concept of protection will be provided. Additionally, it will be determined whether the existing definitions, models and approaches to protection are adequate to provide protection to Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs). The actors responsible for IDP protection are presented in section two. This section will also explain how these actors can be divided into different groups, utilising a categorisation principle borrowed from other academic disciplines focusing on Dualisms. In order to provide the necessary protection to IDPs, the different groups of actors identify needs. The extent to which the needs are comparable and compatible will determine the level of IDP protection. In order to allow meaningful interaction between the different groups of protection providers, based on the needs they identify, section three presents Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory. Positioning the identified needs within Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid visualises which priorities the different protection providers identify and whether these priorities correspond to those of other protection providers. Additionally, Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs approach provides a roadmap indicating the prioritisation of needs.

The continuing interaction between the different protection providers is simplified by the protection providers agreeing on what constitutes protection. This is why component four introduces a revised protection definition which includes elements important to all groups of protection providers. At the foundation of this revised protection definition is the importance of rights. To do justice to this important element, the fifth section positions this element within International Human Rights Law. This body of law, represented by the Universal Declaration of Human Rights and the two additional Covenants, is however both applauded and disputed. To sidestep the politics relating to this body of law and instead elevating the discussion on how to increase knowledge on IDP protection to a higher, more abstract level, Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory is introduced in section six. To remain grounded with reality, the applicability of this research to Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) is explained in section seven. Finally, within the eighth section of this chapter, the result of the analyses and contribution of the different sections leads to a conceptual analytical framework.

This framework provides the analytical foundation which contributes to improving IDP protection. As such the model will play a key role in answering the main research question, which reads: *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'* This model, contrary to the existing models, not only combines different approaches to IDP protection, it also aims to

move beyond existing dualistic thinking, focusing on only one group of protection providers. Approaching protection from seven different perspectives, as well as adding a feedback mechanism in component eight, the model enables protection providers to improve their contribution to IDP protection. The necessity for this new model becomes apparent from the historic evolution of the protection concept, linked to major events necessitating protection, as is explained in section one below.

2.1 Protection Definitions, Models and Approaches

The overall objective of this research is to contribute to increasing the understanding and explanation of how different protection providers provide protection of Internally Displaced Persons. Some of the challenges to IDP protection can be best understood by looking at the historic understanding and development of the concept of protection. At the same time, many developments in relation to protection have taken place in current times. Therefore, the first subsection provides a brief overview of the evolution in protection thinking, as well as the currently most widely used definitions of protection. These protection definitions include both general and IDP specific definitions. Subsection two discusses the most commonly used protection models and approaches (consisting of both general and IDP specific models and approaches). The merits of the protection definitions, models and approaches are analysed in subsection three. The outcome of that subsection are protection criteria and typologies, which will feed into the Conceptual Framework, presented in section eight. Subsection one commences with the evolution in protection thinking.

2.1.1 Protection Evolution

The goal of presenting the evolution of the concept of protection is to be able to understand and overcome current challenges. Protection is a difficult concept and its understanding has changed over time. The evolution of protection can be divided into four distinct periods which are: pre-WWII, WWII till the end of the Cold War, end of the Cold War to September 11 and September 11 till now. Stakeholders, perceptions and the global context are different for each period and change the way IDP protection is provided (or not) within the different periods. The main characteristics of each period are briefly mentioned after which their effect on the understanding of IDP protection is discussed.

The first historic time period of protection is Pre-World War One. This period is characterised by the Development of Protection Regimes. In prehistoric societies protection was already provided to vulnerable people through charity (Ferris, 2011, p7). However, the development of protection regimes received a strong impetus through the development (by Hugo Grotius) of international law, law of war and the issue of non-combatants (Best in Darcy, 2009, p12). The American and French revolution in the late 18th century (developing the concepts of liberty and equality) and the abolition of the slave trade at the beginning of the

19th century strengthen the development of regimes (Robertson, 1982, p7). The translation from regimes to action came in 1859 when Henry Dunant witnessed the Battlefield of Solferino and decided that there was a need for selfless protection to unknown vulnerable people (ICRC, 2001, p19). Dunant set up the International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC) in 1863 (ICRC, 2009, p3) (ICRC, 2008). The ICRC not only puts protection into action it also recognises humanitarian action as a right based on the fact that all people are human beings (Darcy, 1997, p8). World War One further showed the need, but also highlighted the first problems with regards to protection regimes (US Department of Justice, 2010). The problem with protection is that states do not always live up to the responsibilities vis-à-vis their citizens (Uttamchandani, 2004). In this time period the concept of IDPs did not yet exist, but in 1921 the League of Nations created the High Commissioner for Refugees to care for people fleeing from the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (USSR) (Ferris, 2008, p10). Protection is provided on the basis of geographical area and loss of Government, less on the motive for fleeing. With the rise of Nazi Germany, criteria of protection such as race, religion and political opinion, became important (Nanda in White and Marsella, 2007, p154-155).

The second historic period in the evolution of the protection concept runs from World War Two until the end of the Cold War. In this period protection regimes developed into Legal Frameworks. The three frameworks that were created in this period are: International Humanitarian Law (IHL), International Human Rights Law (IHRL) and International Refugee Law (IRL). Each framework has a corresponding (set of) documents and a guardian. The development of IHL already commenced in the previous time period through the work of the ICRC, which is also its guardian. The IHL legal framework is created by the Four Geneva Conventions of 1949 and the Two Additional Protocols of 1977 and only applies in time of armed conflict (GPCWG, 2007, p22-23).

The second Legal Framework is the IHRL which is made up of the 1948 Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR), the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR) and International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR) of 1966 (Darcy, 1997, p7) (GPCWG, 2007, p17) (Robertson, 1982, p33). This framework applies at all times, also during war, even though some rights can be temporarily suspended with the exception of the non-derogable rights (Slim, Bonwick, 2005, p34-35). The Office of the High Commissioner of Human Rights (OHCHR) guards IHRL. The lack of universal recognition and respect challenges IHRL (Darcy, 1997, p10-11) (Robertson, 1982, p70). Other challenges are the fact that only the ICCPR foresees a Human Right Committee to interpret rights (Drzewicki and Nowak in Hanski, 2004) (Robertson, 1982, p38).

The third legal framework is the International Refugee Convention, developed in 1951 and guarded by the United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees (UNHCR). UNHCR was created following the 30 million displaced persons after WWII who were without a legal status and only receiving ad hoc protection. UNHCR defines a refugee as someone who: *"owing to a well-founded fear of being persecuted for reasons of race, religion, nationality,*

membership of a particular social group or political opinion, is outside the country of his nationality, and is unable to, or owing to such fear, is unwilling to avail himself of the protection of that country" (UNHCR, 1951, p16-18). UNHCR's work revolves around the key concept of 'non-refoulement' which ensures that refugees are not returned to areas where they face persecution (White in White and Marsella, 2007, p1-2). Regardless of the fact that the principle of 'non-refoulement' has become customary law, states have still use national, religious and political reasons to send people back (Nanda, in White, 2007, p170). UNHCR's core tasks is to ensure that states accept the refugee status and fulfil the corresponding rights (Darcy, 1997, p30).

The Legal Frameworks are guarded by International Organisations, which are key stakeholders in this time period together with the most important stakeholder of all, the State. The State (with de jure or de facto authority) is primarily responsible for the protection of its citizens (UDHR, 1948). States have the responsibility to protect, promote and fulfil human rights (Caritas et al., 2008, p1). When they fail to do so, this is flagged and corrected, by human right organisations and non-governmental organisations (NGOs) (Paul, 1999, P3/27/30). Reasons why States fail to protect their people are the many (proxy) wars fought in this time period, characterised by the Cold War bipolar hostilities between the United States of America (USA) and the USSR³¹ (Mychajlyszyn, 2005, p17). When States fail to protect their citizens, the responsibility for providing protection moves to the international level (UN articles 55 and 56). However, during the Cold War, the UN was side-lined by the two superpowers (Darcy, 1997, p16) (Robertson, 1982, p24) (Mychajlyszyn, 2005, p17). During this period the ICRC principles of neutrality, impartiality and independence decreased in importance and became replaced by the concepts of sovereignty and non-intervention (Frohardt et al., 1999, p12) (McCorquodale, 2006, p110). The importance of sovereignty was strengthened by the end of colonialisation³² (Springhall, 2001, p2).

The importance of sovereignty and non-intervention in this time period is however countered by increased attention to human rights, democracy and the influence of civil society (Martin in Glanville and Davies, 2010, p14) (Frohardt et al., 1999, p7-8). Even Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) receive specific attention, in the London Declaration of International Law Principles on IDPs (Lee, 2001, p454). From 1971 onwards UNHCR, in response to a demand from the UN General Assembly, diverted some of its operational capacity (mostly material assistance) to IDPs (IOM-FOM, 1994, p49) (UNHCR, 1994, p1-3). IDPs were first counted in 1982 when there were 1.2 million in 11 countries, which increased to 14 million four years later (Cohen in White, 2007, p16). From the 1980s humanitarian organisations included IDP protection (Cohen, 2006, p90).

³¹ For more information on wars in the different historic time periods please refer to (Cashman& Robinson, 2007), (Durham&McCormack, 1999), (Hables, 1997), (Jacoby, 2008), (Sandole, 1999), (Scherrer, 2003).

³² For more information on Decolonization please refer to (Shipway, 2008), (Thomas, 2008), (Waites, 1999).

The attention which is given to IDPs in the previous time period is expanded in the third period. This period runs from the End of the Cold War to September 11, 2001 and can be described as Conceptualising Capacities. Some actors in this period experience an increase in their capacities, such as the UN³³ and the media³⁴, while the capacity of others falter, such as the USSR (Mychajlyszyn, 2005, p21). The character of war also changes, becoming intra-state and more brutal with an increasing number of civilians suffering (Frohardt et al., 1999, p13-16). Examples of such crisis are can be seen in Rwanda, Yugoslavia, Sierra Leone, Sudan, Colombia, Guatemala and Burma (Paul, 1999, p1).

The above-mentioned conflicts are known as Complex Political Emergencies (CPEs) described as *'a humanitarian crisis in a country, region or society where there is a total or considerable breakdown of authority resulting from internal or external conflict and which requires an international response that goes beyond the mandate or capacity of any single agency and/or the ongoing United Nations country programme.'* (OCHA, 1999). Associated characteristics of CPEs are; high number of IDPs, interlocking military, political, social and economic forces engaged in violence and state collapse (Lautze et al., 2004, p2134) (Cliffe and Luckham, 1999, p27)³⁵. To deal with CPEs, multinational peacekeeping interventions develop, increasing the capacity of the military³⁶. State consent is still sought prior to such interventions, showing that sovereignty remains important but has become conditional (Mychajlyszyn, 2005, p21/25) (Harvey, 2009, p6). At the same time the UN do not always succeed in offering protection as its motives are distrusted, its structure is not suited for military engagement and protection is still considered of secondary importance to sovereignty (Otunnu, 1998, p8-9). Therefore, according to former UN Secretary General Kofi Annan, preventing conflicts is the best protection (Otunnu, 1998, p169-170). Still, the military increased its involvement with NGOs in so-called 'humanitarian' or 'Just' wars (Woodward 2001 in Gibson, 2004, p10). A negative effect of increased military involvement in HA is a blurring of the lines between the military and humanitarian workers (Pugh, 2001).

NGOs are also a stakeholder whose capacities increase in this time period. This is related to the realisation that states are not always willing or able to fulfil their primary protection role vis-à-vis their citizens (Caritas et al., 2008, p1). NGOs, often having better access to populations in need, take on some of this responsibility (Brennan and Martone in

³³ Increased UN involvement applies to the UN in its totality (Otunnu, 1998, p3), (Cohen in White, 2007, p23) (Cohen and Deng, 1998, p128-160). ICRC and the International Organisations for Migration (IOM) also increased in capacity.

³⁴ For more information on the role of the media, for example in relation to the 'CNN-effect', the media's role as whistle blower or mediator please consult (Reychler, 2001, P302 and p304-307) and (Marthoz in Gibbons and Piquard, 2006, p105).

³⁵ Saikal refers to collapsed states as 'disrupted states' (Saikal, 2000, p40-43).

³⁶ The increased capacity of the military has been clearly stipulated by Secretary-General Boutros Boutros-Ghali in his *An Agenda for Peace* of 1992. As a result, the military got involved in preventive diplomacy, peace enforcement, peacemaking, peacekeeping, or post-conflict peacebuilding (UNPO, 2008, p20-26) (Goodhand and Hulme, 1999, p15).

White, 2007, p75). This process is closely monitored by protection standards, such as ‘Do no Harm’, the Sphere Project and the NGO Code of Conduct (IASC, 2002, pXV). Human rights become increasingly important in this time period with the decision, by the UNSC, to increase the scope of article 2(7) of the UN Charter. This decision is, according to Deng, extremely relevant as it makes intervention in the internal affairs of states easier (Otunnu, 1998, p3-4) (Bode, 2014, p283). Nevertheless, the increasing importance of human rights is not for all, as, especially poor people, do not have access to the legislative instruments to ensure their rights (Cornwall and Nyamu-Musembo, 2004, p1418). Additionally, tensions exist between providing assistance and speaking out against human right’s abuses (Brennan and Martone in White, 2007, p82-83).

The increase in capacity translates into increased attention for IDPs in this time period. Kofi Annan calls ‘internal displacement [is] one of the great human tragedies of our time’ (Cohen in White, 2007, p16). In this time period (in 1992) Francis Deng is appointed as first Representative of the Secretary General (RSG) on IDPs (Bode, 2014, p283) (Weiss, 2003, p430). Deng introduces the concept of ‘Sovereignty as Responsibility’ and tasks a team of experts to analyse existing legal instruments to determine the extent to which these instruments protect IDPs (Cohen and Deng, 1998, p275-280) (Ferris, 2008, p11) (Bode, 2014, p290). This leads in 1998, to non-legally binding Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement (Cohen in White, 2007, p21) (Cohen, 2006, p92) (Bode, 2014, p285). Deng presents the Guiding Principles to the Commission on Human Rights in its 55th session in 1999 (Deng, 1999). The Principles are unanimously adopted at the 2005 UN Summit, which increases their standing (UNGA, 2005, para 132). Though related, the Guiding Principles are still markedly different from the Refugee Legal Framework discussed in the second-time period. For one the Principles were drawn up by a team of experts instead of by states (Cohen, 2014, p12) (Kälin, 2008, p3), IDPs concerns are not taken on by a specific UN agency (Cuénod in Bode, 2014, p283), with the primary responsibility for their protection still resting with the state whose border they have not crossed (Cohen and Deng, 1998, p113) (IASC, 2000, p4/11) (Kälin, 2008, p5).

Having said this the UNHCR continues to be involved with providing protection to IDPs but still requires UN and state consent as well as the availability of sufficient funds, and will not be involved if it puts refugee protection at risk. If UNHCR becomes involved they monitor HR violations, treat IDPs, conduct tracing and family reunification, prevent further displacement and bring material relief (UNHCR, 1994, p16/41). UNHCR however, remains internally divided on what its role towards IDPs should be given the differences between IDP and refugee populations (Feller, 2006, p12). UNHCR’s hesitations were partly overcome by the introduction of the Collaborative Approach³⁷. Towards the end of this time period UNHCR

³⁷ Within the UN system Collaborative and Cluster Approach are sometimes used in an interchangeable way. Confusion also exists on the start date of the Collaborative approach. Bagshaw and Paul mention 1997 but IASC

moves away from UN approval and state consent seeing IDP work as a natural extension of UNHCR's mandate (Matar, 2005, p7). Still, UNHCR believes that actors close to IDPs, such as family, community and clan, should also provide IDP protection (UNHCR, 1994, p57). The protection IDPs in this time period receive from international actors consists of: protection by presence, incorporating protection elements into assistance programmes, setting up protection working groups, military action and protection through prevention (Cohen, in White, 2007, p26-30) (Pantuliano and O'Callaghan, 2006, p17).

The fourth and final time period runs from September 11, 2001 until now and can be described by the Securitisation of Aid and the Age of Terrorism. The attacks on the Twin Towers in 2001 and the subsequent Global War on Terror (GWOT) initiated by the USA after 9/11 marked an all-time low in protection and paved the way for changes in protection thinking. These changes include increased difficulty in establishing the difference between victim and perpetrator, negotiation becoming an accepted modus operandi to gain access and once again the side-lining of the UN (IASC, 2002, p38) (Gibbons, 2004, p11). The terrorist attacks also led to counter-terror and counter-insurgency campaigns, restrictive and politically motivated interpretation of international law and the Securitisation of aid (Darcy and Collinson in Collison et al., 2009, p2). Aid is also used by States as a substitute for their responsibility to protect their people, forcing HA actors to be more active politically, for which they are not well suited (IASC, 2002, p1-2). State sovereignty, has become conditional (Gibbons, 2004, p11). When states no longer protect the HRs of their people, these people flee (Nanda, in White, 2007, p164).

The conflicts people flee from in this time period are long and multi-faceted, with a multitude of parties including criminal groups and failed states, different influential economic agendas and the absence of clearly identifiable ideologies. Additionally, wars are increasingly brutal and consciousness shocking, destroy whole communities and disrupt education, trade, agriculture and industry (UNHCR, State of the World refugees, 2006, p10-11) (Best in Darcy, 2009, p11/15). Protection therefore, in this time period, increasingly deals with economic inequality, social collapse and environmental change. The role of HA actors is two-fold, on the one hand they empower communities and want to work in partnership with them (Ramsbotham, 2005, p215-217). On the other hand, HA actors increase their cooperation with the military, which becomes even more involved in HA work in this time period, even though they are under resourced and overstretched (Darcy, 2009, p2).

In this time period achieving protection relies on different initiatives such as the Responsibility to Protect (R2P). R2P is based on the concept of sovereignty as a right and a responsibility (Evans, 2008, p39). R2P is supported by the UN and the community of States

sees 1999 as initial beginning. In addition to this the IASC only wrote a Guidance Note for Resident Coordinators and Country teams in 2004 (IASC, 2004, p4). More information on the Collaborative Approach can be read in (Bagshaw and Paul, 2003, p4/6) (IASC, 2000, p11) (IASC, 2004, p5).

(ICISS, 2001, pVIII) (Davies and Glanville, 2010, p3/5). The media, through the ‘CNN-effect’ still provides a certain extent of protection but suffers from ‘infotainment’³⁸. Additionally, the media has less access to victims and more difficulties determining who are victims and who are perpetrators (Marthoz in Gibbons and Piquard, 2006, p109-110). One group of victims who are difficult to

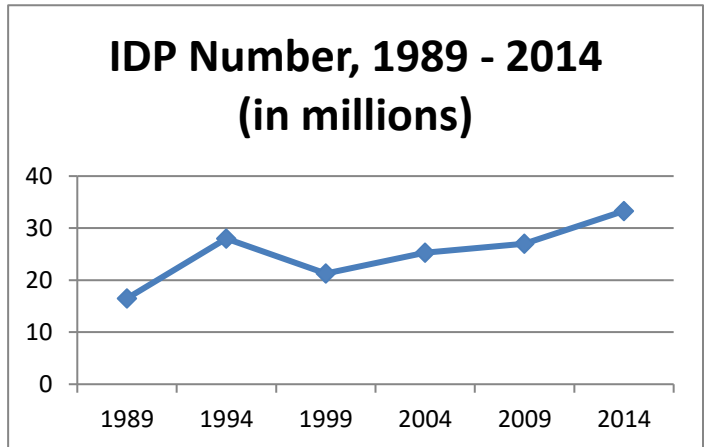


Figure 2.1.1: IDP Numbers 1989 - 2014

identify are IDPs. They are displaced by both States and Non-State Actors. As can be seen in figure 2.1.1 the number of IDPs has increased over the years (Ferris, 2014, p5).

Additionally, the conclusion of the Protection Survey in 2003 identified protection gaps, ad hoc UN engagement and lack of political and financial support from UN HQ to IDPs. This applies especially to UNHCR which adopted a ‘pick and choose’ attitude towards IDP protection (Crisp, Kiragu and Tennant, 2007, p12). Therefore, the plight of IDPs becomes priority for the UN. In its resolutions, the UN increasingly referred and took action on internal displacement issues and, in 2002, set up an Internal Displacement Unit (later the Internal Displacement Division) (Weerasinghe and Ferris, 2011, p5/8). Being a new stakeholder with a limited budget this Division was not very influential (Cohen in White, 2007, p24). In 2004 the first RSG on IDP, Francis Deng is replaced by Walter Kälin, who becomes the RSG on the Human Rights of IDPs, stressing National Responsibility (Cohen, 2006, p99).

A further attempt to improve the international community’s response to internal displacement is the Humanitarian Reform process. Started by the UN in 2004 it transforms the Collaborative into the Cluster Approach³⁹ (Morris, 2006, p55) (Ferris, 2014, p10) (OCHA, 2006, p3-4). Three Clusters focus specifically on improving IDPs’ HR and protection. The three clusters (all led by UNHCR) are; protection, camp management and camp coordination (UNHCR, Global Appeal 2007, p41) (Ferris, 2014, p10). Since the introduction of the Cluster Approach, UNHCR has mainstreamed IDP activities into its work, using a rights-based and community-based approach. UNHCR’s involvement in IDP situations (within or outside the Cluster Approach) can be seen in table 2.1 (UNHCR, Global Report 2007-2014).

³⁸ ‘Infotainment’ occurs when information has to compete with entertainment offered by social media (Marthoz in Gibbons and Piquard, 2006, p108).

³⁹ Reasons for replacing the Collaborative Approach and the success (and challenges) of the Cluster Approach can be read in (Cohen, 2006, p96) (Harvey, 2009, p1) (Stoddard et al, 2007, p1-2) (Ferris, 2014, p12).

Year	'07	'08	'09	'10	'11	'12	'13	'14
# of IDP Operations	29	28	29	25	28	24	29	33
# of which Cluster Approach	11	18	19	19	20	16	19	22

Table 2.1: IDP Operations and the Cluster Approach

Regardless of UNHCR's role as lead agency, the organisation remains internally divided on IDPs⁴⁰. This is why other activities relating to IDP protection are also engaged in such as; disseminating the G.P., setting up monitoring and reporting mechanisms, protection working groups, conducting needs assessments with a focus on protection, (Bagshaw and Paul, 2003, p9/30-33/40-45)⁴¹. In 2010 Kälin hands over to Chaloka Beyani, having seen the return of 24.4 million IDPs to their areas of origin but with serious challenges to IDP protection remaining (Kälin, 2011, p43). Challenges and impressive initiatives to counter them, are observed in Africa. In 2004 the African Union (AU) begins to develop a legal framework, accumulating in October 2009 in the AU Convention for the Protection and Assistance of IDPs in Africa (the Kampala Convention) (ECOSOCC, 2010, p9) (IDMC, 2012, p5-6). This Convention, based on hard and soft domestic laws and policies, places the primary responsibility for IDP protection with States (Ridderbos, 2011, p36). The Convention is in line with the Guiding Principles, utilising the same IDP definition. It takes until 6 December 2012 for the Convention to enter into force. The map below shows which countries (based on figures available till the end of 2013) are bound by the Convention (Tadi, 2014).

⁴⁰ More information on the different sentiments within UNHCR vis-a-vis IDP, as well as the different IDP related activities it developed in this time period can be read in (UNHCR, State of the World refugees, 2006, p18) (UNHCR, 2006, p40) (UNHCR, 2007, p7-13) (UNHCR-I, 2007, p11-12) (UNHCR-II, 2007, p2-3) (UNHCR, Global Report 2007, 2007, p48) (Diagne and Entwisle, 2008, p33) (Matar, 2005, p1/50)

⁴¹ For more information on needs assessments see (Garfield et al, 2011) (Darcy and Hofmann, 2003).

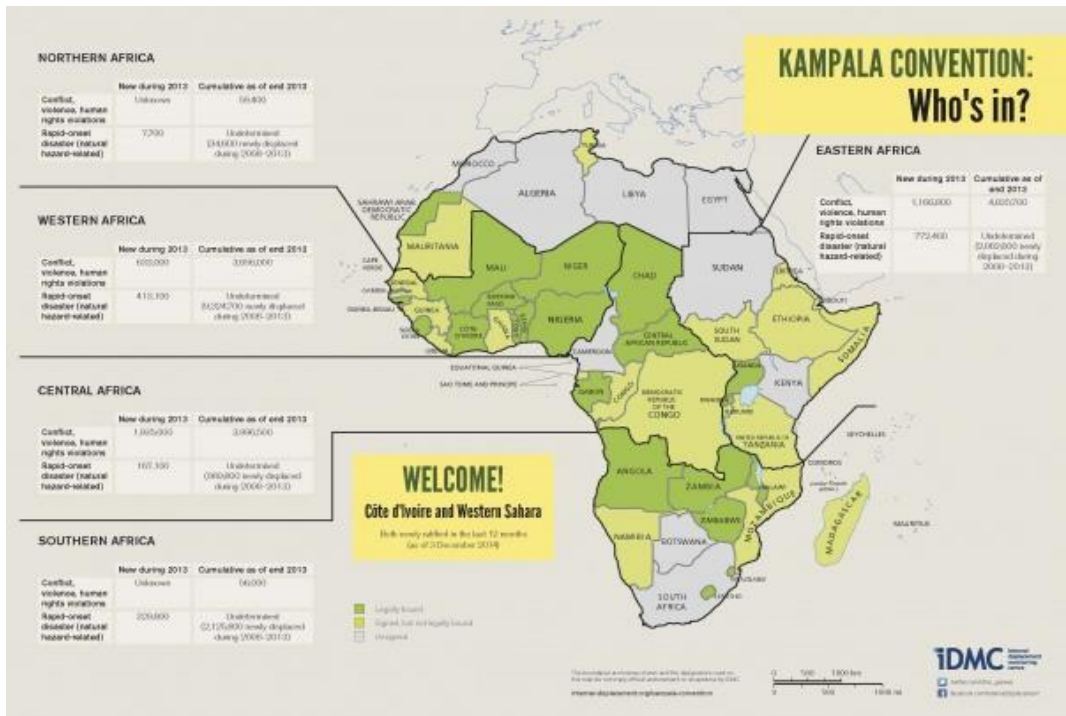


Figure 2.1.2: Members of Kampala IDP Convention

At the time of writing, IDPs and their concerns are on the agenda, accompanied by a strong normative framework, a more systematic response, more civil society advocacy and a strong research base. Nevertheless, caution is needed as resources and attention are shifting to the Protection of Civilians. The challenge is to keep IDPs on the agenda, continue to strengthen the institutional architecture and ensure support (Ferris, 2014, p41-42). The decreasing attention of UNHCR to IDPs, due to limited money and resources, should either be countered by increasing UNHCR's mandate (in the absence of an UN IDP Agency) or by increasing the accountability of States (Cohen-II, 2006, p102/103/105). However, as can be seen throughout the evolution of the concept of protection, States do not always live up to their responsibilities. From the second-time period on the principles of sovereignty and non-intervention are of key importance and, though this importance diminishes to a certain extent in the next time periods, remains an influential factor in relation to IDP protection. Having said this, IDPs were already mentioned and assisted in period two. Serious work on improving IDP protection happens in time period three, a period in which the number of actors involved in protection increases

markedly. The increase in attention to IDPs' plight continues in time period four with the first legally enforceable regional Convention on IDP Protection developed, ratified and entering into force in Africa. At the same time the identification of IDPs becomes increasingly difficult due to the blurring of the lines between victims and perpetrators. The conclusion from the presentation of the evolution of the concept of protection is that, though many important steps have been taken, a half-hearted approach towards IDP protection has existed and still exists. To ensure that IDP protection does not increasingly fall in between the cracks of the international protection system a common understanding and provision of protection is necessary. The extent to which such a common understanding of protection exists will be researched in the next subsection.

2.1.2 Protection Definitions, Models and Approaches

This subsection builds upon the historic evolution, presented above, further increasing the understanding of protection by focusing on how different actors define or characterise it. A common definition, used by many actors, has been developed by the ICRC and states: *'Protection comprises all activities aimed at ensuring full respect for the rights of the individual in accordance with the letter and the spirit of the relevant bodies of law, i.e. human rights law, international humanitarian law and refugee law. Human rights and humanitarian organisations must conduct these activities in an impartial manner and not on the basis of race, national or ethnic origin, language or gender.'* (ICRC, 2001).

In this definition, the different bodies of law play an important role. Given the comprehensive nature of these frameworks, as well as their universal standing, linking protection to them strengthens the concept of protection. This is the case because it ensures a focus on the safety, humanity, dignity and integrity of a person but also brings freedom and is empowering. The 'Handbook for the Protection of Internally Displaced Persons' also reiterates the importance of rights, encouraging the use of the rights-based approach. At the same time the importance of a community-based approach to protection is also highlighted in the Handbook. Together these approaches increase the dignity and self-esteem of people, empowering them. The Global Protection Cluster (GPCWG) defines protection as *'ensuring the full and equal respect for the rights of all individuals, regardless of age, gender or ethnic, social, religious or other background'* (GPCWG, 2010, p7).

Looking at the different characteristics of protection observed in the different authoritative texts a key characteristic of protection should be that people are able to achieve protection by themselves (Slim and Bonwick, 2005, p30). Within the analytical framework called 'Assessment for Action', also developed by the Protection Cluster, this goal is achieved

when there is clarity on the resources and capacities of both the protection deprived and the protection providers and IDPs are consulted. As such the framework identifies the support IDPs need to fulfil their rights (GPCWG, 2008, pvii-viii).

In addition to consulting the IDP both the Framework for National Responsibility (Brookings-Bern, 2005) as well as the Manual for Law and Policy Makers (Brookings-Bern, 2008) emphasise the role of the State in IDP protection (Brookings-Bern, 2008, p2/6/11). Yet another way to approach IDP protection is by focusing on the root causes of displacement, more specifically the displacement, or conflict, drivers and triggers (IDMC, 2015, p2).

Protection should also consist of both rights-based as well as material support (Bagshaw and Paul, 2004, p3). According to the authors of both ‘Protect or Neglect’ and the Synthesis Report called ‘Support to Internally Displaced Persons’, protection should be given a more prominent place in needs assessments. In general, needs assessment are often lacking or are of poor quality and follow up is missing. Both sets of authors also are of the opinion that the Guiding Principles are not operational enough and protection needs are often secondary to material needs. Other problems are the lack of coordination between local and (inter)national actors and that IDPs are not a homogenous group (Borton, 2005, p12-16).

Up to this point the characteristics of IDP protection have been discussed. Failure to meet these characteristics could be an explanation for the lack of IDP protection. However, the problem can also lie in the provision of protection. Therefore, the remainder of this subsection will pay attention to the models and approaches of IDP protection.

Various models and approaches have been developed to provide protection. Some models, like ICRC’s ‘Egg Model’ or the Active Learning Network for Accountability and Performance in Humanitarian Action (ALNAP) ‘Modes of Action’ (figures 2.1.3 and 2.1.4) focus on protection enhancing

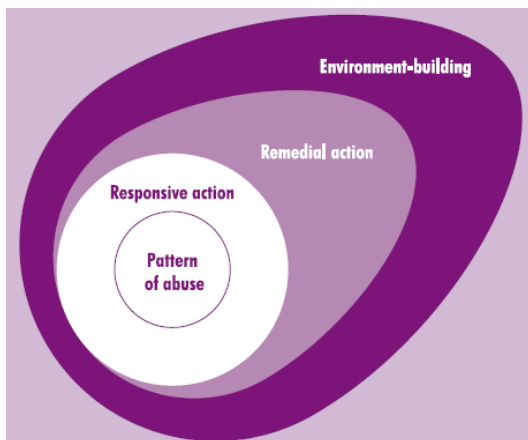


Figure 2.1.3: ICRC Egg Model

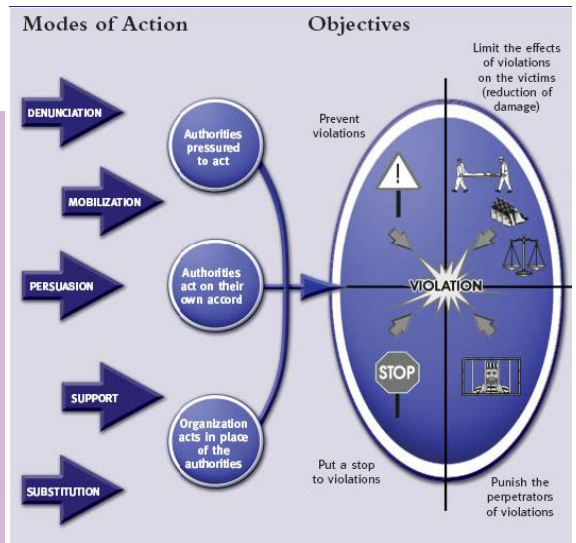


Figure 2.1.4: ALNAP’s Mode of Action

activities. These diverse activities meet different objectives.⁴²

Contrary to providing protection by focusing on what should be done, protection can also be provided by analysing the problem and solving it. One way of doing this is by making an inventory of the needs and capacities of the protection deprived, while ensuring protection providers meet their responsibilities. This ‘Risk-based Model of Protection’, is captured by the equation: **Risk = Threat + Vulnerability x Time** (Slim and Bonwick, 2005, p55).

Another way to provide protection is by sharing the burden of providing protection. To accomplish this the IASC introduced the Collaborative Approach in 1997 which in 2005 transformed into the Cluster Approach⁴³. To deal with one of the challenges to protection (which is when States do not live up to their responsibilities) the ‘Responsibility to Protect’ was developed. Under this approach, in case of inability or unwillingness of a State to provide protection, the responsibility for protection automatically moves to the international community⁴⁴. R2P can also be listed among the approaches to protection as it lists three sets of activities (prevention, reaction and rebuilding) (ICISS, 2001). A challenge to R2P is the incorrect perception that it is necessarily associated with military action, and leads to a humanitarian military intervention⁴⁵.

Instead of focusing on protective actions and responsibilities, a number of models focus on people’s assets, capacities or vulnerabilities and as such can be used to provide protection. These kinds of models include the ‘Vulnerability and Capacity Analysis’ (VCA), the ‘Human Security Approach’ and the ‘Livelihoods Analysis Model’ (of which several exist but the UK Department for International Development (DfID) is shown in figure 2.1.5)⁴⁶.

⁴² For more information on the ‘Egg Model’ please consult (ICRC, 2001, p6-11), while more information on the ‘Modes of Action’ can be found in (Slim, Bonwick, 2005, p83).

⁴³ More information about the Cluster Approach can be read in (IASC, 2006), (Martin in Glanville and Davies, 2010, p26) and (Kent, 2009).

⁴⁴ For more information on R2P please consult (Glanville, 2010, p186), (Cohen in Glanville and Davies, 2010, p41/43/48) (Evans, 2008, p56-59) (Mooney, 2008, p13).

⁴⁵ For more information on humanitarian interventions please see (Macfarlane, 2004, p979-981)

⁴⁶ More information on the different models can be found in the following references: VCA (Davis, Haghebaert and Peppiatt, 2004), Human Security (UNDP, 1994), (Simon, 2008, p46-49) (Commission on Human Security, 2003, p2) (Alkire, 2003, p3/23) and Livelihoods Analysis (DfID, 1999, p2-4).

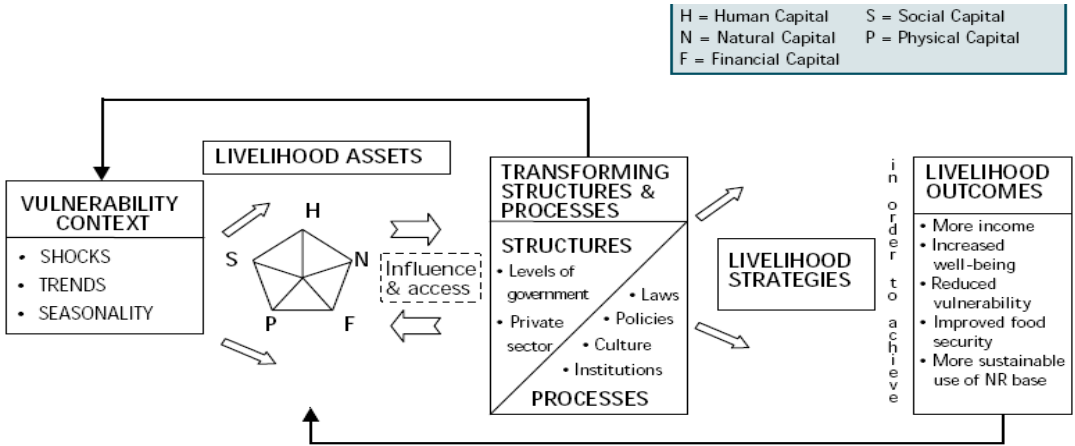


Figure 2.1.5: DfiD Livelihoods Analysis Model

Linked to this focus on people, protection can also be provided by analysing ‘Coping Mechanisms’. Many different kinds of coping mechanisms exist, which can differ in character, goal and cost. Coping mechanisms are influenced by a person’s character, physical strength and surroundings.⁴⁷

Other models were developed to research the impact of humanitarianism and the extent to which it is accountable to its beneficiaries. Such models are the ‘Benefits and Harms Approach’ (focusing specifically on human rights) (figure 2.1.6) and the HAP (Humanitarian Accountability Project).⁴⁸

Summarising the above, protection can be provided by developing activities, problem analysing and solving, burden sharing, emphasizing responsibility, focusing on people’s assets, capacities, vulnerabilities or coping mechanisms and by paying attention to the impact of and accountability within humanitarian programmes. These different approaches to protection have been explained based on existing protection definitions and models and approaches to protection. Each of

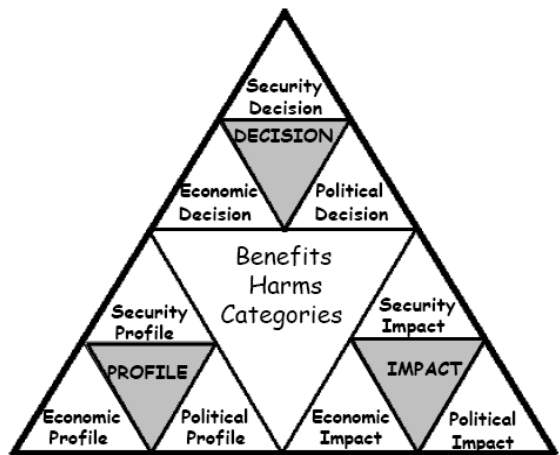


Figure 2.1.6: Benefits and Harms Model

⁴⁷ For more information on Coping Mechanisms please consult (Zeidner and Endler, 1996), (Lautze, Hammock, 1996) and (Jaspars, O’Callaghan, Stites, 2007, p10).

⁴⁸ For more information on the Benefits and Harms Approach please consult (Care, 2001, p6-14), while information on HAP can be found in (HAP, 2007) and (Oxfam, 2008).

these models and approaches to protection individually do not lead to IDP protection (as could be read in the historic overview of protection). Therefore, in the next subsection, overarching criteria and typologies of protection will be distilled from the definitions, models and approaches to protection presented in this subsection.

2.1.3 Application Protection Criteria and Typologies

The previous subsections have shown how a growing need for protection translated into a growing number of protection definitions, models and approaches but did not lead to increased protection. In this subsection, a start is made to contribute to improving protection. This is done by distilling the essence of protection, according to the protection definitions, and summarising them in protection criteria. At the same time the extent to which the existing protection models and approaches contribute to protection, by fulfilling the identified criteria, is researched. This is done to justify the observation that IDP are insufficiently protected. To address this problem, overlap between the ways in which IDP protection is aimed to be achieved by the existing models and approaches will lead to protection typologies. These, higher level, more abstract ways to provide protection together with the protection criteria can then be used to determine the protection culture and context in a displacement crisis. First the protection criteria, based on the protection definitions, are presented after which the protection typologies, which are based on the protection models and approaches.

Given the dominant place international law takes in the work of the ICRC, as well as in the ‘Handbook for the Protection of IDPs’ and the ‘Manual for Law and Policy Makers’, International Human Rights Law and more specifically the Universal Declaration of Human Rights and the two Covenants is the first of the ten protection criteria. IHRL can be seen as a worldwide agreed roadmap on how to protect people⁴⁹. Within international law States have the responsibility to protect their people. As a result, the three sources used to determine criteria one also highlight the Rights-based Approach (RBA) to protection, which is therefore identified as the second protection criteria. Different though related to the RBA is the Community-based Approach (CBA) to protection, identified as the third protection criteria. This is because both the ‘Handbook’ and ‘Assessment for Action’ pay attention to the importance of including IDPs in their own protection⁵⁰. Though the CBA maintains that the protection deprived should always contribute to their own protection, at times they do not have the means to do so. This is why ‘Protect or Neglect’ has pointed out the importance of capacity-building, which is why it has been chosen as the fourth protection criteria.

Both the ‘Handbook’ and ‘Assessment for Action’ have pointed out the need for Coordination and Planning, which are therefore the fifth and sixth protection criteria.

⁴⁹ The author is aware of the debate on the universality of IHRL.

⁵⁰ CBA is defined in HPN Report Safety with Dignity as ‘activities aimed at facilitating individuals and communities to achieve respect for their rights in safety and dignity’ (Berry and Reddy, 2010, p3).

Increased coordination and planning have however not (according to ‘Protect or Neglect’ and the ICRC) been able to ensure that IDPs’ material and protection needs receive equal attention, although this is very important. The seventh protection criteria therefore states that protection can only be achieved if protection needs receive equal standing to material needs. Needs assessments and follow up are mentioned by the ‘Protect or Neglect’ and ‘Support to IDPs’ studies as important prerequisites for IDP protection. This is why the eighth and ninth protection criteria requires comprehensive, multi-sector and inter-agency needs assessments and follow up activities on identified needs. Fulfilling needs is simplified when these needs are grounded in international law documents. However, both the ‘Handbook for the Protection of IDPs’ and the ‘Manual for Law and Policymakers’ state that key international law documents are not operational enough. This is why it is necessary (and the tenth protection criteria) to develop attitudes and skills towards protection. Based on the analysis of the protection definitions, presented in the previous subsection, ten protection criteria have been identified, which, once fulfilled, will protect IDPs.

Having identified what protection should exist according to the literature, the next step is to determine the extent to which the existing protection models and approaches fulfil these protection criteria. The aim of this exercise is to determine whether the existing models and approaches are sufficient and suited to provide protection. For each protection model or approach presented in the previous subsection it will be determined which protection criteria it fulfils and why. The results of this analysis will be presented in table two.

Analysing the ICRC *Egg Model*, the division of activities into three spheres gives an overview of who is doing what, where and whether or not protection gaps remain. The Egg model therefore allows for coordination and planning of protection activities. For reasons, similar to those presented for the Egg model, *ALNAP’s Modes of Action* is also suitable for coordination and planning activities. In the Support Mode, capacity-building activities are developed while also increasing protection skills and attitudes. The *Risk-based Model* looks at threats and vulnerabilities of the protection deprived and what protection providers should do, meeting the RBA criteria. As the model also pays attention to the capacities of the protection deprived it also fulfils the community based approach to protection (criteria three), while the activities which the protection providers engage in can be seen as a form of capacity-building (criteria four). In order to determine the threats and vulnerabilities a needs assessment has to be done and the activities of the protection providers indicate that a follow up on these needs also occur (criteria eight and nine).

As the aim of the *Cluster Approach* consists of assigning tasks and responsibilities, the model’s *raison d’etre* is coordination and planning. The UNRC/HC, being part of the Cluster Approach can order needs assessments and ensure appropriate follow up. In the activities that are engaged in as part of the Cluster approach, protection and material needs can be balanced and protection skills and attitudes developed. As *R2P* assigns responsibility to the state and if necessary the international community at large, it is an appropriate planning

and coordination tool too. Sovereignty as responsibility also strengthens protection skills and attitudes, while the approach is firmly rooted in international law. As the approach aims to prevent, react and rebuild, capacity building activities are also part of R2P.

The **Human Security Approach** pays attention to seven securities founded upon different HRs, thereby paying equal attention to protection and material needs have equal standing and showing the importance of international law. The approach also centres on people, which helps fulfil the third criteria (CBA). In order for the approach to make an inventory of the capacities and assets of the protection deprived in each category, a needs assessment has to be done. The **Livelihoods Approach** also centres on people (thereby fulfilling CBA). Similarly to the Human Security Approach, it also makes an inventory of the different assets people have (which are also founded in international law), and utilises a needs assessment to obtain this information. The Approach goes further than the Human Security Approach, as Livelihood Strategies are developed, which ensure that the identified needs are followed up upon. The Livelihoods Approach is not only focused on the protection deprived but also on the protection providers and the wider context, thereby meeting the RBA criteria. In order to reach the livelihood outcomes, capacity-building is necessary.

The **Vulnerability and Capacity Analysis** involves conducting needs assessments to determine what makes people vulnerable. As the model also identifies what needs to be done and by whom, this approach meets criteria nine (following up on needs assessments). Dividing tasks on what needs to be done necessitates coordination and capacity building. The holistic approach towards vulnerability, taken by the model, indicates a grounding in human rights. As the approach pays attention to both the protection deprived and providers it meets the RBA criteria, while its focus on coping mechanisms of protection deprived indicates a community-based approach. The **Benefits and Harms Approach** also identifies protection deprived and protection providers, thereby fulfilling the RBA criteria. The way the approach is set up shows a firm grounding in human rights, while at the same time not forgetting the material side of people's needs. This is because it looks at the human rights impact of humanitarian assistance.

The **Humanitarian Accountability Project** identifies rights holders and duty bearers and therefore meets the RBA criteria. Specific HAP principles show adherence to human rights, capacity building of beneficiaries, participation of beneficiaries and the need to develop protection skills and attitudes. The final approach to protection looks at people's **Coping Mechanisms**. By their very nature these mechanisms are community based. Additional criteria are not fulfilled by this approach. Table 2.2 below shows how the different models and approaches to protection fulfil the protection criteria.

	Criteria 1 – UDHR	Criteria 2 – RBA	Criteria 3 – CBA	Criteria 4 – CB	Criteria 5 – Coordination	Criteria 6 – Planning	Criteria 7 – P = M	Criteria 8 – Needs Assess	Criteria 9 – Follow up	Criteria 10 – Attitudes and Skills
Egg Model					x	x				
ALNAP				x	x	x				x
Risk- Based		x	x	x				x	x	
Cluster					x	x	x	x	x	x
R2P	x			x	x	x				x
Human Security	x		x				x	x		
Livelihoods	x	x	x	x				x	x	
VCA	x	x	x	x	x			x	x	
Benefits & Harms	x	x					x			
HAP	x	x	x	x						x
Coping			x							

Table 2.2: Protection Criteria and Protection Models Fulfilment

Studying the table above confirms the observation made following the presentation of the protection concept, which is that none of the protection models or approaches fulfil all ten protection criteria. This means that protection, as envisioned by the literature and captured by the ten protection criteria, is not met. However, studying the models and approaches, similar ways to provide protection can be identified. Based on these observations five generic ways to provide protection, called the five protection typologies, can be identified. The five generic protection typologies are: Categorisation, Responsibility, Inventory, Accountability and Coping. Each of the typologies will be explained below, while showing upon which models and approaches it was based and which protection criteria the protection typology fulfils.

Typology One: Categorisation. Models belonging to this category categorize activities into a certain scheme dictated by the model. Through this activity potential protection gaps become visible, assisting *protection providers* to decide which protection activities to engage in. Models belonging to this typology are the Egg Model, ALNAP’s Modes of Action, R2P. Categorisation will help fulfil protection criteria 5,6,7 (coordination, planning and P=M).

Typology Two: Responsibility. The main task of models belonging to this category is to assign responsibility for protection activities to *protection providers*. This typology therefore makes a division of labour to ensure protection. Models belonging to this typology are the Cluster Approach, R2P and the Vulnerability and Capacity Approach. This typology fulfils criteria 2,3,5,6,10 (RBA, CBA, Coordination, Planning, Protection Attitudes/Skills).

Typology Three: Inventory. This typology focuses on the capacities and assets which *protection receivers* have at their disposal and can access. It also makes an inventory of the vulnerabilities and risks protection deprived are exposed to. In this category, the capacities and assets that the protection deprived have but do not use are also included. Models belonging to this typology are the Human Security Approach, the Livelihoods Approach, the Vulnerability and Capacities Approach and the Risk-based Model to protection. The Inventory typology helps fulfil criteria 3,8,9 (CBA, Needs Assessment and Follow Up).

Typology Four: Accountability and Rights. Models in this category are concerned with ensuring that *protection providers* are accountable to the *protection receivers*, which means they feel comfortable and are knowledgeable on how to provide feedback to the

protection providers. Models belonging to this typology are HAP, Vulnerability and Capacities Approach and the Benefits and Harms Approach. This typology helps fulfil criteria 1,2,3 (UDHR, RBA, CBA) and is considered to be more for the benefit of *protection receivers*.

Typology Five: Coping Mechanisms. This typology focuses on the activities and mechanisms the *protection receivers* have developed and are engaged in to help them deal with the threats they experience. Therefore, this typology only records the activities and mechanisms the protection deprived actually use, not those they theoretically have access to. Models belonging to this typology are Coping Mechanisms, Human Security Approach, Livelihoods Approach and Vulnerabilities and Capacities Approach. This typology fulfils protection criteria 3 (CBA). Table 2.3 summarises the typologies and corresponding models.

Typology	Models
Categorization	Egg Model, ALNAP’s Modes of Action, R2P, Human Security, Livelihoods Analysis
Responsibility	Cluster Approach, R2P, VCA
Inventory	Human Security, VCA, Livelihoods Analysis, Risk-based Model
Accountability & Rights	VCA, Benefits & Harms, HAP
Coping	Coping Mechanisms, Human Security, Livelihoods Analysis, VCA

Table 2.3: Protection Typologies and Corresponding Models

Additionally, Table 2.4 presents the way the protection typologies fulfil the protection criteria’s. None of the protection typologies fulfils all ten protection criteria.

	Criteria 1 – UDHR	Criteria 2 – RBA	Criteria 3 – CBA	Criteria 4 - CB	Criteria 5 – Coordination	Criteria 6 – Planning	Criteria 7 – P = M	Criteria 8 – Needs Assess	Criteria 9 – Follow up	Criteria 10 - Attitudes and Skills
Categorization					x	x	x			
Responsibility		x	x		x	x				x
Inventory			x					x	x	
Accountability & Rights	x	x	x							
Coping			x							

Table 2.4: Protection Criteria and the Extent Protection Typologies Fulfil them

The conclusion which can be drawn from table four is two-fold. On the one hand, it can be concluded that the literature has a too broad understanding of protection, judging from the ten very diverse protection criteria. On the other hand, the protection models and approaches, captured in the five protection typologies, are not diverse enough to provide protection as identified in the protection literature. Though IDP protection is not reached, the ten protection criteria and five protection typologies are the best that are currently available for the protection of IDPs. Given that this protection is suboptimal, a new model or approach to protection is needed (as the current models and approaches are unable to provide protection). At the same time, the existing protection definitions, models and approaches (captured in the protection criteria and typologies) have many important qualities, which

should not be disregarded. Therefore, the protection criteria and typologies will be used to determine the protection context and culture in a country suffering from a protection crisis. This includes determining which protection providers or receivers are most active within a protection crises, how they understand protection and whether they are able to work together to achieve it. The focus on protection providers and receivers and their understanding of protection is going to be dealt with in the next section, following the presentation of this section in figure 2.1.

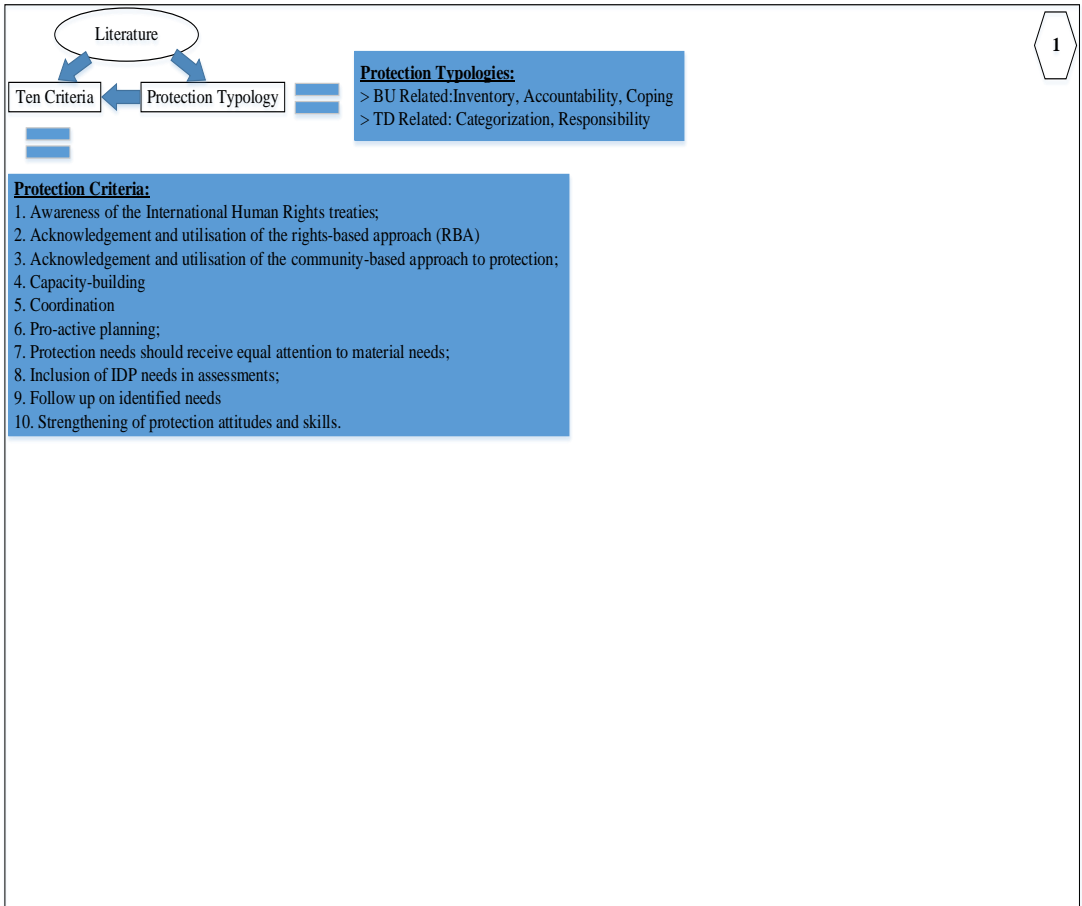


Figure 2.1: Component One – Protection Criteria and Protection Typologies

2.2 Dualisms, Protection Providers and Needs

In the previous section, existing protection literature was studied and the ten most important characteristics of protection, the protection criteria, were identified. Additionally, different approaches and protection models gave rise to different ways to provide protection, called the protection typologies. In this section, attention will be paid to the actors utilising the protection typologies. States are still considered primarily responsible for IDP protection, being involved in providing humanitarian assistance since the Roman and Ottoman empires (Harvey, 2009, p5). Dubois and Mooney believe States should continue to fulfil this role and even increase their engagement with protection. NGOs are more in favour of focusing on the protection deprived, the Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs), and encouraging them (and their communities) to utilise their coping mechanisms (Mooney, 2010, p69-70) (Dubois, 2010, p3-4). This division between protection providers and receivers is further explored in the first subsection focusing on the theoretical concept of Dualisms. This concept is introduced because the opposition between protection providers and receivers can be seen as two sides of a dualism. In subsection two, attention will be paid to the needs the different protection providers believe IDPs have, while the third subsection pulls the information together explaining its application. The aim of this section is to contribute to the improvement of IDP protection by improving the mutual acknowledgement of protection providers and their understandings of the needs IDPs have in order to be protected. Any opposition between protection providers and their understanding of IDP protection can be overcome by the concept of Dualisms, as an intrinsic characteristic of a Dualism is to transcend opposition.

2.2.1 Protection and Dualisms

What can be observed in the analysis of the protection typologies is that some are more commonly used by protection providers, while others are more related to the protection receivers. This division possibly holds the key why currently protection to IDPs is inadequate. In other academic orientations scholars, have noticed similar divisions and described them as 'Dualisms' (for example (Baert, 1998) and (Layder, 1994)). The work they have done on Dualisms and, most importantly, how this division can be overcome, will be used in this subsection to overcome to opposition between protection providers and receivers.

Generally, three kinds of Dualisms are recognised, these are: micro/macro, individual/society and agency/structure. The three Dualisms each have their own focus but also overlap. The focus of the first Dualism (micro/macro) is on the personal, social, day to day life and encounters between people (the micro side) versus the more general features of society such as organisations, institutions and culture (the macro side). The second Dualism (individual/society) focuses on the needs of individuals versus the needs of society and the interaction between the two groups. In the third Dualism, people are seen as agents acting within a social world in which they have the ability (Agency) to make changes. People can

make changes to the social context and relations (Structure) of the social world in which they themselves are embedded and influenced by (Layder, 1994, p1-4). Given the overlap between the three Dualisms, a more common division is based on the characteristics of each side of a Dualism. The resulting four groups are 1) micro/individual/agency, 2) macro/society/structure, 3) denunciation of the Dualisms and 4) embracement of the Dualisms. Different authors have identified which theories best represent the content of each group⁵¹. In the paragraphs below the effect of each group on the two sides of the dualisms, and therefore on the opposition between protection providers and receivers, is discussed.

Analysing the characteristics of the first group in light of the protection typologies shows that group one is mostly concerned with typologies relating to the protection receivers. This is in opposition to the theories belonging to the second group (macro/society/structure) which relate more to the typologies dealing with the protection providers. In the third group the Dualisms are denounced by trying to establish a link between the two sides. From a protection point of view this group aims for protection receivers and providers to work together. However, the protection providers are the driving force which can upset the balance between providers and receivers. Finally, the aim of the fourth group is to overcome, transcend, the Dualisms even though the two sides of the Dualisms are seen as equals.

In both the third and the fourth group, both sides of the Dualisms play a role. This means protection providers and receivers work together. In group three this cooperation is initiated by the protection providers, in group four, both protection providers and receivers are equally important. The equality between protection provider and receiver makes group four the most suitable for this research. Recalling the findings of the previous subsection none of the five typologies work in accordance to group four. This necessitates further development of an approach to protection. One aspect of this approach entails taking a closer look at protection providers and receivers, which is done in the next subsection.

2.2.2 Protection Receivers and Providers and their Needs

Analysing the characteristics of protection receivers and providers shows that they are similar to the first two groups of the Dualisms presented in the subsection above. Starting with the protection receivers, in this PhD it is the Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) who receive protection. These IDPs are, utilising the terminology of the Dualisms, individuals, who at a micro level use their agency to make a difference. The key words of group one (micro, individual, agency) apply to the IDPs. The fact that IDPs can make a difference means that they also contribute to their own protection. Therefore, IDPs are not only protection receivers

⁵¹ For more information on the theories representing each group please consult (Layder, 1994, p57/132), (Bredemeider, 1955), (Giddens, 1984, p181) (Cohen, 1989) and (Brigg, 2002, p422-426).

but also protection providers⁵². The way in which they provide protection is through a Bottom Up approach. As a result, instead of calling IDPs Dualism Group One (micro, individual, agency) they will be known as Bottom Up (BU) protection providers. BU protection providers primarily focus on saving lives, which is why this group relates to the HA approach.

IDPs, or BU protection providers, are only one group of actors providing protection. In line with Group Two of the Dualism discussion, there is also a group providing protection in a macro, society, structure way. The collective name for this group is the Top Down (TD) protection providers. Based on the characteristics of the second group of Dualisms, the TD approach is equated to the developmental approach and peace studies. Contrary to the BU protection providers this group does not consist of one actor but multiple actors which can be divided into three categories. The three categories of TD protection providers are the State, Non-State Actors and other Aid Actors.

According to the Preamble and General Provisions of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR, 1948), the State is the main actor responsible for providing protection to all individuals within its territory (which therefore includes IDPs). As International Law also maintains that both *de jure* and *de facto* authorities are legally responsible for the protection of people under their jurisdiction, the second category of TD protection providers are Non-State Actors. In case of a civil war it is possible that a State Authority (and its corresponding army) does not have jurisdiction over part of its territory. The responsibility for the protection of the people in that geographic location then automatically moves to Non-State Actors. Finally, Other Aid Actors are the third category within Top Down protection providers. Actors within this category include the UN and other international organisations, ICRC, (INGOs, CBOs and religious groups. According to Paul Harvey, focusing on the behaviour of Top Down protection providers, actors within this group should constantly keep an eye on each other's intentions (to prevent predatory or abusive behaviour) and assess capacities and willingness (Harvey, 2009, p13/15).

Each of these two groups of protection providers (BU and TD actors) approach protection in a different way. Referring back to the typology discussion, BU protection providers (then called protection receivers) use Inventory, Accountability and Coping (typologies 3-5), while TD protection providers use Responsibility and Categorisation (typologies 1-2). As has been shown in the previous section, these typologies are not sufficient to provide protection. Therefore, this subsection adds an additional focus to the model that is being developed. BU and TD actors are required to pay more attention to 'Needs'. Building upon protection criteria eight (inclusion of IDP needs in needs assessments) both groups of protection providers should take 'needs' as a starting point. In case of the BU protection providers this is relatively easy, as this means becoming aware of the needs they feel.

⁵² In order to determine who is an IDP, NRC IDMC and UNOCHA's Guidance on Profiling IDPs is useful (NRC IDMC and UNOCHA, 2008).

Nevertheless, this still entails weighing long term against short term needs and deciding upon a prioritisation of needs. As BU actors go through an internal process to determine their needs, the needs BU protection providers collect are called ‘felt’ needs. TD actors on the other hand, are external actors, observing displacement from the outside. Therefore, they are not able to identify needs through an internal process, but only through observation, research and analysis. The result of these activities gives TD actors an idea of the needs IDPs might have. This is why the needs collected by TD actors are called ‘perceived’ needs.

As discussed in the previous subsection, group four Overcoming the Dualisms, relies on the cooperation and equality between group one and two and is seen as the best way to provide protection. Translating this observation from the Dualism debate to the protection providers, this means that BU and TD actors should work together. As the cooperation, should be based on equality, this can be described as having a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). The PAP does not only influence the way BU and TD actors work together but also how ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs interact. The result of that interaction is called ‘derived’ needs, as it is the outcome of the extent to which ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs are similar.

The interaction between BU and TD (in PAP) can be visualised as a continuum. When BU and TD do not interact, their cooperation is called soft, and there is, according to Dualism Group Four, no way to overcome the Dualism, hence no protection. At the other end of the continuum, BU and TD actors interact perfectly, called hard cooperation, which leads to full protection. This continuum resembles the participation spectrum identified by the Brookings Institution Project on Internal Displacement. According to them the spectrum runs from passive participation, through information transfer, consultation, collaboration, decision making to local initiative and control (Brookings Institution on Internal Displacement, 2008, p30-35).⁵³ The ‘derived’ needs, which correspond to the Partnership Approach to Protection, are therefore optimal when ‘felt’ needs mirror ‘perceived’ needs. With optimal ‘derived’ needs, BU and TD actors agree on how IDPs should be protected and can work towards this goal, leading to full protection. How to reach optimal ‘derived’ needs and the interaction between BU and TD actors in PAP is elaborated upon in the next subsection.

2.2.3 Application Dualisms, Providers and Needs

Briefly summarising the information presented in the two subsections above shows how group one of the Dualisms (micro, individual, agency) is termed the Bottom Up protection providers. This group utilises ‘felt’ needs, identified through protection typologies three to five, to contribute to their own protection. Visualising this group in figure 2.2, belonging to protection component two, it is shown in the bottom right corner. BU protection providers are located there to represent their bottom up approach to protection. For the same, but opposing reason,

⁵³ ALNAP has also contributed to this debate through the development of a Handbook for Practitioners called *Participation by Crisis-Affected Populations in Humanitarian Action* (Byrne, 2003).

TD protection providers are visually located at the top left of figure 2.2. Group two of the Dualisms (macro, society, structure) called the Top Down protection providers consists of the State, Non-State Actors and Other Aid Actors. This group contributes to IDP protection through ‘perceived’ needs, obtained through protection typologies one and two. In the remainder of this chapter the Dualistic description of both groups (shown in blue boxes in figure two) is omitted as it is included in the characteristics belonging to their names (BU/TD).

When BU and TD actors work together this is called the Partnership Approach to Protection. The more BU’s ‘felt’ needs mirror TD’s ‘perceived’ needs, the more optimal PAP’s ‘derived’ needs. The resulting positive contribution to protection is visualised by the vertical protection continuum, along which PAP and its ‘derived’ needs operates. This protection continuum visually representing the extent to which IDPs are protected. The continuum also shows the Dualistic divide, currently observed in the literature, between BU and TD actors and their approaches to protection. Optimal BU/TD interaction leads to hard protection cooperation and full protection (top of the PAP/protection continuum/Dualisms line), while the opposite results in soft cooperation and the absence of protection (bottom of the PA/protection continuum/Dualisms line).

Focusing on protection providers and needs, captured within the Dualism discussion, gives an overview of who is doing what for IDP protection. BU and TD actors’ contributions, captured in ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs, are recorded. The PA and corresponding ‘derived’ needs, through the vertical protection continuum line, help BU and TD protection providers to reach full protection. The reason why this protection continuum is a tool for BU/TD protection providers to reach full protection is because it visually represents the extent to which ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs are compatible. Or, in terms of the Dualism discussion, the protection continuum shows the extent to which existing dualisms are transcended. As this discussion is rather abstract, not focusing on what these needs are, clarification of these needs is necessary. This is why the next subsection adds Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs to this new approach and model for IDP protection. However, first figure 2.2, representing the three topics discussed in this section (dualisms, protection providers and needs) is presented below.

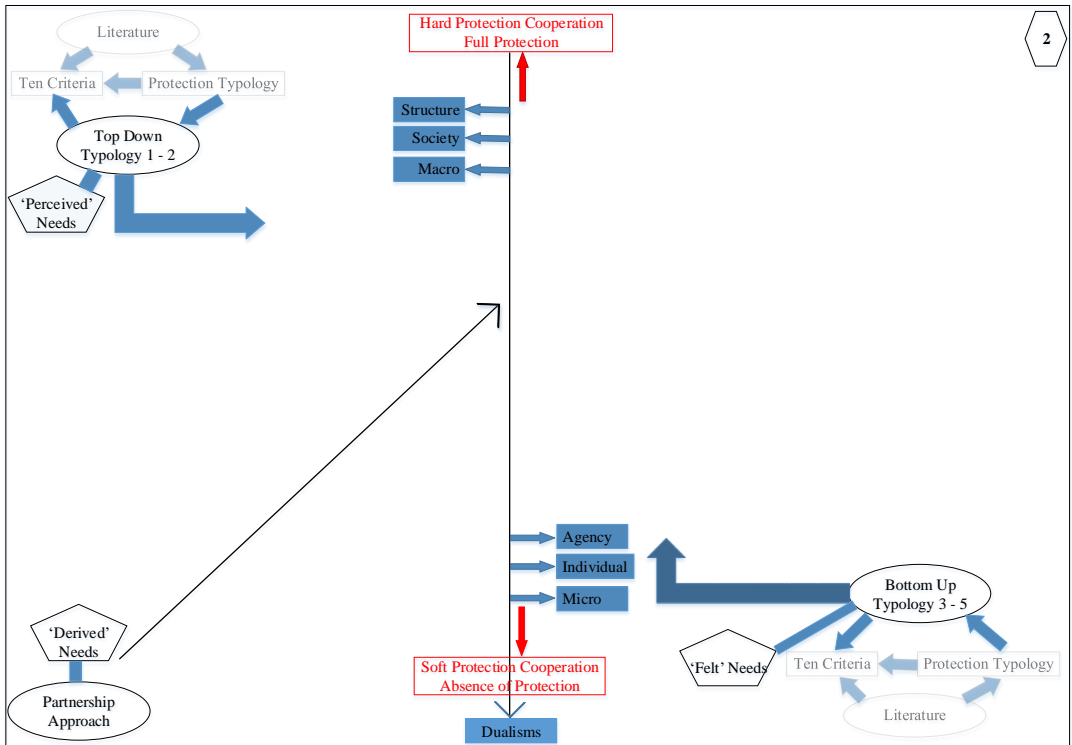


Figure 2.2: Protection Component Two – Dualisms, Protection Providers and Needs

2.3 Protection and Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory

In the previous section 'needs' have been introduced as a key element in the protection of Internally Displaced Persons. In this section, the concept of 'needs' is made more tangible by introducing Abraham Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory. This theory belongs to the Humanistic movement which aims to explain human motivation and has influenced so-called 'helping professions' (Harbaugh, 1972, p1/7) (Tribe, 1982, p41) (Goble, 1977, p27). The reason for choosing Maslow's theory is because it is a positive, dynamic theory which studies healthy people (Maslow, 1942, pxxxiii) (Huizinga, 1970, p25). Maslow's aim was to explain human motivation by focusing on the fulfilment of needs. Maslow believed that this fulfilment would happen in a hierarchical way. He developed five categories of needs and depicted them in a pyramid of increasing importance. The five needs are: physiological, safety, love, esteem and the need for self-actualisation (Maslow, 1943-II, p371). In the first subsection Maslow's theory will be introduced, while the second subsection presents the criticisms to Maslow's theory. In the third subsection, the applicability of Maslow's theory for this research will be explained, and the content of this section will be visually represented.

2.3.1 Explanation Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory

Maslow presented five needs in a hierarchical way because he was of the opinion that a lower need has to be considerably fulfilled (though not necessarily completely fulfilled) before moving on to a higher need. Once a need is considerably fulfilled it no longer has a strong effect on people. The more basic the need is, the more conscious a person experiences the desire to fulfil this need (Maslow, 1943-II, p393). According to Maslow, it is an innate human instinct to constantly move to higher goals, which he has captured in his pyramid. In extreme situations people are dominated by only one need (Maslow, 1943-II, p376). Maslow said the pyramid represents universal values (Maslow, 1943-II, p389-390) (Goble, 1977, p105). He does acknowledge the importance of culture but believes this is only expressed in the way the needs are fulfilled, not in the needs themselves (Maslow, 1970, p6)⁵⁴. According to Maslow his pyramid shows the most common way to fulfil human needs (Maslow, 1943-II, p386).

Of the different kind of needs identified by Maslow, the most important and dominant need are the physiological needs. These needs are the drivers of human motivation. They contain the basic human need for air, water, food, sex and excretion fulfilling a person's bodily needs. These needs have the greatest effect on people's physical wellbeing, pain and discomfort. When these needs are not fulfilled a human will give them all their attention (Maslow, 1943, p88) (Maslow, 1973, p156). Other authors agree with Maslow's description

⁵⁴ Harbaugh (1972, p142-143) agrees with Maslow.

of physiological needs.⁵⁵ Once physiological needs have been considerably fulfilled a person moves to layer two in Maslow's pyramid.

Layer two of Maslow's pyramid focuses on a person's safety needs. In the Western world, these needs are largely met, and are often only challenged in an emergency. Therefore, these needs differ between the West and other parts of the world. In the West safety needs refer to jobs with tenure, savings and insurance. In the rest of the world these needs also include physical safety, personal safety from crime, health, wellbeing and safety against accidents (Maslow, 1943-II, p379). According to Maslow people prefer the familiar over the unfamiliar and the known above the unknown. This is also why people rely on religion, world philosophies and science, as, according to Maslow, these are all expressions of safety-seeking behaviour. In this layer of the pyramid, people, according to Maslow, are looking for a predictable, orderly world in which injustice and inconsistencies are under control.⁵⁶

The third need in Maslow's hierarchy are love needs. Love needs include the need to give and receive love, the need for affection and belongingness, interpersonal and affectionate relationships, relatedness and social tendencies (Maslow, 1943-II, p380-381) (Maslow, 1996, p36). This need is strongly influenced by society and includes having a supportive and communicative family. People also feel the need to be accepted by smaller and larger social groups. Love needs are also related to psychological needs and rely on emotionally-based relationships such as friendship and intimacy (Maslow, 1943, p381). In his later book (Motivation and Personality) Maslow elaborates upon the concept of belongingness. He once again emphasises the importance of family, pointing out the destructive effect of being torn away from them. Having a home and being accepted in the neighbourhood also helps fulfil a person's love needs. Maslow therefore emphasises the importance of neighbourhood, territory, clan and being around similar people (Maslow, 1970, p20).⁵⁷

The fulfilment of love needs enables a person to move to the fourth layer in Maslow's pyramid which constitutes the esteem needs. Esteem includes both self-esteem or self-respect and receiving esteem from others (Maslow, 1943-II, p381). In addition to this, people also need strength and confidence to deal with the challenges life throws at them. As part of esteem needs Maslow also recognises the importance of independence and freedom. The things people achieve, their reputation and prestige, as well as the recognition and appreciation they get from others are important to fulfil people's esteem needs. When esteem needs are met, this makes people feel confident, useful and necessary in the world. Esteem gives people a sense

⁵⁵ (Harbaugh, 1972, p19), (Wolf, 1958), (Kooistra, 1988, p322-323) (Schultz, 1979, p73) (Tribe, 1982, p48-49) and (Huizinga, 1970, p21).

⁵⁶ Authors also addressing safety needs are Reid-Cunningham (2008, p17), Huizinga (1970, p21), Knutson (1952) Harbaugh (1972, p21) Kooistra (1988, p324-325) Tribe (1982, p50-53) and Schultz (1979, p73).

⁵⁷ Authors agreeing with Maslow's interpretation of love needs are Reid-Cunningham (2008, p18), Huizinga (1970, p22) Harbaugh (1972, p32), Kooistra (1988, p326-327) Tribe (1982, p53-55) and Schultz (1979, p74).

of worth and strength and shows them what they are capable of (Maslow, 1943-II, p382)⁵⁸. The fulfilment of the esteem needs helps people reach self-actualisation.

The highest layer in Maslow's pyramid is the need for self-actualisation. In Maslow's own words this means that 'what a man *can* be he *must* be' (Maslow, 1943-II, p382) (Maslow, 1959, p123)⁵⁹. Within this category, a person reaches their full potential. What this potential consists of differs for each person. Maslow himself used words like 'serenity, kindness, courage, knowledge, honesty, love, unselfishness and goodness' to describe the state of self-actualisation (Maslow, 1959, p126). In addition to fulfilling the four lower needs, some additional conditions have to be met for the need to self-actualisation to be reached. These conditions are: 'the freedom to speak, to do what one wishes as long as no harm is done to others, the freedom to express one's self and to investigate and seek for information, the freedom to defend one's self, as well as the presence of general preconditions such as justice, fairness, honesty and orderliness' (Maslow, 1943-II, p383).

According to Maslow, the need for self-actualisation is a need that can never be fulfilled, it is continuously developing (Maslow, 1943-II, p385). This is why the need for self-actualisation is considered a Growth Need, which is opposed to the other four needs which are Being or Deficiency Needs. These Being needs are called Deficiency needs because non-fulfilment threatens the individual (both their continued existence as well as them reaching their full potential) (Maslow, 1970, p75) (Schultz, 1979, p76). Rowan connects Maslow's Deficiency Needs to Coping (Rowan, 1999, p126). This means that though Maslow has presented a five-layer hierarchy of needs, it can be summarised in a two-layer model when the division between Deficiency/Being and Growth Needs is used. This division is more in line with Maslow's critics, who will be presented in the next subsection.

2.3.2 Criticisms Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory

Though Maslow's theory has been widely used, it has also been widely criticised (even by Maslow). Even Maslow acknowledged that his theory was not perfect and invited everybody to contribute to its improvement. Maslow indicated the difference between what people want and what people do (Maslow, 1943-II, p387). This means, according to Maslow, that it is not always possible to only look at behaviour. People can have experienced situations which disrupt their normal need fulfilment pattern, or people might not know what motivates them or act out of an unconscious desire (Maslow, 1943-II, p389). In addition to this Maslow points out that people's behaviour is driven by the context they are in (Maslow, 1943-II, p391). People can only meet their own needs to a certain extent; the environment around them also

⁵⁸ One again Reid-Cunningham (2008, p19), Huizinga (1970, p23) Harbaugh (1972, p33) Kooistra (1988, p327-328) Tribe (1982, p55-59) and Schultz (1979, p74-75) agree with Maslow's interpretation of this category of needs

⁵⁹ (Kooistra, 1988, p328) (Tribe, 1982, p56-58) (Schultz, 1979, p75) also pay specific attention to the need for self-actualisation.

has (both a positive and negative) influence on their needs fulfilment (Maslow, 1943-II, p394). These additions of Maslow are of great relevance to this research as it not only allows for in-depth interviews but also paves the way to use observation as a research method.

Analysing other theorists' criticisms, it is interesting to note that the same theorists who agreed with many of Maslow's statements also criticised his theory. Critique centres around the number of layers in the pyramid as well as their order and interaction⁶⁰. To a certain extent, Maslow has countered these criticisms by having both a five-layer (based on the five needs he identified) as well as a two-layer model (according to the Being versus Growth need division). Both of these representations of the pyramid are useful to this research.

Maslow has also been critiqued for being methodologically weak⁶¹. For example, Maslow is criticised for his weak operationalisation of some of his main concepts, such as 'needs'. This shortcoming is acknowledged and has been dealt with in the previous section in the discussion on 'felt', 'perceived' and 'derived' needs. Critique also concentrates on Maslow's perceived lack of attention to culture, even though Maslow touches upon the concept of culture by stating that people's goals are similar but the way they are reached is culturally driven (Maslow, 1943, p86-87).⁶² Though the critique on culture raises a valid point, it does not constrain the use of Maslow for this research as Maslow's pyramid is used to assist BU and TD actors to optimise the interaction between their 'felt' and 'perceived' needs in the 'derived' needs. For similar reason the critique on hierarchical needs gratification in a complex reality and whether or not this can be ignored also do not inhibit the use of Maslow for this research.⁶³ Frankl (2000), however, raises an interesting point that higher needs can be fulfilled before lower needs are. Maslow himself, in a Germinal Paper, also mentions that the hierarchy is not rigid (Maslow, 1973, p165). Maslow's addition to his initial predominance of hierarchical needs fulfilment makes the use of his pyramid more flexible and therefore even more suitable for this research. It should also be kept in mind that critique can also be placed on the critics.⁶⁴ How Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid, keeping in mind the criticisms highlighted in this subsection, will be used for IDP protection is explained in the next subsection.

⁶⁰ For more information on criticisms on the ideal number of layers in the pyramid please consult (Lawler and Suttle, 1972, p284) (Hall and Nougaim, 1968, p12) (Harbaugh, 1972, p152), (Porter, 1961, p1), (Huizinga, 1970, p28-29), (Goodman, 1968, p55), (Reid-Cunningham, 2008, p65), (Shafer, 1953) (Waters, 1973, p187), (Alderfer, 1969, p142) and (Wahba and Bridwell, 1976, p236).

⁶¹ Authors who are of the opinion that Maslow is methodologically weak are (Reid-Cunningham, 2008, p67), (Marsh, 1978, p113) and (Harbaugh, 1972, p9).

⁶² Authors having problems with Maslow's approach to culture are (Trigg, 2004, p393) (Alder, 1977, p444), (Huitt, 2011) and (Reid-Cunningham, 2008, p63).

⁶³ (Reid-Cunningham, 2008, p56-57), (Hall and Nougaim, 1968), (Lawler and Suttle, 1972), (Trexler and Schuh, 1964), (Wahba and Bridwell, 1987) and (Wofford, 1971).

⁶⁴ Critique on criticisms on Maslow's theory have been made by (Lawler, 1972, p267-268) and (Wahba and Bridwell, 1976, p215).

2.3.3 Application Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory for Protection

Being aware of the criticisms placed on Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory, but confident that they do not affect, or are countered by, this research, Maslow's theory constitutes a crucial addition to the new model and approach to protection that is being developed. Nevertheless, two adaptations are made to Maslow's theory to make it even more suitable for this research. First the Being and Growth Needs division is placed between love and esteem needs, instead of between esteem needs and the need for self-actualisation as Maslow does⁶⁵. The reason for this is that, in IDP settings, esteem needs are highly important, but do not make the difference between life and death, which the non-fulfilment of the other Deficiency needs does. Secondly, while Maslow argues that the need for self-actualisation is never met, in this research the need for self-actualisation can be met as it equals full protection (which means no longer being an IDP).

The main reason to use Maslow's theory however, is because of its focus on the individual, its dynamic nature and, most importantly, the wide use of generating ideas (Wahba and Bridwell, 1976, p235). Therefore, in this research, Maslow's hierarchy of needs pyramid should be seen as a guide for protection providers. Not only will the pyramid visualize which needs BU and TD protection providers find most urgent, it also (due to its hierarchical logic) shows which layer of needs will have to be fulfilled next. If protection providers are not able to collect any information on needs, then the pyramid will show the roadmap how to contribute to IDP protection. Protection providers then simply start at the bottom of the pyramid, fulfilling each layer until IDPs, in layer five, are no longer IDPs but are self-actualized. While Maslow's aim was 'to offer people an understanding of human nature in relation to itself, to other people, to society in general and to the world in general, a frame of reference' (1970, p112), this research will do all this but then specifically for IDPs (visualised in figure 2.3).

⁶⁵ The new suggested division is also made by Tribe (1982, p45).

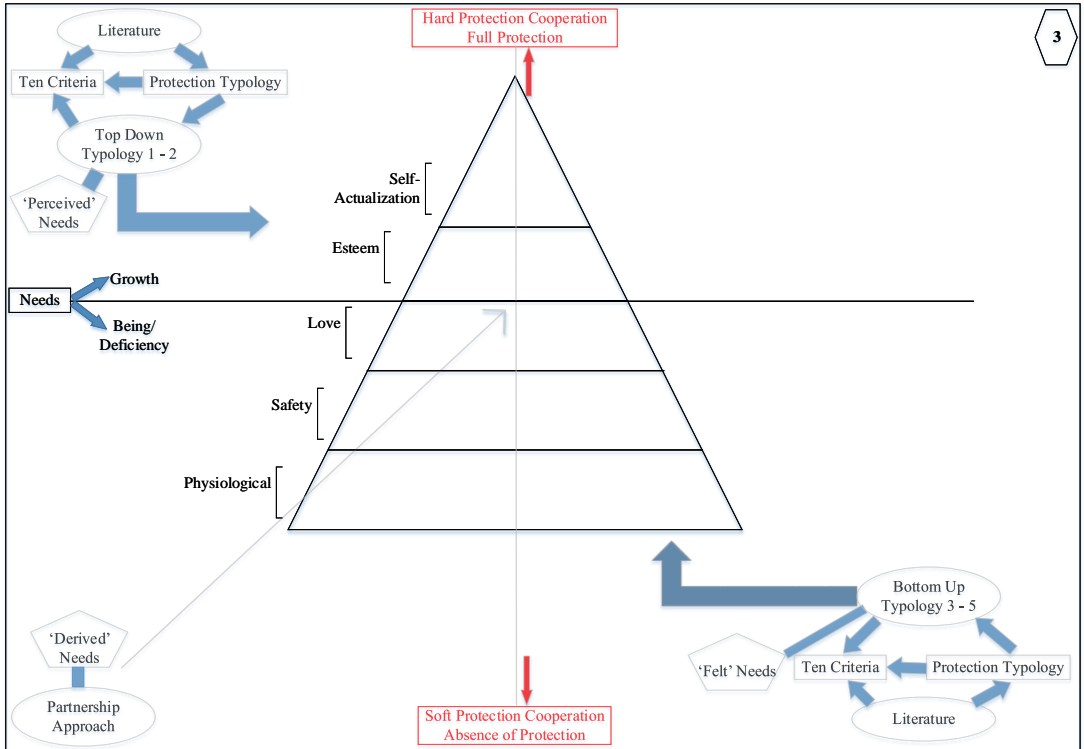


Figure 2.3: Protection Component Three – Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory

2.4 Revised Definition of Protection

The need to introduce a new definition of protection is based on the observations made in section two. In that section, it became apparent that the existing protection definitions, captured in the ten protection criteria were not able to provide IDP protection. One of the problems highlighted was the breadth of the protection criteria. This is why, in this section, the definition of protection is brought back to three elements. These three elements are Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. In the first subsection, the choice for the three elements will be explained and the revised protection definition will be introduced, while the second subsection shows the application of the revised definition for the provision of IDP protection.

2.4.1 Elements of the Revised Definition of Protection

In this subsection, the three elements of the revised protection definition (Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity), as well as their interaction, is explained. The choice for the Rights and Livelihoods elements is their strong representation in the existing protection models and approaches discussed in section two⁶⁶. Looking at the characterisation of these two elements however, a dominance for activities engaged in by TD actors can be noted. As another conclusion of section two centred around the necessity for BU and TD actors to work together in order to provide protection (within the Partnership Approach to Protection), a third element is added to the revised protection definition. This is the element of Dignity. Dignity is strongly related to BU actors and acts as a counterbalance to Rights and Livelihoods.

BU actors are underrepresented in existing definitions of protection. To correct this, and to ensure more equality in the Partnership Approach to Protection, the concept of Dignity is added as an element of protection. Dignity includes the freedom to develop oneself intellectually and be politically active or culturally sensitive. Additionally, enjoying Dignity enables a person to be what they should be and ensures that they are treated well in the process⁶⁷. These characteristics of Dignity are often lost in a displacement crisis and therefore should receive special attention in a definition contributing to the protection of internally displaced persons. Loss of Dignity in a displacement crisis occurs when people have to leave their houses at short notice, often unable to bring things which add to their Dignity. Additionally, people are often targeted for what they own (land or cattle) or who they are (defined along ethnic, tribal or linguistic lines), influencing their perceived Dignity (UNHCR, State of the World refugees, 2006, p156). Dignity can be returned to IDPs when they are consulted and included in all protection related activities, building upon IDPs' strength,

⁶⁶ O'Callaghan, Jaspars, Pavanello and Sites (in several HPG Working Papers on Protection and Livelihoods) also mention human rights and livelihoods as important pillars for protection

⁶⁷ For more information on dignity please consult: (Howard and Donnelly, 1986), (Bradley, 2007), (Schachter, 1983), (Lee, 2008).

resilience, capacity and resources. Dignity has been the missing element in protection and is included in the revised definition.

This does not mean that the other two elements of the revised protection definition have decreased in importance, on the contrary. Human rights, though not always used as such by BU actors, are used by TD actors and can be seen as a vehicle to fulfil needs. The necessity to focus on Rights is strengthened by the observation that many IDP's Rights are breached in a displacement situation (such as the Right to Life, Education, Health and an Adequate Standard of Living). The needs of IDPs are easier to understand for TD protection providers when voiced in terms of human rights. Framing needs in human rights discourse also grounds needs in widely accepted and protected treaties and conventions. However, according to Galtung, human rights should be accompanied by strong, centrally organised states with sufficient resources (Galtung, 1994, p11-12). The States with IDP crises often lack this. Still, according to an employee of OHCHR, protection equals the fulfilment of all Rights⁶⁸.

In the discussion on human rights however, the value of a human right is often measured by its implementation, with IDP protection decreasing if human rights are not implemented. This means that the tangible fulfilment of human rights should be included in the revised protection definition, which is why Livelihoods has been added. Livelihoods refers to a person's (emotional and physical) development, family life and their intellectual, political and cultural wellbeing. Livelihoods was recognised as important for IDP protection by some of the models and approaches discussed in component two. The fact that Livelihoods are the tangible representation of human rights can be seen in, amongst others, the presence of a schools or health facilities and the extent that IDPs have access to food (or not)⁶⁹.

Livelihoods is the tangible fulfilment of human rights, in the same way as Dignity is the intangible fulfilment of human rights. This observation shows that the three elements are related to each other in a way which presumes equality between the elements. At the same time, however, rights are the foundation of both other elements. In the end, it has to be concluded that though Rights are the foundation of Livelihoods and Dignity, still, all three elements are considered to contribute equally to IDP protection. Moulded into a definition it leads to the following revised protection definition: 'people are protected when their Human Rights are acknowledged and respected as well as tangibly and intangibly implemented through Livelihoods and Dignity'. It can be argued that the revised protection definition shows considerable overlap with Sen's Capability Approach. To a certain extent this holds true. Sen's writing on 'functionings' and 'capability' resemble the Livelihoods and Dignity elements of

⁶⁸ For more information on Rights consult: (Pavlish and Ho, 2009), (HRI, 2008), (HRC, 2010) and (HRI, 2006)

⁶⁹ For more information on Livelihoods please consult: (Lowe and Schilderman, 2001), (Scoones, 1998), (Farrington et al, 1999), (Manaktala and Dixit, 2005), (Ashley and Carney, 1999), (Water Management Consultants, 2004), (Murray, 2001), (Chambers and Conway, 1991) and (Cannon, Twigg and Rowell, 2004)

the revised protection definition⁷⁰. Sen however does not single out the importance of Rights which is deemed the foundation of protection in this research. Additionally, the concept of Dignity is not emphasised enough to allow BU actors to counterbalance TD actor's contribution to IDP protection. For these reasons, notwithstanding the valuable contribution of Sen's work, it has not been further considered for this research. Livelihoods and Dignity, as the tangible and intangible representations of human rights, can be positioning within Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid. This will be explained in the next subsection on the applicability of the revised protection definition.

2.4.2 Application of Revised Definition of Protection

With Livelihoods and Dignity being the tangible and intangible representations of human rights they function as a translation device between BU and TD actors utilising Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid, in which they are positioned. BU actors, not being very familiar with HR language, can express their needs in terms of tangible and intangible concepts (such as food, family wellbeing or access to education). Given that Livelihoods and Dignity are representations of human rights, BU's needs utilising Maslow's pyramid, can be translated to human rights. Maslow's hierarchy of needs acts as a translator between human rights and needs. All three elements of the revised protection definition can be positioned within Maslow's pyramid. This shows that Livelihoods predominantly apply to the lower levels of Maslow's pyramid, while Dignity relates to the higher levels of the pyramid. The Dignity element also belongs to the top of the pyramid because Dignity allows a person to reach their full potential, being treated well while concerning themselves with respect, beauty and education. These Dignity aspects corresponds to Maslow's esteem needs and the need for self-actualisation positioning Dignity in fourth and fifth layer of the pyramid. The Rights and Livelihoods elements are shown in the bottom of the pyramid, even though Rights relate to the whole pyramid (as will be further explained in section five). The Rights element is located in the bottom halve of the protection pyramid because the explicit recognition of Right increases its protection potential. As such meeting the Being/Deficiency needs of Maslow, which make the difference between life and death, and therefore positioning Rights in the bottom of the pyramid allows for a larger contribution to IDP protection. Rights and Livelihoods should be featured together because Rights without entitlement diminishes their protective value. Rights and Livelihoods fulfilment ensures, amongst other things, that a person does not die, is able to protect himself and take care of his family. These more basic Rights, are located more in the base of Maslow's pyramid in layers one, two and three (physiological, safety and love needs). In the same way as Maslow maintains that Growth

⁷⁰ Additionally, Sen's Capability Approach pays attention to the concept of Agency, introduced in the sixth section of this chapter. For more information on Sen's theory please consult: (Sen, 1979), (Sen, 1985), (Sen, 1985-I), (Sen, 2002), (Sen, 2009), (Dang, 2016), (Hatakka, 2016) and (IEP, 2016).

Needs can only be accomplished when Being/Deficiency Needs are fulfilled, Dignity is a result of the interaction between Rights and Livelihoods. The ideal protection formula therefore is Rights + Livelihoods → Dignity. At the same time, however, Dignity also has equal standing vis-à-vis the other two elements. Dignity is therefore both a result of the interaction between Rights and Livelihoods as well as an equal part of the revised protection definition. Given that within the revised definition each element is equally important, each element has its own place (of equal size) within Maslow's pyramid, as can be observed in figure 2.4. The next section elaborates upon the Rights element of the revised protection definition.

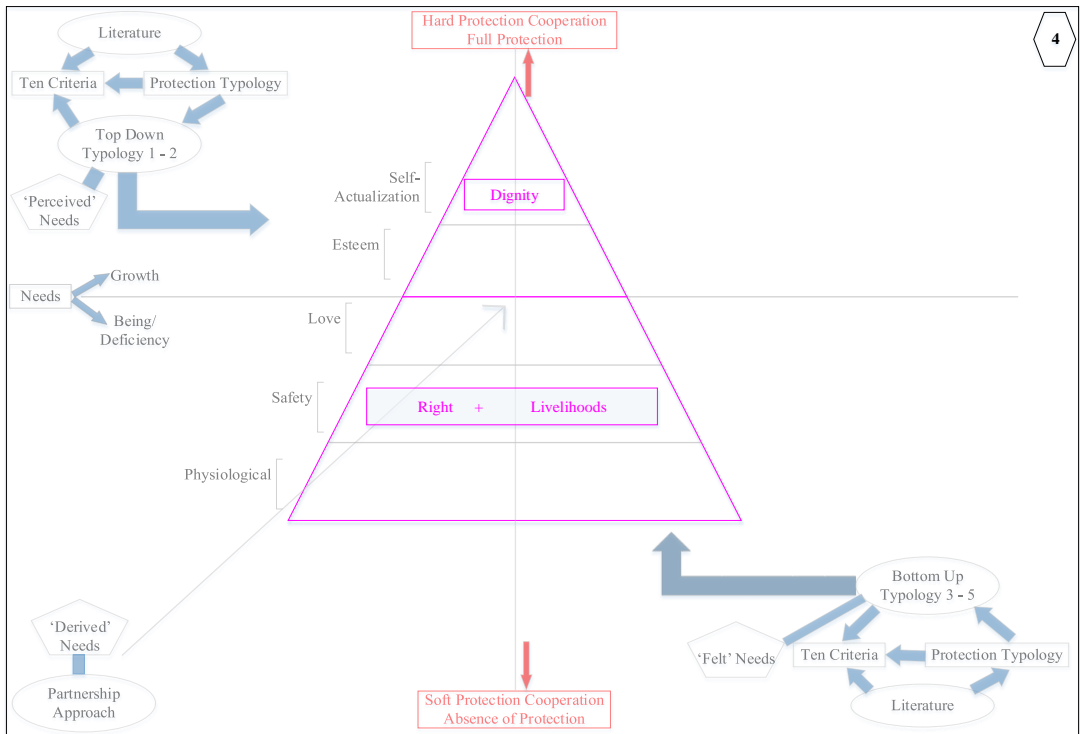


Figure 2.4: Protection Component Four – Revised Protection Definition

2.5 Protection and International Human Rights Instruments

In this section the role of international human rights within IDP protection is further elaborated upon. This is done because in the previous section it has been explained how human rights are a key element of the revised protection definition, providing the foundation of the other two elements. Additionally, utilising Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid, the tangible and intangible manifestations of livelihoods and dignity can be translated to human rights, a familiar language for TD actors. This translation into a language TD actors understand is necessary, according to Galtung, because 'human needs are subtle, flexible and vary across time, space and the individual. Human rights on the other hand are well institutionalised, though inflexible, invariable and non-dialectical' (Galtung, 1994, p96).

In the previous section, it was also pointed out that human rights apply to all of Maslow's pyramid. In this section the translation between tangible and intangible representations (Livelihood and Dignity) and human rights utilising Maslow, is simplified. This is done by positioning the different human rights, captured within the two International Human Rights Covenants, alongside Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid. Maslow's pyramid together with the human rights alongside it, lead to the creation of a Protection Pyramid. In the first subsection, the positioning of the two International Human Rights Covenants within Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid is explained, while in the second subsection the protection pyramid is applied to IDP protection.

2.5.1 Creation of the Protection Pyramid

This subsection presents the creation of a Protection Pyramid, improving communication between Bottom Up and Top Down protection providers, thereby contributing to increased IDP protection. This is done by indicating how the two IHRL Covenants are positioned alongside Maslow's pyramid. Making this connection solves the problem of IDPs possibly not being aware of their universal human rights. The importance of connecting needs and human rights has also been indicated by Galtung, who maintains that 'human needs are seen as located inside the individual human being, human rights are seen as located between them' (Galtung, 1994, p56). Combining needs and human rights within a Protection Pyramid therefore bring BU and TD closer together ensuring a better functioning PAP.

Universal human rights consist of the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR) and the International Covenant for Economic Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR) (OHCHR, 1966). To facilitate the creation of the protection pyramid, Maslow's two-layer pyramid (consisting of Being and Growth needs) is used instead of the representation of Maslow's pyramid with five layers. Utilising a two-layer protection pyramid makes it possible to use the two Covenants in their totality, rather than indicating for each right within the two Covenants where they belong in Maslow's pyramid, though some exceptions are necessary. Firstly some general observations about the Covenants are made.

Officially the two Covenants are equally important. However, in practice the ICCPR is often prioritised over the ICESCR. States find it easier to fulfil their obligations towards their citizens in relation to ICCPR than ICESCR. The implementation of ICESCR is not only more difficult and expensive, it is also a more time-consuming exercise as the rights within ICESCR are progress rights, which means that they are fulfilled progressively. The ICESCR is also less developed than the ICCPR, which makes it more difficult to implement. Other aid actors can and do provide assistance in relation to both Covenants. NGOs often concentrate more on the Rights within ICESCR as they are less politically charged, although the fulfilment of these rights may still infringe upon state sovereignty (Commins, 2007, p4).

Regardless of which Covenant is prioritised, combining the Covenants with Maslow ensures a predetermined human rights implementation strategy. Protection providers can follow Maslow's hierarchical logic. This way the protection receivers are less vulnerable to the whims of protection providers, which sometimes provide what suits them best, and not necessarily what is in line with the needs of the protection deprived. It prevents a 'pick and choose' attitude (Galtung, 1994, p99). Linking the two Covenants to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid therefore shows an implementation strategy which, thanks to the identified BU 'felt' needs, starts with what BU actors desire.

Moving on to the positioning of the two Covenants within Maslow's pyramid, looking at the needs that are being met in the bottom half of the pyramid, the Being/Deficiency Needs are best fulfilled through the ICESCR. The ICESCR contains the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living, Rights to Savings, Work, the Right to Protection of the Family and the Right to Health. These rights fulfil Maslow's physiological, safety and love needs. However, ICESCR's Right to Education and Culture are better located in the top half of the pyramid, in the Growth Needs as they help fulfil esteem needs and the need for self-actualisation. In addition to these exceptions, the rights represented in the ICCPR should be connected to Maslow's pyramid too. As the ICCPR contains the Right to Thought, Conscience, Religion and Belief, Opinion, Expression and Information, the Right to Assembly, Association and Political Rights this Covenant is best located within Maslow's Growth Needs. Since the ICCPR is geared more towards helping people become who they should be, this resembles Maslow's Growth Needs. Similarly, to the ICESCR, the ICCPR also contains some Rights which are not logically located in the top of the protection pyramid. This includes the Right to Life, Marriage and Family, Rights of the Child and Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence. All of these rights are better located in the bottom half of the pyramid.

As can be seen from the positioning of the Covenants within Maslow's Pyramid, the positioning is a general division, necessitating some adaptations. According to Galtung this is not surprising as there are four possible relations between needs and rights. These are 1) needs have rights counterparts, 2) needs without rights counterparts, 3) rights which do not have any needs counterparts and 4) there are issues which are neither expressed as needs or as rights (Galtung, 1994, p70). Even though Galtung is of the opinion that there does not have to be a

‘complete correspondence between rights and needs’ (1994, p82), in general, the intentions of each Covenant correspond to Maslow’s Being and Grown needs.

To summarise, in general, the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights, is most suited to Maslow’s Being/Deficiency Needs, while the Covenant for Civil and Political Rights represents Maslow’s Growth Needs. By locating the two Covenants alongside Maslow’s Hierarchical Pyramid, a protection pyramid has been created. This pyramid is adapted to the protection context and culture by utilising components one and two, explained in sections one and two above. The application of components one and two show which Rights within each Covenant are better located within the other set of Needs.

2.5.2 Application of the Protection Pyramid

Keeping in mind the exceptions discussed in the subsection above, the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights has been positioned along Maslow’s Being/Deficiency needs, while the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights represents the Growth Needs. The linking of the two Covenants with Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs theory enables BU and TD actors to understand each other. Whether IDPs speak about the fact that they are hungry, lack basic facilities or education or if they express the rights which they believe have been breached, component five ensures the messages gets across to the protection providers. Either TD protection providers use Maslow’s pyramid to translate the hunger an IDP expresses to the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living, or the IDP immediately indicates that ICESCR Article 25 has been breached. When IDPs voice their needs in terms of the Guiding Principles to Internal Displacement this also does not pose a problem, as each principle is connected to international human rights.

While both this section, and the previous highlighted the importance of human rights for IDP protection, Galtung has also placed some critical remarks to their protective capacity. The norm production process which is connected to human rights is a slow and difficult process which not only necessitates the production, confirmation and application of norms, but also a machinery and administration to ensure compliance (Galtung, 1994, p61-65). Therefore, according to Galtung, ‘the legal tradition is more in favour of the actor-oriented perspective’ (1994, p26). The counterpart of the actor perspective is the structure perspective. Though utilising a slightly different wording, Anthony Giddens has written extensively on, what he calls, Agency and Structure. His Structuration Theory will be the topic of the next section, for its abstractions greatly contribute to understanding what is needed to improve IDP protection. First, the operationalisation of component five is shown in figure 2.5.

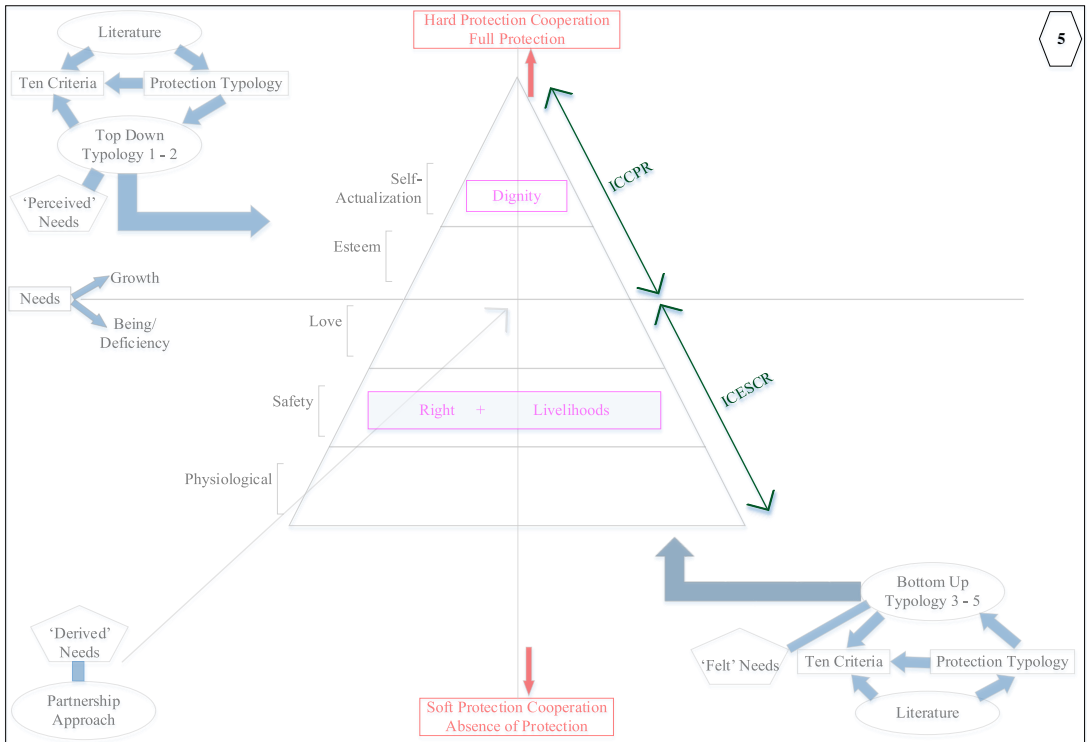


Figure 2.5: Protection Component Five – Protection Pyramid Develops as a Result of IHRL

2.6 Protection and Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory

The aim of Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST) is to move beyond Dualistic thinking. As could be read in section two, a Dualism consists of two sides which mutually affect each other. For Giddens, the most important elements of Dualistic thinking are Agency and Structure. However, contrary to traditional social theory, he does not consider it necessary to choose between the one or the other. Instead the two interact and together, but also individually, each have an important contribution to make to the social world, through his novel concept of Duality of Structure. The reason to include Giddens' theory in this research on IDP protection is because Giddens' theory, especially his writing on Duality of Structure, holds the key to overcoming the current opposition between BU and TD approaches to protection. Like Maslow (introduced in section three), Giddens does not provide a tightly integrated framework or an overall theory of society. Instead he expands upon the Agency and Structure elements of Dualistic thinking, adding the concept of Duality of Structure. This makes his theory suitable for social analysis and research, for example on IDP protection. In order to understand the contribution of Giddens' Structuration Theory, subsection one explains the theory, while subsection two will present criticisms to the theory. In the third subsection Giddens' theory will be made applicable to contribute to IDP protection.

2.6.1 Explanation of Giddens' Structuration Theory

Referring to section two in which social Dualisms were explained, Giddens pays attention to groups one (micro/individual/agency) and two (macro/society/structure) which aim to become group four (where dualisms are overcome). From group one Giddens focuses especially on Agency, while Structure is the element within group two which has Giddens' interest. In line with his understanding that the two sides of the Dualisms should be used, he developed the concept of the Duality of Structure. This concept draws upon both Agency and Structure while overcoming the divide between them. Each concept will now be explained in-depth.

According to Giddens, **Agency** relates to people who are skilled and knowledgeable and always have the possibility to make a difference, never being the 'dupes' of a social system but always having the power to change the system's demands and requirements (Giddens, 1984, p9/14). In this research, Agency relates to the activities of IDPs, their everyday life and what they do. According to Giddens all people are familiar with the conditions and consequences of the actions they undertake in everyday life (Giddens, 1979, p55) (Giddens, 1984, p10/281) (Dom, 2005, p70). Giddens even goes a step further and maintains that people are able explain why they engaged in an activity and which needs inspired the activity in the first place (which he calls practical and discursive consciousness) (Giddens, 1984, p6/49). When people are also able to reflect on the activities they developed within the place they are and the time period it takes place, Giddens calls people reflexive agents (Giddens, 1979, p56) (Giddens, 1984, p162). Giddens visualises the different activities of an individual in the

Stratification model (figure 2.6.1). In order to make life easier, people develop routines, which are habits, customs, traditions they use repetitively (Giddens, 1984, p162). Though routines belong to the domain of Agency, their repetitive character can also be observed in Giddens' concept of Structure.

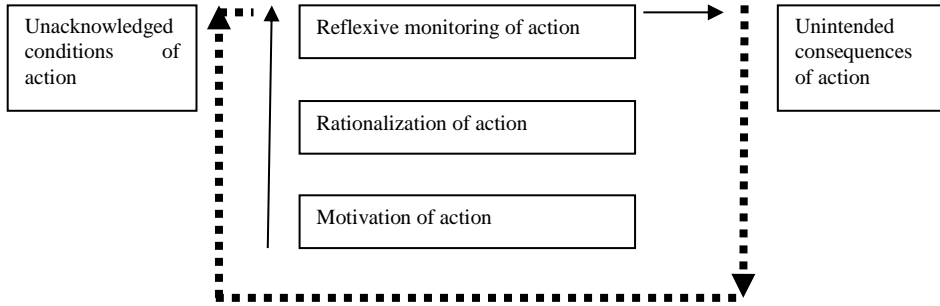


Figure 2.6.1: Stratification Model

Giddens defines **Structure** as 'rules and resources that actors draw upon as they produce and reproduce society in their activities' (Giddens, 1979, p64) (Giddens, 1984, p23) (Dom, 2005, p70). Rules and resources help people to do things and make a difference in the social world. Contrary to many other theorists, Giddens believes that Structures can be both enabling and constraining (Giddens, 1979, p69) (Giddens, 1984, p25). Resources can be allocative or authoritative, which respectively means that they either relate to objects, materials and produced goods or to people (Giddens, 1979, p100) (Giddens, 1984, p258). Together, the two kinds of resources make up the social systems which people use and change when they interact with the system and each other (Giddens, 1984, p15). Rules are loosely organised sets, which are greatly diverse, either give meaning or allow punitive action to be taken and always exist together with resources (Giddens, 1984, p17/18). In this research, Structure relates to Top Down actors and the protection they offer (which are enabling structures) or fail to provide (creating constraining structures). Rules and resources can be anything from IDP legislation, setting up food assistance, access to education or the family.

The key element of Structuration Theory is the **Duality of Structure**. Duality of Structure (DS) means that the rules and resources agents draw upon to produce and reproduce social action, are, at the same time, also the means of system reproduction (Giddens, 1979, p69) (Giddens, 1984, p19). Broken down to Agency and Structure elements, Agents draw upon Structure to produce and reproduce Structure (in abbreviated form A-S-S). This means DS relies on both Agency and Structure. Therefore, though Agency and Structure are separate entities they are not necessarily opposing entities, though they do each belong to different Dualistic groups, as explained in component two (section two of this chapter). Additionally, DS grounds social reproduction across time and space. Structure is outside time and space, but agents function within it. DS resolves this apparent contradiction (Giddens, 1984, p25). DS is only possible when agents are able to reflexively monitor their activities (Giddens, 1984,

p27). While Giddens maintains that Agents draw upon Structures, he at the same time, also argues that Structures are grounded in ‘the knowledgeable activities of situated actors’ (Giddens, 1984, p25). Therefore, Agency and Structure is strongly intertwined, Agency is in Structure, in the same way as Structure is in Agency. Structure can never be separated from people’s reasons and motivations. Only when this intertwining of Giddens two key elements is present, the Duality of Structure can materialise. This can be translated into Giddens’ attempt to overcome Dualistic thinking by the synthesis of Agency and Structure (Bagguley, 2003, p136) (Groarke, 2002, p567) (Dom, 2005, p70). For this research this means that BU actors cannot enjoy protection without the support of TD actors but, at the same time, TD actors cannot provide protection without the involvement and knowledge of BU actors. Both groups need to contribute and work together for IDPs to be protected.

Time and space are also important concepts in ST. Borrowing from time-geography theory, Giddens connects time with daily routines. Time constrains these routines, while at the same time pulling them to a higher plane where they become institutionalised. In ST, time emphasises the practical character of daily activities, especially focusing on situations where agents interact. Time and space also make up social systems, because if routines become replicate across time and space, the institutional features of social systems are created (Giddens, 1984, p86). Giddens regards time and space as connected entities and therefore refers to them as one, called time-space (Giddens, 1979, p202). Routines are important in relation to time and space, agents and social systems as they minimise fear. When agents create routines, they contribute to what Giddens calls ‘**ontological security**’ (Giddens, 1984, p282). In addition to routines, power also has a positive influence on agents’ wellbeing. All agents have power, which Giddens defines as ‘the capacity to produce an effect’ (Giddens, 1984, p14). Power is however limited by the resources agents have at their disposal (Giddens, 1979, p93). Still, Giddens’ concept of the ‘dialectic of control’ means that people can always make a difference to their situation (Giddens, 1984, p16) (King, 2000, p375). One way to make a difference to one’s situation is by utilising one’s Coping Mechanisms. This is why component six also pays attention to Coping Mechanisms.

Coping mechanisms change over time. They can be incidental or systematic, depending on the duration of the crisis. They can also be reversible or non-reversible; in the latter case this could permanently damage people (Jaspars, O’Callaghan, Stites, 2007, p10). Additionally, coping can be vigilant or have a more avoidance-seeking character. As the words indicate, vigilant coping approaches deal with the threats head on, while avoidance seeking coping shies away from the threat (Krohne in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p391-392). In ‘approach coping’, a person aims to solve a problem or seek information (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p28). Coping can also be assimilative or accommodative. In the former BU actors alter the environment to themselves, while in the latter BU actors try to change themselves to be better able to deal with the environment which causes them stress (Schwarzer and Schwarzer in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p109-110). In an effort to deal with

a stressful environment, problem-focused and emotion-focused coping mechanisms may be adopted (Parker and Endler in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p9). Problem focused coping mechanisms consist of finding concrete actions to change the environment that is causing stress, while emotion focused mechanisms are more related to a person's cognition and aim to come to terms with the stressful environment (possibly not even leading to changes in the environment) (Schwarzer and Schwarzer in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p110). It is not surprising that coping mechanisms are not always optimal, but rather sub-optimal or even provide exploitative ways to deal with a crisis.

Whatever kind of coping mechanisms are used they are based on social relations within a community and therefore differ for each community (Lautze, Hammock, 1996). This is why, within this approach to protection, attention is paid to both inter-individual and intra-individual coping. The first identifies 'habitual coping strategies used by particular individuals across different types of stressful situations' (Parker and Endler in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p11). Intra-individual coping 'identifies basic coping behaviours or strategies used by individuals in particular typical stressful or upsetting situations' (Parker and Endler in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p11-12). Approaches to coping can also be studied from micro-analytic or macro-analytic perspective which both concentrate on whether people believe they are coping efficiently and how this affects their emotional wellbeing (Krohne in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p383). Studying coping mechanisms from a micro-analytic perspective means studying many different specific coping mechanisms, while a macro-analytic perspective is more interested in the aggregated, abstract total of individual coping mechanisms (Krohne in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p384).

Exposed to stress, coping starts a 'process of adaptation' (Holahan et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p24). How this adaptation looks depends on whether coping is seen as a personality trait or a process. In the former, a person's personality (their Agency) informs the coping mechanisms that are developed to deal with a specific situation; coping mechanisms are therefore considerably stable regardless of the environment or time a stressful situation takes place. In the latter, coping mechanisms are adapted to the stressful situation from which the person is suffering at a given time, and are therefore subject to change. (Porter and Stone in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p133). Hobfoll, emphasises the importance of available resources when individuals try to adapt (Hobfoll et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p323).

In addition to coping mechanisms there are also self-protection mechanisms. These mechanisms aim to develop oneself, and are therefore further detached from the survival of the individual.

A final remark relating to Giddens concerns the term 'structuration'. According to Bagguley, Giddens defines structuration as 'the processes by which structures become organised into more permanent and enduring social institutions and social systems, such as capitalism, the state, etc.' (2003, p136). Though Giddens has given much thought to his theory, the theory has been criticised, as will be discussed in the next subsection.

2.6.2 Criticisms on Giddens' Structuration Theory

Critique on Giddens' Structuration Theory centres around a number of issues. For one, some theorists are of the opinion that though Giddens' claims that Agency and Structure are equally important, a preference for Agency can be identified (Layder, 1004, p213) (Bagguley, 2003, p137/142). Other authors have more problems with the way Giddens presents the concept of Agency (Livesay in Lehmann, 2003, p191-192) (Jary, 1995, p150). At the same time, critique is also expressed concerning Giddens' concept of Structure, with Structure not being adequately defined by rules and resources. Problems apply both to rules (which were defined too loosely) and resources while an objectivist notion of Structure is used (Thompson in Baert, 1998, p108) (Sewell Jr, 1992, p7) (King, 2000, p363-364). With the critique on both Agency and Structure, it is not surprising that Duality of Structure is also targeted particularly by social theorists such as Archer (Archer in Bagguley, 2003, p135). Problems with DS relate to the supposed incompatibility of reflexivity and DS and the fact that DS should not be constrained to Agency and Structure but should be used in a broader context (Bagguley, 2003, p135) (Livesay in Lehmann, 2003, p212).

Giddens' use and understanding of other theories is another major point of critique (Jary, 1995, p143/153). According to Baert, Giddens uses an outdated version of Functionalism, which does not include Luhmann's System Theory or Cohen's Consequences Laws, while misinterpreting the concept of time, leading to a conservative concept of society (Baert, 1998, p109). Additionally, Giddens' theory, though formulated complexly, does not make bold statements but is rather logical (Baert, 1998, p109). Gregson and Cohen believe ST cannot be used for empirical research (in Dom, 2005, p74-75). Regardless of this harsh critique Giddens' Structuration Theory is still used to contribute to improving IDP protection. The reason why the criticisms raised can be put aside it because the theory is used, as intended, for its abstract point of view. While debating on the exact understanding of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure, the simplistic beauty of transcending both Agency and Structure within the Duality of Structure, allows for the opposition between BU and TD protection providers to be solved, paving the way for improved IDP protection. This is why the remark by Jary and Jary is relevant. They point out that 'there is a great deal that structuration theory *does not* resolve and is *not intended* to resolve.... Structuration theory, too, is a 'reflexive project'' (Jary, 1995, p152/157). Structuration Theory is used in this research for its reflexive qualities, using both BU (Agency) and TD (Structure) elements while at the same time aiming to transcend both elements in the Duality of Structure (which resembles PAP). The way in which Giddens' Structuration Theory is applied is to contribute to IDP protection is explained in the next subsection.

2.6.3 Application of Giddens' Structuration Theory

Operationalising Giddens' Structuration Theory means utilising its reflexive qualities to contribute to IDP protection. The reason why ST has been chosen is because of its high level of abstraction and its aim to overcome dualistic thinking. It provides a way to overcome the dualistic opposition between BU and TD protection providers as visualised in the vertical Dualisms line of component two. This line divides the two groups of dualisms (micro/individual/agency) and (macro/society/structure), by representing them as Bottom Up actors to the right and Top Down actor to the left. In sections three, four and five an additional dividing line became clear, though this line is horizontal, dividing the protection pyramid in a top and bottom half. In this component, the horizontal dividing line also applies, divides Giddens' Agency and Structure elements, each of which can be located in one of the two halves of the pyramid. The bottom half of the protection includes Maslow's Being/Deficiency Needs, the Rights and Livelihoods element of the revised protection definition and the ICESCR. The characteristics of these protection component elements resemble Giddens' concept of Structure, which is provided by TD actors. In the top of the protection pyramid Maslow's Growth Needs, Dignity and ICCPR are located, which fit Giddens' understanding of Agency and is represented by BU actors. The horizontal dividing line in figure 2.6 therefore shows Structure (in red) at the bottom and Agency (in yellow) at the top of the protection pyramid.

In order for Giddens' concept of Duality of Structure to materialise, Structure needs to be in Agency and Agency in Structure. This is represented by the two blue arrows at the right of figure 2.6. When the Duality of Structure occurs, this means that Agency and Structure are transcended. In terms of this research this means BU and TD protection providers work together in the Partnership Approach to Protection, ultimately leading to IDP protection. Visually this means that the DS moves along the same horizontal protection continuum as PAP does. When referring to the protection continuum in terms of component six, this vertical line is also known as the Duality of Structure line, which operates in a similar way to the PAP line. In the same way that a positive PAP (i.e. BU and TD actors cooperate) leads to hard protection cooperation and full protection, the transcendence of Agency and Structure in DS positively contributes to IDP protection. Positive Duality of Structure therefore leads to an upwards movement in the protection pyramid. As a result of this upwards movement IDP capacity increases because they move towards the top of the protection pyramid where Agency, Maslow's Growth needs, Dignity and ICCPR are located. Similarly, though opposite, negative DS leading to soft protection cooperation means a movement down in the protection pyramid, making IDPs more vulnerable. These movements have been shown in arrows with blue boxes because they are inherent within the Agency and Structure logic. When actors are completely able to rely on their own Agency to ensure their protection, they have a lot of power and therefore many capacities. Opposed to this is the situation in which people have to

rely completely on Structure for their protection. Though they never lose their Agency, through the concept of the dialectic of control, but they have few resources at their disposal and are therefore vulnerable.

The dialectic of control expresses itself through BU actors' coping mechanisms. In life and death situations people utilise their coping mechanisms to ensure that their Being Needs, their Livelihoods and the Rights pertaining to the ICESCR, are met. This focus on the bottom half of the pyramid explains why coping mechanisms are shown by the diagonal arrow alongside the bottom left leg of protection pyramid. The extent to which IDPs succeed to protect themselves depends their resources as well as the legislative, physical, socio-economic and cultural environment they operate in. Once the needs relating to the bottom half of the protection pyramid have been satisfied and IDPs can start thinking about developing themselves (Agency, Growth Needs, Dignity and Rights pertaining to the ICCPR), IDPs no longer rely on their coping mechanisms but utilise their self-protection mechanisms (shown by the diagonal arrow alongside the top half of the left leg of the protection pyramid).

The other concepts of Giddens' ST are not visualised in figure 2.6 as they are related to the three key elements Agency, Structure and Duality of Structure. The goal of this subsection was to contribute to IDP protection by approaching the issues raised in the previous components from the more abstract point of view of Giddens' Structuration Theory for. The abstract nature of Structuration Theory makes this theory extremely suitable to analyse complex realities like that of internal displacement. In order for Structuration Theory to have an even larger effect on increasing the understanding necessary to contribute to IDP protection, the next section focuses on the three phases of IDP displacement.

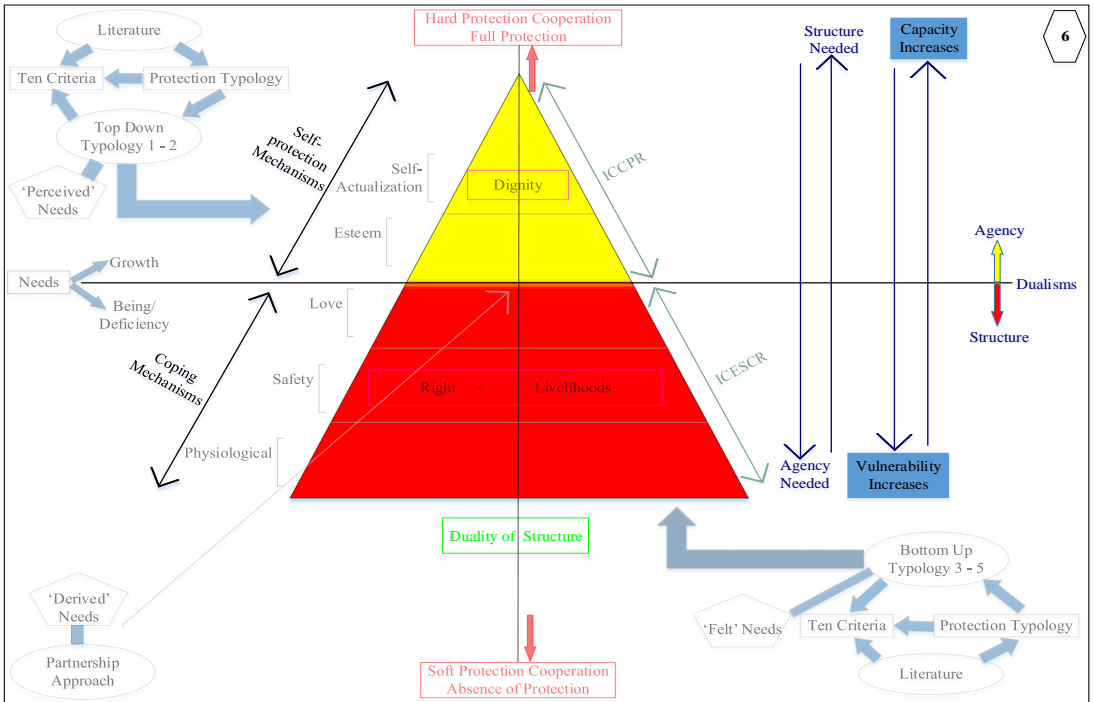


Figure 2.6: Protection Component Six – Giddens' Structuration Theory

2.7 Protection and Phases in IDP Displacement

In this section the abstract focus of the previous section is replaced by including the phases of displacement to the protection pyramid. The extent to which IDPs can rely on their Agency and the quality of the Structure which is produced and reproduced by TD actors does not only depend on elements within Structuration Theory. IDP protection is also influenced by the number of times an IDP displaces and the length of displacement. A better understanding of the concept of displacement and how it interacts within the protection pyramid enables both BU and TD actors to improve their protection activities. The first subsection presents information on the phases of displacement, while the second subsection operationalises it.

2.7.1 Explanation of Different Phases in IDP Displacement

Taking the Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement as the authoritative document regarding internal displacement, three phases of displacement can be identified. These three phases are 1) protection from displacement⁷¹, 2) protection during displacement⁷² and 3) protection during return, resettlement and reintegration⁷³. The Guide to International HR Mechanisms for IDPs and their Advocates gives a detailed overview of the origin and application of the rights within each phase (Fisher, 2006). If an IDP displaces multiple times, phases one and two are repeated. In phase two IDPs can be living in a camp, in the bush, with relatives or in other locations.

As indicated in the introduction, the abstract notions of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure need to be supplemented by displacement related observations in order for IDP protection to become optimal. When IDPs are in one place for a longer period of time, TD actors are better able to provide an enabling Structure, upon which BU actors can develop and strengthen their Agency. An increased duration in one location during the different displacement phases, allows IDPs to move from relying on their coping mechanisms to utilising their self-protection mechanisms. This does not only mean they are better able to develop themselves, their Dignity increases and ultimately, they can become self-actualized, which means that they are protected as they no longer are an IDP.

Opposed to this is the situation in which IDPs are forced to flee multiple times, increasing their number of displacements which decreases the resources they have access to, making them more vulnerable and move down the protection pyramid. The downward movement is accompanied by an increased reliance on coping instead of self-protection mechanisms. Increasingly IDPs will have to rely on TD actors and the Structures they produce for their protection. Though IDPs never lose their Agency, the increased reliance on Structure,

⁷¹ Guiding Principles 5 – 9 (OCHA, 1998, p3-5) (Kälin, 2008, p25-43).

⁷² Guiding Principles 10 – 23 (OCHA, 1998, p5-12) (Kälin, 2008, p45-111).

⁷³ Guiding Principles 28 – 30 (OCHA, 1998, p13-14) (Kälin, 2008, p127-143).

does mean that their Agency can make less of a difference, as Agency and Structure are both needed in the Duality of Structure. Multiple displacements mean a decrease in Agency because IDPs are more concerned with their survival, focusing on the Rights and Livelihoods element of the revised definition and on the ICESCR, instead of on Dignity or on the ICCPR. The positioning of the number of times and duration of displacement as well as the different displacement phases, within the protection pyramid, is discussed in the next subsection.

2.7.2 Application of Displacement Phases in IDP Protection

An increase in the number of times an IDP is displaced decreases their Agency, making them more vulnerable and increasingly dependent on the Structure produced by TD actors. For this reason, ‘times displaced’ is shown as a downwards arrow to the right of the protection pyramid. This arrow symbolises the increased reliance on Structure, coping mechanisms, Being needs, Rights and Livelihoods and the ICESCR. The downward arrow means an increase in the times displaced means a decrease in IDP protection. The situation becomes reversed when IDPs remain for a longer period of time in one location. As a result, ‘duration of displacement’ is visualised by an upward arrow to the right of the protection pyramid. An increased time in one location results in a more enabling Structure allowing strong IDP Agency, reliance on self-protection mechanisms, fulfilling esteem needs and eventually becoming self-actualised. The upward arrow shows how IDPs move closer to full protection.

The logic of the two arrows applies to all three phases of displacement. However, the three phases of displacement each have their own place within the protection pyramid. In phase one (Protection from Displacement) TD actors should create an enabling Structure which prevents people from having to displace and become IDPs. TD actors should contribute to a stable environment in which BU’s Being needs are met, their Rights and Livelihoods are fulfilled and the ICESCR is progressively met. Therefore, phase one is situated at the bottom of the protection pyramid. However, when people feel the need to flee and become IDPs, TD actors, under International Law, have the responsibility to provide protection to them. This means that, similarly to phase one, TD actors in Phase Two should create the same conditions as in phase one. This means an enabling Structure, and meeting Being Needs, Rights and Livelihoods and the ICESCR. Protection During Displacement (phase two) is therefore also best depicted in the bottom half of the protection pyramid. Phases one and two are interrelated as IDPs often move between the two phases.

Finally, phase three, (Protection during Return, Resettlement and Reintegration) is related to IDPs’ Agency and Dignity. BU actors, without interference from TD actors (free and voluntarily) should decide whether they want to return, resettle or reintegrate. TD actors are not allowed to influence this decision. The ability to make this decision by themselves is not only affected by Agency and Dignity, it also affects these two elements of IDP protection. Additionally, phase three touches upon IDPs’ esteem needs and enables them to make better

use of the Rights in the ICCPR. Finally, this third phase allows IDPs to become self-actualised. The importance of BU actors' Agency, Dignity, Growth Needs and the ICCPR means phase three is located in the top of the protection pyramid. Within the protection pyramid the horizontal Dualisms line divides the pyramid in two halves, positioning phase one and two in the bottom half and phase three in the top half. Figure 2.7 below shows the positioning of the different phases of displacement within the protection pyramid, as well as the effect of times displacement and duration of displacement on IDP protection. The next section brings all information of the previous sections together and shows how this information should be used by BU and TD actors.

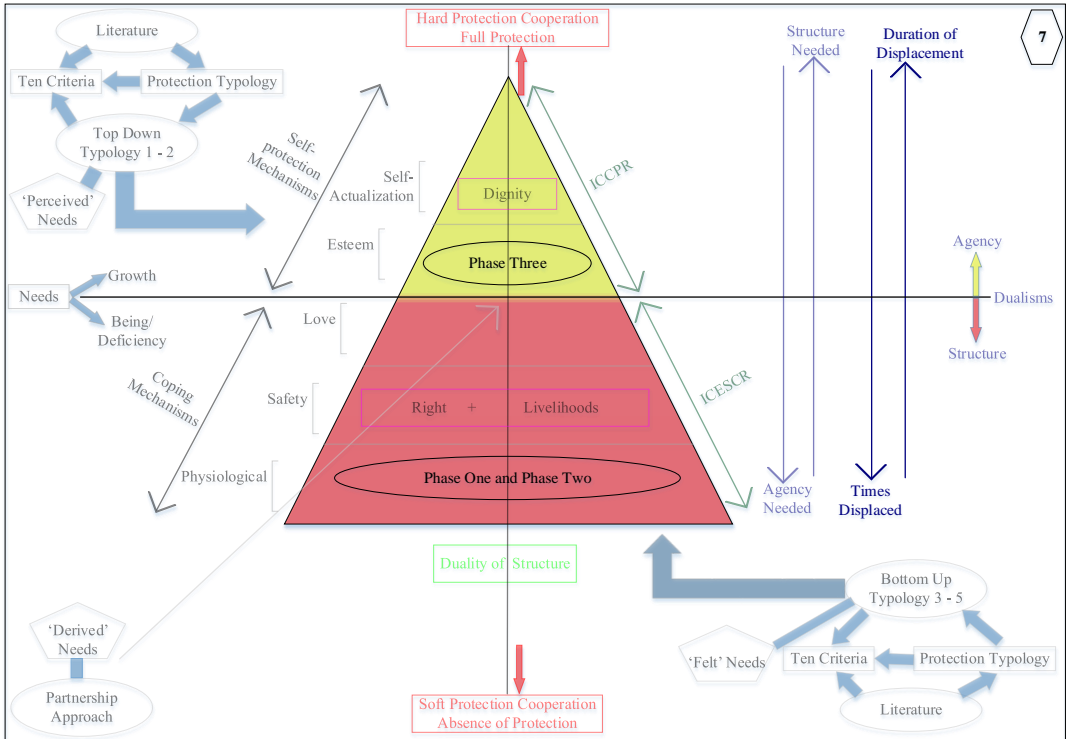


Figure 2.7: Protection Component Seven – Phases of Internal Displacement

2.8 Protection Analysis and Feedback

Within this section the interaction between the previous seven sections is explained, while the final addition to the model is made. At the completion of the section the Protection Pyramid Approach is ready to be applied to the empirical data collected in the field. The final addition to the Protection Pyramid Approach consists of adding a feedback mechanism to the model. How this works and the goals it serves, are explained in the first subsection. Within the second subsection, the overall protection potential of the model for the protection of IDPs is discussed. Figure 2.8 visualises the interaction of all eight components of the Protection Pyramid Approach. The aim of this section is to clarify the interaction of all components of the model and show the value added by the feedback mechanism.

2.8.1 Introduction of the Protection Pyramid Approach

The new model which has been developed in this chapter by introducing its various components is called the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). The Protection Pyramid Approach is the contribution of this PhD to improving the understanding of IDP protection. The aim of the Protection Pyramid Approach is to contribute to improving the understanding and explanation of protection of Internally Displaced Persons. In order to accomplish this goal, the PPA relies on the equal contribution of BU and TD actors. Both actors have to work through a number of components. Each component clarifies or provides BU or TD actors with information regarding an aspect of IDP protection. The overarching theme is for BU and TD actors to increase their understanding of what constitutes IDP protection and how each actor contributes to this. To accomplish this BU and TD actors use the PPA to clarify the protection context, the needs of the protection deprived, the prioritisation of those needs and how they can be fulfilled. To formally introduce this new approach to IDP protection the different components of the model will be summarised and the final component is presented.

Within component one of the Protection Pyramid Approach BU and TD actors obtain an overview of the protection context and culture of the IDP crisis. The ten criteria enable the actors to determine whether IDPs are protected or not, while the protection typologies show what is being done with regard to IDP protection. The second component of PPA focuses on the role of the different protection providers, as well as on what IDPs needs. Both elements are based on the theoretical debate on Dualisms. Additionally, which protection typologies are most commonly used by which protection provider is determined, clarifying what can be expected from whom. BU and TD actors also identify IDPs' needs by voicing 'felt' and 'perceived' needs. The outcome of the Dualism debate shows that if BU and TD actors work together in a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) their contribution to IDP protection is greatest. Within the PAP the identified needs are synchronised into 'derived' needs. Pooling of resources into these 'derived' needs increases the possible contribution BU and TD actors make to IDP protection. In the third PPA component, Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory

is introduced. The ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs are located within Maslow’s pyramid, visualising for BU and TD actors where IDP needs are concentrated. The additional benefit of Maslow’s pyramid, due to the hierarchical logic upon which it is created, is that it shows which activities should be undertaken next to contribute to IDP protection. Maslow’s pyramid provides a roadmap to BU and TD actors to implement IDP protection.

In PPA component four the BU and TD empirical data is redefined into the three elements of the Revised Protection Definition. The three elements of the revised definition of protection are Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. In order for IDPs to receive comprehensive protection each of these three elements should be fulfilled, which should be taken into consideration by BU and TD actors. The Dignity element is both a standalone element as well as the outcome of the interaction between Rights and Livelihoods. The Rights element is also special as it underpins the whole pyramid. Hence the fifth PPA component builds upon the Rights element and introduces the two IHRL Covenants to PPA. Component five translates the activities and needs (developed in components two till four) into universally understood concepts that can be acted upon. By positioning ICESCR and ICCPR along Maslow’s pyramid, a protection pyramid is created which acts as a common language between BU and TD actors. The protection pyramid allows TD actors to better understand IDPs’ needs which are not framed in universal HR language. Additionally, the protection pyramid gives BU actors the possibility to rephrase IDP needs into a language TD actors understand better⁷⁴. Increased understanding, improved communication and grounding in signed and ratified international Covenants, positively contributes to IDP protection.

The sixth PPA component introduces Anthony Giddens’ Structuration Theory. This theory allows IDP protection to be approached from a more abstract point of view, as it relies on the elements of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure. BU actors have Agency, while TD actors produce Structure. When BU and TD actors work together in the PAP, the Duality of Structure develops. In component six, BU and TD actors are made aware of the necessity of the compatibility of their activities (Agency in Structure and Structure in Agency) in order to make DS happen. Discussing possibly political sensitive issues in the more abstract terms of Structuration Theory is easier, leading to an increased understanding and potentially better contribution to IDP protection. In addition to this, component six also makes BU and TD actors aware of IDPs’ coping and self-protection mechanisms.

In PPA component seven basic information about the displacement phase an IDP is in is provided. Additionally, BU and TD actors are made aware of the number of displacements an IDP experienced and the duration of each. These two pieces of information indicate the urgency of implementing the identified activities.

⁷⁴ State actors may not necessarily understand human rights language and discourse better, but this language also places an obligation on them as duty bearers to act (regardless of the ultimate outcome).

Having gone through all the components of PPA so far, BU and TD actors know what IDPs need, how these needs can be met, in which way and by whom. In the eighth and final component of PPA a feedback mechanism is added. This mechanism is represented by the black two way arrows between each protection provider (BU and TD) and the protection pyramid. This feedback mechanism ensures that the information that has been obtained in components one to seven informs BU and TD actors. These actors can then implement the identified and agreed upon activities, thereby contributing to IDP protection. In figure 2.8 all eight components of the Protection Pyramid Approach are shown. In the next subsection, the protection potential (i.e. the extent to which the PPA can positively contribute to IDP protection and why) is discussed.

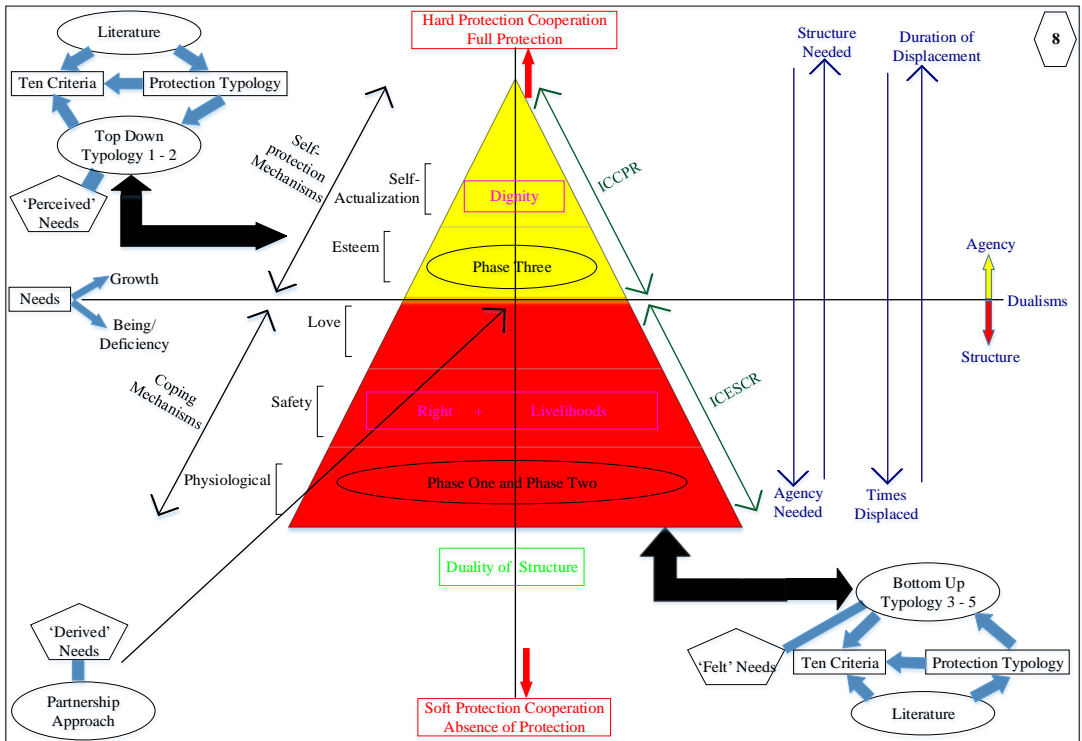


Figure 2.8: Protection Component Eight – Component Interaction and Feedback Mechanism

2.8.2 Protection Potential of the Protection Pyramid Approach

Before the protection potential of the Protection Pyramid Approach is discussed some characteristics of PPA will be presented first. As can be seen in figure 2.8 above, the protection pyramid is divided in half by a vertical and a horizontal Dualism line. The vertical line divides the contributions of BU and TD protection providers. The line also symbolises the extent to which the two actors work together within PAP/DS to reach hard protection

cooperation and full protection. The Duality of Structure is influenced by the Agency in Structure and Structure in Agency arrows to the right of the figure. The extent to which IDPs reach full protection depends on number of times displaced and duration of displacement.

The horizontal Dualism line divides the pyramid in a top and bottom half. In the bottom half Maslow's Being/Deficiency Needs, consisting of physiological, safety and love needs are situated, as well the Rights and Livelihoods elements of the revised protection definition. Additionally, the bottom half also contains Structure and coping mechanisms, the ICESCR and phase one and two of IDP displacement. In the top half of the pyramid Maslow's Growth Needs (consisting of esteem needs and the need for self-actualisation) are present. Additionally, the top half also contains the Dignity element of the revised protection definition, Agency, self-protection mechanisms, the ICCPR and displacement phase three.

The characteristics of the Protection Pyramid Approach highlight a key element of PPA's protection potential. IDP protection in the past often centred around one model or approach. The benefit of PPA is that it combines many different elements (not all originally used for IDP protection) into one approach. The horizontal division of the protection pyramid shows the interconnectedness, and interchangeability, of the different PPA components. BU actors are also agents with Agency, Dignity and Growth Needs. TD actors can be identified through the Structure they produce, or the Being Needs they aim to fulfil. Part of the problem of IDP protection in the past is the erratic and incomplete information coming from the field, which is difficult for protection providers to interpret and act upon to develop appropriate activities. The PPA helps protection providers to value and use the information that they have access to, while augmenting it with the logic described in PPA. In this way protection providers, by working together in PAP or DS enable IDPs to move upwards through the protection pyramid towards full protection, in which they are protected and no longer are IDPs.

This is why the protection potential of PPA can be found in the interaction within and between protection components. Protection providers go through all protection components and therefore get a comprehensive overview of the protection context and IDP needs, as well as how they can contribute to fulfilling these needs. The interaction within and between the different components allows for the protection providers using the PPA to build upon the strengths of the current protection regime, while at the same time overcoming its weaknesses. Additionally, the PPA gives the protection deprived a dignified role in their own protection. The inclusion of IDPs is an important component of the protection potential of the PPA. The philosophy behind the PPA is that it is believed that protection can only be provided if an approach builds upon the strengths of all actors including the protection receivers. Additionally, a comprehensive approach to IDP protection such as the PPA overcomes Dualistic thinking, is transparent, accountable, provides clear guidance on how to identify and act upon needs, while being based on elaborate theoretical research and foundations.

2.9 Summarising Remarks

This chapter has introduced the Protection Pyramid Approach. The aim of this Approach is to contribute to IDP protection. This occurs when BU and TD actors work through all eight components of the model. By doing so they increase their understanding of each other as well as of what constitutes IDP protection. The Approach ensures actors tailor their activities to IDPs' protection needs, while building upon and complementing each other. PPA is based on the premise that only through combined action can IDPs be fully protected. The historic overview of the evolution of protection has shown the need for developing a new approach to protection, regardless of the many protection definitions, approaches and models that already exist. Analysis of these different attempts to contribute to IDP protection, however, revealed that none of them were able to provide IDPs with the full protection they needed. Part of the problem could be attributed to the broad understanding of protection, as became apparent from the analysis of the protection literature. However, according to the conducted analysis, most importantly the lack of a comprehensive approach is to blame for the lack of effective protection. The PPA, instead of using only one approach or perspective (such as for example the rights-based approach) combines multiple approaches to ensure IDP protection.

PPA combines the strength of a rights-based approach, identifying rights-holders and duty bearers while building upon universally accepted and legally binding Human Rights Treaties, with a needs-based approach (covered by the Livelihoods element of the revised protection definition) and adding the concept of Dignity. At the same time, PPA also utilises well established and renowned theories from other disciplines such as Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory and Giddens' Structuration Theory. Furthermore, PPA grounds its logic in the academic debate on Dualisms, which gives the justification for paying equal attention to both BU and TD protection providers. Based on the desire to transcend the Dualisms, PPA even goes a step further by introducing the Partnership Approach to Protection. Within this element of PPA it is explained how the cooperation between BU and TD actors in PAP results in a sum which is larger than its parts (corresponding to Giddens' Duality of Structure, more specifically the recursively replicated Structure element within the Duality of Structure).

As such, the Protection Pyramid Approach, developed in this chapter, is the theoretical attempt to contribute to increasing the understanding and application of more effective IDP protection. PPA provides the theoretical model to address the main research question presented in chapter one, by providing the framework to analyse the empirical data collected in the field. This field data will then be fed into the model, further strengthening it. In the next chapter, the Methodology, the Protection Pyramid Approach will be operationalised.

In this chapter the Protection Pyramid Approach has been presented in its theoretical form. The PPA will be further improved by adding inputs from both BU and TD actors in the field. How this will be done will be explained in the next chapter, chapter three, which presents this research's methodology.

Chapter Three: Research Design & Operationalisation

In this research, in order to determine any existing gaps in IDP protection, the coping mechanisms (at Agency level) and protective measures (at Structure level) developed by BU and TD actors, in different settings (countries) at different times, in different places, as well as their interaction (through PAP/DS), are analysed. In the first section of this research the research design is presented. Additionally, the first section of this chapter includes the explanation of the ontology and epistemology of the research, as well as the methodology used. The first section also presents the research principles as well as the contribution of the pilot research in Bosnia Herzegovina. In the second section the operationalisation of the research is presented. In order to do so crucial elements for operationalisation will be discussed and the sampling procedures explained. Additionally, attention will be paid to data collection, analysis and interpretation as well as reporting.

The goal of this chapter is to clarify the methodology used to collect, analyse and write up the data, which will enable the research question (presented in chapter one) to be answered. In order to do so, it is explained how the theoretical framework (presented in chapter two) is operationalised. Within this chapter, the way the research has been conducted is justified. This includes the development of the theoretical framework, the selection of the case study countries, data collection in those countries culminating in fine-tuning of the protection potential of the theoretical framework. By doing so the clarifications presented in this chapter contribute to the aim of this PhD, which is to increase the understanding and protection of Internally Displaced Persons.

3.1 Research Design

Before the different components of the research design are discussed in the various subsections, it is important to clarify a potential source of confusion. In chapter two the contribution of Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) actors to IDP protection has been explained. In that chapter the phrases Bottom Up and Top Down were used to refer to groups of actors⁷⁵. At the same time, it was also indicated in chapter two, that these two groups utilise an approach concurrent with their name. Bottom Up and Top Down were also seen as processes through which protection can be provided. In protection literature, this latter understanding of the phrases BU and TD is most common. However, in this research, both understandings are utilised. BU and TD refer both to groups of actors, as well as, to ways to provide protection. This means TD actors could use a BU approach. To prevent confusion, whenever reference is made to BU and TD as an approach, this will be explicitly mentioned. In all other cases BU and TD refers to actors (whether or not the word actor is mentioned).

⁷⁵ The author is aware of the elaborate discussion in International Relations on the extent to which groups can be seen as actors. Please see (Lane, 1994, p466) for a structural-functionalist micro-interpretation on this topic.

For this research three case study countries were selected, Bosnia Herzegovina, Colombia and Uganda. Bosnia serves an explorative (pilot) case study. The selection of the case study countries is based on the decision to choose as diverse displacement crises, as the greater diversity within and between groups will strengthen an emerging theory. Hence, the pilot study and the two case study countries are each on different continents and, though sharing similarities, are also markedly different in developmental level and other socio-economic, cultural and political levels (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p58-59). The choice to sample Colombia and Uganda is also based on the fact that these countries were among the first in which the Cluster Approach was rolled out (OCHA/HRSU, 2007, p2). Additional sampling criteria for the three countries were the involvement of the national Government/army in the conflict and a national interest in the Guiding Principles of Internal Displacement. The choice of Colombia specifically was based on the fact, as explained in the introduction of this research, that it ranks in the top ten countries with the highest number of IDPs following armed conflict. The choice for Uganda was inspired by the fact that nearly the whole population of Northern Uganda became an IDP as a result of the fighting between the Government and Lord Resistance Army.

The first subsection of the Research Design introduces the ontology of this research which, based on the importance of both BU and TD actors, is Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory. At the same time, Giddens' theory, and his use of double hermeneutics, is also very suited to function as the research's epistemology, as explained in subsection two. Based on the ontology and epistemology, together with the limited existing research on IDP protection, the methodology used is Grounded Theory. In the third subsection, it will be explained how the process of creating the theoretical framework, presented in chapter two, which both inspired and was inspired by the data collection process (the results of which are discussed in chapters four and five), made Grounded Theory the most logical methodology for this research. Subsection four deals with the principles upon which the research is based, while subsection five presents the findings of the exploration work in Bosnia Herzegovina.

3.1.1 Ontology

In this research both Bottom Up as well as Top Down actors are important and necessary to contribute to increased IDP protection. The dichotomy between the two actors needs to be transcended. In chapter two it has been explained that this can be done through the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST) pays attention to BU, TD as well as PAP, through the concepts of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure, and is therefore selected as the ontology for this research. According to Dom, the greatest contribution of ST lies in its provision of theoretical concepts which enable researchers to know what people know and why they act as they do (Dom, 2005, p71-72). According to structurationism the concepts of ST should be seen as useful building blocks for

the constitution of society (Bryant, 1992, p142). ST utilises an eclectic approach and integrates a wide diversity of very different disciplines into one theory (Baert, 1998, p94)⁷⁶.

Within Structuration Theory the BU component is represented by 'Agency'. In Giddens' approach to Agency, the individual, their everyday life, knowledge, experiences, input, role, empowering influence on the social world (adding meaning to it)⁷⁷ and reflexivity are important⁷⁸ (Schwandt, 2000, p191-192) (Park, 2006, p83) (Briggs and Sharp, 2004, p663). Additionally, Agency is determined by the 'Dialectic of Control' which is influenced by Foucault's concept of 'power' (Foucault, 2000, p326). As part of the ontology, ST sees individuals as knowledgeable agents, and therefore attention is paid to people's tacit choices, perceptions of reality, goals and how they aim to fulfil them (Friedman, 2006, p133)⁷⁹.

To research Agency it is important to look at people's actions aimed at making a difference in the world. In this research this means paying attention to the coping and self-protection mechanisms IDPs use to protect themselves, collected through self-report⁸⁰. To understand the norms and values influencing BU's coping mechanisms, it is important to find out what kind of meanings people attribute to their surroundings. Additionally, within the concept of Agency, specific attention is paid to tacit mutual knowledge. This is done in order to determine whether coping mechanisms are similar within and across local social settings. Power is another key component of Agency, which, in this research, means looking at the effects people produce (i.e. how people contribute to their own protection). Power is also relational, affected by TD actors. BU's power, hence their effect to make a difference, is influenced by the resources at their disposal as well as the activities (or lack thereof) of TD actors. Agency therefore, includes attention for the capacities and assets people can utilise in their surroundings, such as environmental, personal, legislative, physical factors and the socio-economic-cultural assets. In line with the importance of reflexivity within the concept of 'Agency' BU's motivations to use certain coping mechanisms (and not others) are researched. The influence of BU's intentions, objectives and history are all taken into account as well, especially since they also influence people's social life (Structure).

⁷⁶ According to Baert, ST builds upon Martin Heidegger's existentialism, H.G. Gadamer's hermeneutics, Alfred Schultz's phenomenology, Harold Garfinkel's ethnomethodology and Michel Foucault and Jacques Derrida's post-structuralism. Structuration Theory offers an alternative to what Giddens calls 'the orthodox consensus'. In this consensus, Functionalism and a positivist epistemology play a key role (Baert, 1998, p94).

⁷⁷ Giddens disagrees with Functionalism's disregard for individuals' active contribution to social life (Baert, 1998, p95-96).

⁷⁸ The importance of the individual can also be found in Schultz's Phenomenology, Peter Winch's Wittgensteinian-inspired philosophy of social sciences, Garfinkel's ethnomethodology (Schwandt, 2000) and Participatory Research (Park, 2006). Development theorists are of the opinion that more attention should be paid to the voices of the people, especially to indigenous knowledge (Briggs and Sharp, 2004). Participatory Development, as championed by Chambers or criticised by Williams and Parfitt, takes the influence of the individual even a step further (Williams, 2004, p558+560) (Chambers, 1994, p958) (Parfitt, 2004, p541-546).

⁷⁹ For this element of agency ST shows similarities with Action Science (Friedman, 2006).

⁸⁰ Self-report is most commonly used by researchers. Other ways to collect information on coping mechanisms are observation or projection (Parker and Endler in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p6).

The power and influence of Agency is balanced by ST's concept of '**Structure**'. Structure is represented by TD actors, such as the State, non-State and other Aid actors, their interrelations and activities⁸¹. Inspired by the Interpretative Schools, Giddens acknowledges both the enabling and constraining influence of Structure (Baert, 1998, p96-97)⁸². Nevertheless, Structures also create unknown and unrecognised conditions (Baert, 1998, p98-99)⁸³. History and people's reasons and motivations have a strong influence on Structures (Layder, 1994, p129)⁸⁴. According to Giddens, Structure consists of Rules and Resources, which need to be known, enabling, accessible and internalised by BU actors. This is represented by the extent to which States have incorporated the Guiding Principles into their legislation, as well as whether States have implemented the legislation and if BU actors know and claim their rights. Enabling Structures also consist of additional protective measures set up by the State or non-State actors to ensure IDPs are protected. While researching Structure, it is important to keep in mind the influence Agency has on Structure, through BU's intentions, actions and the changing historical meaning. The interaction between Agency and Structure is further developed in ST's concept of the Duality of Structure.

In ST, Agency and Structure are equally important. Structure is internal to activity and has no existence beyond the situations in which people are acting. This means Structures pre-exist Agency while, at the same time, are a creation of agents (Layder, 1994, p128-129)⁸⁵. Giddens aims to transcend the BU-TD/A-S opposition, through the '**Duality of Structure**', which has been described as the Partnership Approach to Protection. The goal of Duality of Structure is to move beyond a singular focus on 'free agents' or 'structural constraints' (as done by the micro or macro socialists) towards an integration of the two (Gubrium and Holstein, 2000, p490) (Jong, 1999, p239-241)⁸⁶. Giddens concept of the Duality of Structure ensures the perpetual, recurrent and reflexive interaction between Agency and Structure. The goal of the Duality of Structure is to produce and reproduce social order through time and space by knowledgeable agents. For this research this means how can IDPs, the knowledgeable agents, contribute to their own protection by influencing and being influenced by the existing protective measure of the State, non-State actor and other aid actors (Structure).

⁸¹ Structuration Theory approach to structure shows resemblance with Realism. Though ST disagrees with Realism on the importance of BU actors.

⁸² The enabling influence of structure is based on the ideas of the Interpretative Schools, which state that shared knowledge can be based on a shared culture or shared social rules (Baert, 1998, p96-97).

⁸³ More information on the unknown and unrecognised conditions of structural activity can be found in post-Structuralism (Baert, 1998, p98-99).

⁸⁴ In this sense ST's concept of structure differs from the more fixed approach to structure utilized in Durkheim's writings (Layder, 1994, p129). For more information on Functionalism please consult (Brenner, 1994), (Demerath III, 1996), (Horowitz, 1963).

⁸⁵ The equal importance for agency and structure set ST apart from interpretative sociology (ethnomethodology or phenomenology) (Layder, 1994, p128).

⁸⁶ More information on the interaction between agency and structure can be read in ethnomethodological research (Gubrium and Holstein, 2000) or the work of Peter Berger (Jong, 1999).

In order to find this out it is necessary to look at similarities and differences in BU and TD protection activities, across different case study countries, and how both activities influence and support of each other, to the benefit of IDP protection. The internalisation by BU and TD of this process is also part of this research understanding of Duality of Structure.

The internalisation process is influenced by Giddens' writings on 'time-space' (Giddens, 1984, pxxv)⁸⁷. For Giddens, the progressive nature of time and its influence on interactions between Agency and Structure are important (Baert, 1998, p95-96). Time-space allows for the comparison between IDP coping mechanisms and the protective measures of the State, non-State and other Aid Actors, in different IDP crisis, in different places, at different times. In order to contribute to this research's aim which is to increase the understanding of IDP protection, the ontology of this research identifies rules, procedures, etiquettes, forms of deference and authority within the routine practices of BU coping mechanisms and TD protective measures across different case study countries. The interaction between BU and TD actors is elaborated upon in the next subsection on epistemology.

3.1.2 Epistemology

Similarly, to the ontology, the epistemology for this research utilises Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory. Structuration Theory is especially suitable as it is based on the concept of 'double hermeneutics'. Within this concept the importance of actors and context is emphasised. More specifically this means that the researchers interpret the interpretation of the researched. In order to be able to correctly do so the researcher should take the context into consideration. The dual focus contained within the concept of double hermeneutics is necessary for any research taking place within the social sciences, to be able to represent the complex reality in which the research is situated. Double hermeneutics enables research into a subject (in this case Internally Displaced Persons) by taking both the internal and external interpretations on the subject into account. This means that a theory which is based upon the concept of double hermeneutics allows for an interactive, knowledgeable, vocal and reflective subject, which at the same time, is influenced by the surroundings in which it operates. Structuration Theory's concept of Agency allows for the analysis of the internal component of the subject (the IDP) while Structure ensures that external elements influencing the subject are taken into consideration too. Other topics dealt with in ST such as ontological security and time-space assist in researching the internal and external aspects of a subject.

Additionally, Giddens maintains that double hermeneutics enables both the interpretations of professionals and laymen to be taken into account when researching a topic. Though the determination of who constitutes a professional and a layman can be disputed, Giddens' thinking is relevant when aiming to determining the level of IDP protection in the

⁸⁷ The concept of time-space is influenced by Torsten Hägerstrand's, Allan Pred's and Tommy Carlstein's writings on time-geography.

case study countries (van Strien, 1997, p694). As laymen and professionals utilise each other's vocabulary, the protection pyramid introduced in chapter two is a clear example of the benefit of incorporating double hermeneutics when conducting research, as it provides both actors with a common frame of reference (van Strien, 1997, p695). One of the challenges experienced by professionals, according to Giddens, is the presence of actors with more or less influence and power. As professionals it is impossible to maintain a value-neutral position. Therefore, it is very important that professionals take into account both the actors and the context of the situation they operate in (van Strien, 1997, p697).

This idea of the difficulty of being value free is seconded by Flyvbjerg who applies this thinking to theory formation. According to Flyvbjerg, who refers to Socrates, Descartes and Kant, '*in social science no theory can be build that is explicit, universal, discrete, systematic, complete and predictive*' (Flyvbjerg in Zeelen and Blaak, 2013, p6). Flyvbjerg utilises an argument made by Giddens who maintains that the professional can only be as good as the laymen is able to relate his or her problem to the professional (Flyvbjerg, 2001, p47). For this research this means that the interaction between the IDP and the State, Non-State actors and other (aid) actors, is based on the ability of IDPs to voice their needs, concerns and capacities. The protection providers therefore need to take power (im)balances and power plays into account. The possibility to develop a value-neutral position or theory therefore is, based on van Strien, Flyvbjerg and Giddens writings on double hermeneutics, neither possible nor desirable (van Strien, 1997, p697).

In addition to the use of double hermeneutics, Giddens, in his *book New Rules of Sociological Method* of 1986, developed concepts, such as 'agent and event causality' to research the way humans work. These two concepts are useful for this research as they enable the analyse of BU and TD actors' contributions to IDP protection. Agent causality looks at the activities engaged in by the knowledgeable subject (IDPs) themselves. Event causality refers to everything which influences the subject, activities of the State, Non-State actor and other (aid) actors) (Giddens in Zeelen, 1994, p26). The extent to which these two causalities allow for a representative, generalisable and valid theory is disputed by Giddens himself. On the one hand, he believes that, because research focuses on individuals and each individual has a different knowledge set and reacts differently to their surroundings, no 'objective' truths can be identified (also known as 'instable generalisations'). As such Giddens belongs to the anti-foundationalist thinkers. On the other hand, Giddens maintains that individuals use generalisations whenever possible, because it makes their lives easier, which would be more in line with foundationalist thinking (Baylis et al., 2014, p170-171). Whether or not the findings of the conducted research are generalisable, Giddens's point is that these general outcomes of research should be taken into consideration (Zeelen, 1994, p26).

The way to conduct research, together with the question of what constitutes knowledge, are two defining characteristics of epistemology. Giddens' Structuration Theory ensures attention is paid to both these questions. Conducting research by using Structuration

Theory means identifying the actor (Agency) and context (Structure) perspective within a research area (IDP protection) while aiming to use both elements to solve the identified problem in the research area through the Duality of Structure (Zeelen, 1994, p25).

Zooming in on the question what constitutes knowledge, the key terms used by Giddens in his Structuration Theory apply. Giddens' writing on **Agency** is to empower, liberate and emancipate BU. To determine the level of Agency accessible to BU actors Structuration Theory will be used to identify the coping mechanisms IDPs, consciously or unconsciously, use. This answers the knowledge part of this research's Epistemology. From the point of view of how to conduct this research, the way BU actors use their coping mechanisms to contribute to their own protection, as well as the extent to which they are built upon by TD actors is of great interest. Since the epistemology used is non-positivist, attention will not only be paid to Agency but also to Structure. This is because the hypotheses of this research maintain that IDP protection necessitates both BU/A and TD/S.

Structure is the other element contributing, together with Agency, to IDP protection. According to Giddens Structure on its own, regardless whether or not it is enabling, will not lead to IDP protection. Instead, applying a constitutive epistemology, Structure should work together with Agency. During data collection, it has to be ensured that both enabling and constraining Structures are identified, including those developed by the State, non-State actors and other aid actors to protect IDPs. When conducting the research, the power relations embedded in Structures and their effects on BU actors are taken into consideration to determine TD actors' contribution to IDP protection.

Having determined both BU/A and TD/S contribution to IDP protection and given the constitutive use of ST, the knowledge of both groups is combined to find solutions to the shortcomings in IDP protection. In ontological terms this means transcending the limitations of Agency and Structure in the **Duality of Structure** to positively contribute to IDP protection. From an epistemological perspective, ST will be used to analyse what IDPs do to protect themselves (Agency) and what other actors (Structure) do to contribute to IDP protection. The interaction between BU/A and TD/S will lead to PAP/DS contributing to improved protection.

In summary, knowledge within this research comes on the one hand, from BU actors actively engaged in their own protection by using their coping mechanisms. ST is used to critically analyse the coping mechanisms collected as part of Agency. Utilising a non-positivist, constitutive and anti-foundationalist epistemology, BU/A are, on their own, not able to ensure IDP protection. Therefore, on the other hand, the (enabling and constraining) influence of TD/S on IDP protection is the second source of knowledge for this research. The Structures created by the State, non-State actor and other aid actors, are critically analysed, before being included in the next component of this research, the Duality of Structure. Both BU/A and TD/S contribute to the Duality of Structure. PAP/DS transcends the knowledge collected in BU/A and TD/S, and therefore constitutes a higher, more abstract source of

knowledge which has a large protection potential. The methodology which will be utilised to ensure PA/DS materialises and contributes to IDP protection is discussed below.

3.1.3 Methodology

In general, there are four ways to analyse data. Data can be analysed according to the quantitative versus qualitative method. This includes coding all the data and systematically assembling, assessing and analysing the data (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p101). In the second method, no coding is done. Instead theoretical ideas are generating, which are designed, redesign and reintegration into theoretical concepts which are incorporated into a theory on a conceptual level (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p101-102) (Alvesson and Sköldbberg, 2000, p31).

The third method, called the 'Constant Comparative Method', consists of a combination of the first and the second method. Explicit coding procedures are used to develop a theory more in line with the second approach. Coding and studying the data for new categories is done simultaneously, creating a systematic, integrated and plausible theory. This third method relies on the constant comparison of data and is done together with theoretical sampling to ensure consistency with the collected data (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p102-103).

The fourth approach, called 'analytic induction' is also based on a combination of the first two approaches, but uses an existing theory on a specific subject area as starting point. The aim is to improve or expand on the existing theory. Both the third and fourth approach do not aim to be universally applicable or are based on extensive proof. The third approach however, differs from the fourth as it only requires saturation of categories, while the fourth approach requires all available data to be consulted (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p103-104).

Given the nature of the research, a qualitative methodology seems more suited. This is because only limited research has been conducted on IDP coping mechanisms, and more importantly, on the interaction between BU and TD approaches to IDP protection. The complex objects (BU and TD), the interaction between objects, and the desire to really understanding the meaning of the interaction, are all key characteristic of a qualitative methodology (Sarantakos, 2005, p134). An additional benefit to using a qualitative methodology is its holistic approach. The starting point of such an approach is obtaining an understanding of the larger picture which includes the social settings. A qualitative methodology also emphasises the relationships between actors and acknowledges that a researcher also plays a role in research (Janesick, 2000, p385-386). The importance of giving the interviewee sufficient time to answer questions is another reason to choose a qualitative methodology (Felce and Perry, 1995, p65). If a qualitative methodology is used, the next step implies choosing between a fixed or a flexible research design. The difficulty in deciding upon the research setting and sampling size as well as the difficulties identifying key informants prior to departure make a fixed design impossible, but also hamper the development of a flexible qualitative research design. This is why this research moves away from a qualitative

design and instead utilises a methodology from the third group of discussed approaches: Grounded Theory.⁸⁸

Grounded Theory (GT) is described as a ‘method, technique, research design, data analysis tool and outcome of the research’ (Sarantakos, 2005, p117). In this research, GT, will be used in all of these ways. The theoretical framework, presented in chapter two, has been developed according to GT logic, while at the same time, informs the data collection process. Induction and deduction continuously alternate, building upon and strengthening one another (Sarantakos, 2005, p118). The development the Protection Pyramid Approach, is therefore a progress, not a statistic given structure. Additionally, in line with a GT methodology, PPA fits the subject area which is being researched, is understandable, general enough to be broadly applicable while at the same time able to be controlled (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p237). PPA’s eight component approach is easy to use in displacement crises, as each component focuses on a part of IDP protection (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p238-239). GT’s emphasis on the importance of everyday behaviour and action contribute to its usefulness as this research’s methodology, fitting with ST ontology and epistemology. GT is grounded in the data it collects (Sarantakos, 2005, p118).

The abstract nature of some of PPA’s components, as well as the fact that PPA uses eight components, allows the theory to be easily adapted to specific displacement situations, increasing the theory’s generalisability (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p242-243). This ensures that even though contexts change, PPA is still applicable and can be used to research IDP protection (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p245). GT also acknowledges the difficulty of *a priori* decisions regarding sampling techniques. Instead GT maintains that knowledge gathered during the process of data collection informs decisions and analysis, which in turn influence knowledge. Grounded Theory produces an outcome once the researcher determines data saturation. GT therefore acknowledges the important role of the researcher in interpreting reality (Sarantakos, 2005, p118). Another compelling reason to utilise Grounded Theory is its applicability in situations where conventional theories are lacking, as is the case for IDP coping mechanisms and the interaction between BU and TD actors (Sarantakos, 2005, p119).

Utilising Grounded Theory includes constructing categories, showing the interconnectedness of these categories and developing and testing propositions (Sarantakos, 2005, p119-120). According to Grounded Theory a *category* ‘stands by itself as a conceptual element of the theory’ (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p36). In practice this includes collecting information on the five Ws (who, what, when, where, why), as was done in explorative work (see subsection 3.1.5 below) (Stebbins, 2001, p23). PPA has eight categories, represented by the eight components of the approach. A *property* ‘is a conceptual aspect or element of a

⁸⁸ For detailed information on Grounded Theory please consult the book by Barney Glaser and Anselm Strauss, who are the originators of Grounded Theory.

category' (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p36). For PPA properties are represented by the component elements.

Critique on GT is centred on its subjectivity, the difficulty in verification and validation of the research and its findings, unclarity relating to the data collection process and the imprecise method of theory building (Sarantakos, 2005, p121). The different steps of Grounded Theory will be explained below, to overcome the critiques placed on GT. The outcome is the creation of the Protection Pyramid Approach, through Grounded Theory.

A key element of Grounded Theory is Comparative Analysis (CA), a key characteristic of the third approach presented above. CA is used to check whether initial evidence is correct, to allow for generalisations, to make a concept more specific and finally to verify and generate a theory. By generating a theory in this way, reality is not made to fit a theory, but a theory is developed to research reality (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p23-29+261). In other words, induction and deduction alternate, which means that this research is based on certain concepts which, through use, lead to the development of new concepts.

The number of cases selected for the comparison is less important than ensuring that accurate data is collected within each case study country. Additionally, CA also enables the development of a formal theory. The use of CA justifies the choice to select three case study countries for this research (Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda). By including three countries and planning the data collection process at different times, it became possible to elevate the emerging substantive theory to the level of formal theory. The richness of data together with CA logic offsets the limited number of cases (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p81).

A theory that is developed through Comparative Analysis can either be *substantive* or *formal*, though overlap between the two kinds of theory exist. Substantive theory applies to a specific topic while formal theory is geared more towards the conceptual level (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p32)⁸⁹. For this research the substantive area is the protection of Internally Displaced Persons. Formal theory develops from substantive theory but in this PhD, there is more overlap between the two. The Protection Pyramid Approach is a formal theory based on one substantive area, it includes elements of both formal and substantive theory.

Developing PPA as a substantive theory meant realizing the importance of including both BU and TD actors in order to achieve IDP protection. Afterwards elements of formal theory, such as Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory and Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST), were added to the substantive theory to conduct the actual analysis. Structuration Theory allows for a dual research approach, through the theory's focus on Agency and Structure. Given the highly abstract nature of ST, Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory was deemed necessary to create a linkage to the more tangible issue area of IDP protection.

⁸⁹ For more information on the difference between substantive and formal theory development please consult (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p33).

Developing the substantive theory part of PPA, according to a GT methodology, necessitated the collection of large amounts of data in the field. An elaborate interview guide based on the revised definition of protection facilitated this. As the interview guide was used for interviewing both BU and TD actors as well as for each case study country, cross-actor and cross-case study analysis was both possible (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p34-35)⁹⁰.

The next step in the development of formal theory focuses on identifying conceptual categories and their properties as well as on generalised relations. The development of categories and properties, in other words PPA's components and component elements, was based on analysing the transcripts of the conducted interviews, as well as through text analysis (literature review). Studying the transcripts and literature helps identify themes, which help understanding the emerging categories and how they relate to each other. The categories with their properties then lead to the development of theory, the Protection Pyramid Approach (Russell Bernard, 2000, p443)⁹¹.

Using GT to create PPA also ensures that PPA's components are 'analytic and sensitizing' (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p38-39). This requirement is met by making the components of PPA both sufficiently separated from the data that they become generalised enough to apply to a multitude of displacement crises. At the same time the components are not too estranged from their initial focus (displacement). Having such analytic and sensitive components, a PPA user can look at the research from all angles which adds to the explanatory power of the theory. The critical analysis of Maslow and Giddens' theories, in two of the components, is an additional requirement for developing a theory according to a GT methodology (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p90).

The reason why the decision has been made to develop formal grounded theory is because it brings together many different (formal) theories which can be used to analyse the substantive subject area of IDP protection. At the same time, PPA can also be used to do in-depth research into each of the different elements of IDP protection (represented within the components). Most importantly however, setting up PPA in a Grounded Theory format enabled the researcher to bring together a large array of diverse ideas about IDP protection (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p94-95).

Utilising the Grounded Theory approach ensures that PPA can be seen as a 'developmental theory'. This means PPA is a theory of 'process, sequence and change pertaining to organizations, positions and social interaction' (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p114). PPA being based on uniformities in the collected data, while not ignoring differences, has a

⁹⁰ Though an elaborate interview guide is not always approved in qualitatively oriented research, McCracken maintains that it is indispensable for long interviews, of the kind necessary in GT methodology. For more information on the purposes of an elaborate interview guide please consult (McCracken, 1988, p24-25+34).

⁹¹ For more information on the identification of categories and properties, especially on the use of low and high level conceptualisations can be found in (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p36).

high level of generalisability and is more abstract, while limiting terminology as much as possible (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p114).

The Protection Pyramid Approach, set up using the comparative method, is based on different kinds of documentary sources. This means that rather than only relying on interviews, literature (including speeches) was consulted, novels were read, photos taken and city plans were consulted (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p161). Literature and novels helped acquire a broad understanding of the subject area and describes the subject area in the introduction (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p162). Upon completion of the literature study (please see the theoretical framework), field work consisted of being present in the case study countries and capitalising on data collection possibilities as they arose. (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p164).

Consulting the literature and going to the field to collect additional data led to the discovery of the important categories and their properties, represented by PPA's eight components and several component elements (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p168). During the data analysis time slots, in between the data collection field visits, the way each of these eight components work, and how they interact, has been teased out. This process lifted the initial substantive theory to the formal theory which PPA now is, increasing its scope and generalisability (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p168-169). The diverse focus of the eight different components of PPA contribute to the formal character of this theory for IDP protection (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p175). Contrary to the normal GT procedure, the hypotheses which guided the development of PPA were formulated at the start of the research. These hypotheses indicated the need to focus both on BU and TD data and informants but also pointed to the need of an extra dimension. During the research this extra dimension materialised in the form of the Partnership Approach to Protection (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p171).

According to the principles of Grounded Theory, PPA can be considered an applicable formal theory as the theoretical framework is systematic, accurately representing the materials studied, while being presented in an accessible format, easily understood and utilised by both experts and non-experts (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p224). The application of PPA for IDP protection is further improved by the research principles presented in the next subsection.

3.1.4 Research Principles

The usefulness and applicability of a theory is determined by the principles upon which it is based. In this subsection, the various principles applicable to the Protection Pyramid Approach are discussed. In the discussion below it is shown how PPA, based on a GT methodology, utilises both quantitative and qualitative methodological principles. Six principles are discussed in this subsection, which are 1) variables and constants, 2) measurement, 3) replication, 4) validity, 5) reliability and 6) representativeness and generalisability.

The first principle of social research (*variables and constants*), has a quantitative origin. Component two analyses information from the protection providers, needs and dualisms, and

is largely based on variables, as opposed to constants. Protection providers are either Bottom Up or Top Down⁹² and needs are either ‘felt’ or ‘perceived’. This is opposed to component five (International HRs) where information belongs to a certain right, belonging to a certain Covenant. This component therefore largely consists of constants. The variables utilised in component two are made up of both dependent and independent variables (DV and IV). The protection providers are independent variables, while the protection needs are dependent ones. Extraneous variables (variables outside of the research) can be found in component one, in which an overview of the protection culture and context is obtained (Sarantakos, 2005, p75).

A second research principle to take into consideration is the principle of *measurement*. In component two the activities of BU and TD actors come together in the Partnership Approach to Protection and its corresponding ‘derived’ needs. The extent to which BU and TD actors work together in PAP is shown in the protection cooperation continuum, which runs from soft cooperation (without any protection) to hard cooperation (leading to full protection). The protection continuum can be seen as a measurement scale categorising ‘derived’ needs. ‘Derived’ needs are a form of ordinal-level measurements running on a scale from low to high (from soft to hard protection cooperation) without equal intervals (Sarantakos, 2005, p76-77). At the same time, however, given the possibility of the absence of protection, the protection continuum can also be described as a ratio-level measurement. The absence of protection then equals the true zero, the lowest value in the continuum (Sarantakos, 2005, p78)⁹³.

Replication is the third social research principle discussed. Originally replication only applied to quantitative research as it requires that research can be exactly replicated. Though exact replication is not possible in qualitative or grounded research, PPA does allow comparisons (a key outcome of replication in quantitative research) to take place. The eight components of PPA ensure that each research is approached in a similar way, allowing both inter and intra case study comparisons (Sarantakos, 2005, p80).

Validity is another research principle normally only associated with quantitative research. Similarly, to replication, the setup of PPA enables validation to take place during the research process. Validity relates to the research’s relevance, precision and accuracy. This means that the observations, identifications and measurements done within the research correspond to what the research wanted to observe, identify and measure (Mason, 1996, p24) (Russell Bernard, 2000, p46). With PPA being a formal theory, validation is ensured in the large diversity of research categories (represented by the eight protection components). The grounding of PPA in elaborate data, also increases its validity. As the theory is developed to fit the data, one of the key questions of validity, ‘Do the indicators measure what they are

⁹² The author is aware of the possibility of so-called *Bottom-Down Approaches* but has chosen to maintain a clear differentiation between Bottom Up and Top Down approaches. For more information on Bottom-Down please consult (Zeelen, Rampedi and de Jong, 2011).

⁹³ For more information on true and arbitrary zeros please consult (Sarantakos, 2005, p79).

supposed to measure?’ is met (Sarantakos, 2005, p83). The strong connection between theory and data ensure that relevance, accuracy and precision of PPA are high (Mason, 1996, p148).

To ensure validity the process which M. Angucia calls ‘the continuous dialogue (a web of dialogue or triangulation)’ has been applied. This means that the understanding of IDP protection, as presented by BU and TD actors, served two purposes. On the one hand, it increased the researcher’s insights (also described as ‘accumulative knowledge’) but more importantly, on the other hand, it was used during subsequent interviews, allowing for triangulation (Angucia, Zeelen and de Jong, 2010, p226). Utilising the continuous dialogue, external validation is increased. The creation of accumulative knowledge is both a representation of external and cumulative validation. Cumulative validation has also been ensured with the inclusion of Anthony Giddens’ Structuration Theory as it ensures that the collected data is sufficiently general to allow for comparison with other studies. BU and TD actors play equal roles in the development of PPA and therefore communicative validation of PPA has been met too. PPA has, amongst others, been presented at a World Conference of Humanitarian Studies, ensuring argumentative validation of PPA. Finally, going to the field and collecting data in the case study countries ensured that ecological validation took place as well. This was because being in the field increased the chance of adequately reflecting real life (Sarantakos, 2005, p86-87).

As the BU part of this research focuses on IDP Coping Mechanisms some specific coping related threats to internal and external validity need to be mentioned. Internal validity is threatened by 1) history, the time difference between an event necessitating coping and the actual coping mechanism and 2) maturation, a BU actor might get used to an event and no longer rely on their coping mechanism (Beehr and McGrath in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p73-74). External validity is especially problematic in relation to coping. As coping mechanisms are used by BU actors and influenced by the factors specific to their situation, the generalisability of coping mechanisms, i.e. the external validity, is low (Beehr and McGrath in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p75).

The fifth principle of social research is *reliability*. The eight components of PPA ensure that a consistent approach is taken in each case study country, positively contributing to external reliability. When reliability is combined with validity *reciprocal adequacy*⁹⁴ develops. This is because the answers given by interviewees are crosschecked with other actors in the research (Angucia, Zeelen and de Jong, 2010, p221). Tromp also points out the empowering effect of utilising reciprocal adequacy, which also increases the reliability and validity of the conducted research (Boog, Slagter and Zeelen, 2008, p18). However, internal reliability is low, as the interpretation of the data within a case study is dependent upon the researcher (Sarantakos, 2005, p88). A more qualitative way to approach reliability is by increasing the number of perspectives of the research. This is something which is covered by

⁹⁴ Reciprocal adequacy is also known as ‘Communicative Validity’ (Boog, Slagter and Zeelen, 2008, p16).

component two of PPA, taking into account both BU and TD perspective, as well as by having different case study countries. Another more qualitatively-oriented measure to reliability is coherence, which is defined as ‘the extent to which methods meet the research goals’ (Sarantakos, 2005, p90). By developing PPA according to the GT methodology, this principle of social research has been met. Confirmability, openness and discourse are other measures of reliability used by qualitative researchers (Sarantakos, 2005, p90).

Confirmability of PPA is low due to the subjective nature of the research based on the large interpretative role of the researcher. However, this is offset by the measures of openness and discourse. PPA is based on methods from very diverse disciplines and component eight ensures that discussion on the findings of the components are taken into account (Sarantakos, 2005, p90). The extended periods of time spend in the field also increases the reliability of the findings. Additionally, the use of a mechanical recording device and a local translator increases the internal reliability, while the use of GT methodology positive contributes to external reliability (Sarantakos, 2005, p90-91).

The sixth social research principle combines the principles of *representativeness* and *generalisability*. From a qualitative perspective, representativeness is difficult, as qualitative research utilises small samples. However, as PPA is based on GT methodology, which requires sampling to continue until saturation is determined by the researcher, PPA is more representative than if it were based on a purely qualitative methodology. During the development of PPA every case which presented itself was included in the data collection and analysis, increasing representativeness (Sarantakos, 2005, p97). The aim for the research is to represent the empirical population (Mason, 1996, p91). The level of representativeness of PPA is intrinsically linked to its level of generalizability. The higher the representativeness, the higher the generalisability and vice versa, the wider the claim the research can make (Mason, 1996, p24). PPA approximates naturalistic generalisation, as PPA can be adapted to various situations and target populations (Sarantakos, 2005, p98). PPA developed through naturalistic interviewing, which ‘studies reality as it really is, in its own terms and as it is manifest in everyday life events’ (Sarantakos, 2005, p270). PPA’s generalisation capacity has increased by including two case study countries, which increases the comparability of PPA. Additionally, by using GT, PPA fits the data better, made PPA more generalizable (Sarantakos, 2005, p98). In any case, though it is not possible to generalise this research’s findings in a positivistic way, the research can be used when conducting similar research in similar settings. As such the research functions as an example or heuristics for future researchers, meeting the criteria for ‘exemplary generalization’⁹⁵ leading to new knowledge (Boog, Slagter and Zeelen, 2008, p20/25). By utilising exemplary generalisation PPA has created a theory/model which connects theory and practice and can be used for the

⁹⁵ For more information on ‘Exemplary Generalisation’ please consult (Smaling, 2000).

determination of IDP protection in similar situations. Generalisability increased by doing a pilot study in Bosnia, the findings of which are presented in the following subsection.

3.1.5 Exploration

Exploration can be done at the very beginning of research to help with the formulation of research concepts⁹⁶. For this research, it was deemed necessary to conduct an explorative field visit to Bosnia Herzegovina as only limited information was available on IDP protection and especially on the interaction between BU and TD actors (Stebbins, 2001, p9). Explorative research is also often done as a first step in a Grounded Theory methodology, with the aim to generate new ideas out of collected data (Stebbins, 2001, p9). Additionally, exploration in Bosnia served to determine the research's feasibility and to get familiar with the topic of IDP protection and the roles of BU and TD actors in it. Prior to departure to Bosnia hypotheses were developed, but the appropriateness of the hypotheses was confirmed during the stay in the country. Finally, the explorative work in Bosnia assisted with the operationalisation of the research, which is further elaborated upon in the next section (Sarantakos, 2005, p137).

According to Stebbins, the explorative work in Bosnia 'set the agenda' for the research in Colombia and Uganda (Stebbins, 2001, p18). At the same time, immediately upon arrival in both Colombia and Uganda, small scale explorative work was done as well. These small scale explorative exercises consisted of immersing myself as much as possible in IDP related activities or locations (e.g. in Colombia this meant attending a conference on the impact of IDP legislation on social and territorial wellbeing, while in Uganda the explorative work centred around the five Ws in relation to IDP protection) (Stebbins, 2001, p22-23).

Prior to departure to Bosnia, explorative work also included conducting an elaborate literature review. The literature review led to the historic evolution of the concept of protection, as well as identified possible actors active within IDP protection (Sarantakos, 2005, p137). Additionally, the literature review led to the creation of the elaborate interview guide (McCracken, 1988, p31). Studying IDP coping mechanisms increased the overall understanding of this vulnerable group and gave a first idea of their needs. Finally, the exploration work also included expert interviews. As part of the exploration, research trips were organised to New York and Geneva, to talk on HQ level with actors involved in IDP protection (Sarantakos, 2005, p138).

⁹⁶ In this research the definition of Exploration as posed by Stebbins is used. This definition reads: 'Social Science exploration is a broad-ranging, purposive, systematic, prearranged undertaking designed to maximize the discovery of generalizations leading to description and understanding of an area of social or psychological life. Such exploration is, depending on the standpoint taken, a distinctive way of conducting science – a scientific process- a special methodological approach (as contrasted with confirmation), and a pervasive personal orientation of the explorer.' (Stebbins, 2001, p3).

3.1.6 Summarising Remarks

Having chosen Giddens' Structuration Theory as the ontology and epistemology of this research and having explained the basics of Grounded Theory methodology, all elements of the research design are now presented. To summarise, this research applies a dual focus, paying attention to BU and TD actors, while, in line with the chosen ST ontology and epistemology, aiming to transcend this dichotomy in the Duality of Structure (PAP).

The aim of the research is to increase the understanding of BU and TD actors' contribution to IDP protection and how their interaction increases this protection. With no adequate theory existing to research this, Grounded Theory also provides a methodology to develop a new theory to research BU, TD and Partnership Approaches to IDP protection. The new theory developed to this end is called the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). How PPA contributes to fulfilling the aim of this research, is explained in the operationalisation of the research in the next section of this chapter.

3.2 Research Operationalisation

The concept of IDP protection is a complex one. The Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) serves to determine the level of IDP protection in a given IDP crises, as well as, which actors are contributing, in which way, to improve IDP protection. In this section the operationalisation of PPA is discussed, starting with the presentation of the different operationalisation elements (subsection one). The second subsection focuses on the sampling procedures which are used in this research. Both the operationalisation elements and sampling procedures influence data collection, analysis and interpretation, which are discussed, together with data reporting, in the third subsection. Combining data collection, analysis, interpreting and reporting makes sense from a Grounded Theory methodological point of view. In this third subsection attention will also be paid data collection methods and the use of a translator.

3.2.1 Operationalisation Elements

The operationalisation of PPA is based on the principles of both quantitative and qualitative research. Operationalisation elements to be discussed are dimensions, indicators, triangulation and hypotheses. In the creation of the PPA, the identification of the eight components was inspired by the importance, according to quantitative researchers, of identifying dimensions (which capture the complexity of the concept) (Sarantakos, 2005, p139). Each component highlights an important element of IDP protection, while listing the indicators necessary to study that dimension. The indicators for each dimension are made up of the elements within the eight protection components of PPA. Each element is chosen for its relevance and makes up an intrinsic part of the component. All elements are needed for the component to reach its full protection potential (termed correspondence). The elements are empirically adequate

because they make up the component, allow for measuring the component's protection potential and enable cross case study comparison (Sarantakos, 2005, p142). Most indicators, with the exception of the protection continuum presented in component two, do not have empirical referents. This means that within PPA, most elements do not have a predetermined range within which they move (Sarantakos, 2005, p139).

For the operationalisation of research, triangulation is very important. However, by utilising Grounded Theory as a methodology many of the requirements of triangulation have already been met. This includes increasing the amount of data, enabling comparisons and increasing validity, credibility and utility (Sarantakos, 2005, p145-146). PPA is operationalised by time, concurrent and sampling triangulation, allowing multiple perspectives to be taken into account. Within PPA, time triangulation includes choosing case study countries in different displacement phases and asking interviewees about their protection concerns and activities in each phase. By always taking a BU and TD approach to IDP protection in each displacement phase, time triangulation is better described as concurrent time triangulation. PPA is also operationalised through sampling triangulation. This is because three case study country have been used, building upon multiples samples within each case study (Sarantakos, 2005, p145). The drawback of triangulation, and by comparison GT, is the difficulty to replicate the research, possible misuse by the researcher or not getting better results due to wrong research conditions (Sarantakos, 2005, p146)⁹⁷.

The decision to choose Grounded Theory and not Yin's Case Study methodology⁹⁸, even though three cases studies are used, is based on the following considerations. During the explorative work in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda, the five W-questions have been looked into. Within Case Study research the main emphasis is on the 'why' and 'how' questions. Only focusing on these questions was considered too limiting for this research. Especially since the main research question is a 'what' question (Yin, 2003, p1). Though case study research, similarly to GT, is concerned with studying reality in a holistic way, it also suffers from similar challenges relating to lack of rigor and generalizability (Yin, 2003, p2/10). The most important reason not to choose case study approach however, is the inability to separate phenomena from the context they are in. This might seem to contradict the reliance on Giddens, in which the interaction between Agency and Structure is being transcended in the Duality of Structure, but there is a marked difference. Within ST, Agency and Structure both have an important individual contribution to make to the Duality of Structure. Therefore, while operating together, they are separate entities too. This does not match the case study approach (Yin, 2003, p13). In addition to this, prior to departing to the field to collect information on the phenomena of this research (IDP protection) it was not yet clear what this phenomena

⁹⁷ For more information on triangulation please consult (Sarantakos, 2005, p145).

⁹⁸ The researcher acknowledges that other authors have also written on Case Study Methodology, such as Richard Stake or B. Flyvberg. Yin's point of view is presented here as he is considered an expert on this topic.

consisted of. Case study analysis requires this to be known from the Design phase onwards. As this was not the case the choice for GT was made (Yin, 2003, p14). In addition to having a clearly defined idea of the phenomena that is being researched, Case Study analysis also requires the researcher to have a preliminary theory before conducting research. Grounded Theory does not necessitate this, but believes theory develops during the research, which is exactly the way PPA developed (Yin, 2003, p28).

In this research, hypotheses have been developed very early on in the research and served to guide the research process. Additionally, the hypotheses indicate the general direction of the answer to the research question. This means the hypotheses are working hypotheses, because they consist of ‘preliminary assumptions’ about the research outcomes (Sarantakos, 2005, p148). The hypotheses are also directional (making concrete suggestions about the research question), as well as relational (showing the relation between BU and TD actors) (Sarantakos, 2005, p148). Due to the use of GT methodology, the normal criticisms on hypotheses, that they restrict the scope of the research and create bias in the research design, application or outcome, did not occur (Sarantakos, 2005, p149)⁹⁹. This concludes the discussion on the final operationalisation element (hypotheses). The next subsection discusses the sampling procedures used in this research.

3.2.2 Sampling

Having discussed the various operationalisation elements of this research in the previous subsection, this subsection focuses on the sampling procedures used for data collection. Grounded Theory methodology has a strong influence on this part the operationalisation of the research design. This is related to the fact that, prior to data collection many decisions regarding sampling could not be made as these decisions are inspired by the emerging theory. Nevertheless, still some important starting premises existed. These included the realisation that sampling was necessary as the target population was too large to interview in its totality (Mason, 1996, p84). Another starting premises was that the sample includes both BU and TD actors. This means that the target population consists of all people displaced by conflict, as well as the TD actors involved in their protection. Additionally, it was decided that the survey population equals the target population. The reason to sample within conflict affected areas is because these crises often have a more persistent impact, necessitating longer and more comprehensive coping mechanisms (BU) and protective measures (TD) (Hobfoll et al. in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p337). During the research, it became apparent that some BU actors did not like being identified (in general, not specifically related to this research) based on the label of being an IDP, which is why the more general description of the BU target population is used (Mason, 1996, p86) (Darcy and Collinson in Collinson et al., 2009, p39). The target

⁹⁹ For more information on hypotheses please consult (Sarantakos, 2005, p147-148).

population has not been narrowed down further to ensure that specific protection needs and concerns of each actor involved in IDP protection are taken into account. The size of the sample is decided by the researcher upon reaching data saturation. As is pointed out by Sarantakos the sample size should be ‘as large as necessary and as small as possible’ (2005, p170). For this research the sample size ended up being as large as shown in table 3.2.1.

Country/Location	Time Period	BU Interviews	TD Interviews
Bosnia	Summer 2009	16	22
New York	Summer 2010		15
Geneva	Summer 2011		15
Colombia	Summer 2012	18	30
Uganda	Summer 2013	46	61

Table 3.2.1: Sample Size per Research location

Data collected from BU actors consisted of conducting interviews with people who had been displaced by conflict in each of the three case study countries (Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda). Sampling of the TD actors in each case study country meant talking to representatives of the State, non-State and other Aid actors at local, regional and national level. Representatives of both groups were chosen in such a way as to get a broad overview of the BU and TD target/survey population (Sarantakos, 2005, p152). Inspired by Grounded Theory, the sample size in Uganda increased for both BU and TD actors. Nevertheless, the sample size is too small to provide a high level of accuracy or to make inductive generalisations. Instead, the sample size shows that an intense, in-depth method for data collection was used in line with a GT oriented methodology (Sarantakos, 2005, p171-172). Sampling decisions were also influenced by time, funding, security and staffing, as well as the most suitable times for interviewees to the interviewed (taking into account working hours, time in the fields and child rearing duties) (Sarantakos, 2005, p124).

In addition to GT-inspired sampling, probability and non-probability sampling were also used. As part of probability sampling, *simple random sampling* was applied in this research. This meant that each BU or TD actor had an equal chance of being selected as interviewee (Sarantakos, 2005, p154). A form of *Cluster sampling* was used in Colombia, as one of the ‘natural groups’ in which IDPs participated, were two NGO coordination organisations (Russell Bernard, 2000, p154) (Sarantakos, 2005, p160-161).

Area sampling was also used in this research as the three case study countries were selected from the target population after which, for each country, a specific geographic location was chosen within which individual BU and TD actors were randomly selected for interviews¹⁰⁰. At the national level area sampling in Bosnia lead to the selection of the Srebrenica area. Srebrenica was chosen for the severity of the crisis, its limited geographical size (making it suitable for explorative work) and the presence of Dutchbat (ensuring sufficient

¹⁰⁰ For more information on area sampling please consult (Sarantakos, 2005, p162) (Mason, 1996, p89).

literature was available). National area sampling in Colombia led to the selection of Bogota, with a specific focus on Soacha. Bogota is the largest IDP receiving city in the country. Bogota was also the place in which the newest Governmental IDP support system (the Dignifying Centres) was being rolled out. The presence of a large number of IDPs in a condensed area (Soacha) also made Bogota the ideal location for sampling. Area sampling in Uganda started with selecting a large geographical area, comprising of the whole of Northern Uganda. This area was then narrowed down to the districts of Gulu, Amuru, Nwoya, Pader, Lamor and Kitgum. In these districts the sample was further reduced by the vehicle movement of the NGO which assisted the researcher. In these areas, non-probability sampling was used.

In general, in order to identify the first interviewees in each of these three case study countries, *purposive sampling* was used. This included conducting a quick pre-interview before an interview started, to determine the 'suitability' of the interviewee for the research (ensuring the person was indeed an IDP displaced by conflict or a TD actor supporting IDPs). Additionally, events were attended where potential interviewees would be present. Once interviewees meeting the basic criteria deemed relevant for the research were identified the actual interview started (Sarantakos, 2005, p164). Once an initial BU or TD actor had been interviewed, *snowball sampling* was used to identify additional interviewees, until data saturation was determined by the researcher. Snowball sampling assisting in identifying IDPs, who were not easily recognisable as they, in all three case study countries at the time of interviewing, were no longer living in camps. An additional benefit of snowball sampling was that it made it easier to approach people because of the connection the researcher had made with the first interviewee (Sarantakos, 2005, p165-166).

The final form of sampling used in this research is *theoretical sampling*, a key component of Grounded Theory. Theoretical sampling was used because it allows sample units to be identified during field trips. Theoretical sampling started in Bosnia, continued in Colombia and was completed in Uganda. Sampling therefore was done on a cumulative basis (Strauss and Corbin, 1998, p203)¹⁰¹. Theoretical sampling was used for the development of the eight components of the Protection Pyramid Approach. Due to theoretical sampling, PPA emerged as a theory for this research. Theoretical sampling influenced but also was influenced by PPA. The emerging theory dictated where sampling would occur next. This mutually influencing interactive process continued until no divergent information came out of the interviews, which meant the data was saturated (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p61).

Upon departure to Bosnia Herzegovina only a partial theoretical framework existed. The pilot study in Bosnia identified the next step to be taken for the development of the theoretical framework, as well as providing the justification for interviewing IDPs living in and around Bogota. This group then became the next theoretical sample of the research (Glaser

¹⁰¹ For more information on theoretical sampling please consult (Mason, 1996, p94+100) (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p45) (Strauss and Corbin, 1998, p202) (Sarantakos, 2005, p167).

and Strauss, 1977, p47). Analysing the Colombia data, the eight component PPA started emerging as a theory, which was completed during the field trip to Uganda. The Colombian field trip showed the benefit of increasing the variety of actors, which, in line with theoretical sampling, translated into a larger BU and TD subgroup in the Ugandan field trip. Using theoretical sampling, IDP subgroups in Uganda were identified in geographically dispersed areas to ascertain that the collected information represented genuine IDP protection concerns. The geographical areas were selected based on their 'theoretical relevance', which included their wartime experiences and subsequent displacement patterns (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p49). The benefit of using theoretical sampling is based on the strong linkage between the data and the different categories (components) of the emerging theory (the Protection Pyramid Approach). The developed theory (PPA) is both theoretically strong, as well as applicable to real life (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p76). The way GT and theoretical sampling influenced the next steps in the research process is described in the subsection below.

3.2.3 The remaining Parts of the Research Process (Data Collection, Processing, Analysis, Interpretation and Reporting)

In this subsection, the remainder of the research process will be described, including data collection, processing, analysis, interpretation and reporting. As all these aspects of the research process mutually influence each other they are presented together. Many of the decisions, techniques and methods used to collect data from TD actors was similar in the three case study countries, and will be explained first. After this, the specific ways BU data was collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda will be dealt with.

In preparation for departure to each case study country I conducted desk research to determine which TD actors were present. Prior to departure I emailed all TD actors to try to secure as many meetings as possible. Once in country I continued emailing them, or calling them if possible. When I did not get any response, I paid them a visit, which often resulted in an interview (either immediately or by appointment later). Additionally, UNOCHA country information has been extremely helpful in obtaining an overview of TD actors in-country. I also searched for information on Protection Working Groups in a country. Governmental TD actors have, in general, been easy to find but extremely hard to secure appointments with. Going to the physical location where the Government offices were located and introducing myself to low level Governmental staff has been the most successful way to obtain interviews with higher level staff. Once my in-country network increased, through the increased number of interviews, this network also assisted me in finalising appointments with Governmental personnel. In all case study countries securing interviews with TD actors has been easier than getting in touch with BU actors. In all countries, TD interviews were often done prior to BU interviews, with TD interviews being helpful to secure BU interviews. In most cases, TD actor interviews were done without a translator, as people working in organisations spoke English.

All BU interviews, in all three cases study countries were done with a translator. In each country, I used a female translator, to ensure women felt secure to share everything that happened to them. Additional characteristics I looked for in my translator was rapport with the BU actors, either because she was an IDP herself or was very familiar with the IDP context and local settings. In Uganda, it was of crucial importance that the translator spoke several of the main languages used in the North. Affiliation with academia was preferable and was assured in two out of the three translators. In all three-case study countries the translators not only translated but also added cultural sensitivity to my questions if needed (Briggs, 1986, p45). The potential danger of asking culturally insensitive questions is however, according to McCracken, offset by the open and inquisitive nature with which a researcher from another culture approaching interviewees (McCracken, 1988, p22). Nevertheless, working with a translator for the first time made me aware of the difference in how they framed their questions (which became apparent from the answers). It took some getting used to these differences in personal/culturally determined question framing (Briggs, 1986, p95).

Prior to departing to Bosnia I developed an interview guide. Though never letting the guide dictate the natural interview flow, I relied more heavily on the guide during my fieldtrip to Bosnia than when interviewing in Uganda (Briggs, 1986, p97). This is because I became more familiar with the interview guide, internalising its contents. The interview guide was set up according to the following format. First, I started with an introduction of myself, after which I asked permission to record the interview. The opening question concerned an inquiry into the personal situation of the interviewee (in case of a BU interview) or an inquiry into the position of the TD actor (Krueger, 1998, p23). I then explained the topic of my research and introduced the revised protection definition. Before moving on to questions concerning this revised definition I asked ‘transition questions’ focusing on topics as non-discrimination, physical survival, and return (Krueger, 1998, p25). Afterwards I start asking key questions relating to rights, livelihoods and dignity. In the ‘ending questions’ I would ask the interviewee how they thought the three elements of the revised protection definition related to each other. The last question I always asked the interviewee was whether they had any questions for me (Krueger, 1998, p28). Given the fact that most people had no clear understanding on the concept of coping mechanisms, no direct probe was used to acquire information on this¹⁰². Instead it was distilled from the information provided in response to the other questions.

Collecting BU data in Bosnia started with the hospitality of a stranger, a Bosnian Muslim who was displaced from Srebrenica during the war and who had not yet returned. She

¹⁰² This means Haan’s ‘10 Coping Mechanisms’ and ‘Nine Coping Mechanism Scales’, Aldwin’s ‘Three General Coping and Health Models’, Folkman and Lazarus’ ‘Ways of Coping Checklist/Questionnaire’ or Endler and Parker’s ‘Coping Inventory for Stressful Situations’ were not used (Parker and Endler in Zeidner and Endler, 1996). Also, the Measurements of Coping presented by (Schwarzer and Schwarzer in Zeidner and Endler, 1996), Hobfoll and Lilly’s Conversation of Resources Theory (COR) (Hobfoll et al in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p323) and Krohne’s Model of Coping Modes (Krohne in Zeidner and Endler, 1996, p394) have not been taken into account.

offered her house in Tuzla to me. She also agreed to tell me her, and her family's displacement story. From this point on snowball sampling occurred. I met Bosnian Muslims in Tuzla and Srebrenica. At the same time I also interview Croatian and Serb people. I mostly interviewed people in the place they were staying, which included houses of the original inhabitants of Srebrenica, rundown flats or 'Collective Centres'¹⁰³. Problems with Transitional Justice and lack of houses, together with a preference to stay in an area where a person belongs to the ethnic majority had, at the time of interviewing, prevented most people in the Collective Centres to return to their areas of origin. According to the IDMC only slightly more than halve of the displaced population had returned at the end of 2013 (IDMC, 2013).

The stories narrated in Bosnia, especially those of BU actors, were so shocking that I kept a field diary. In addition to the field diary, interviews and the literature study, I also visited Potočari, the Dutchbat base to which most inhabitants of Srebrenica fled when the city was attacked in July 1995. These observations enabled me to better understand the BU and TD actors whom I interviewed, and tailor my questions accordingly.

In Colombia, the second case study country, getting into contact with BU actors occurred through a TD actor I interviewed. This TD actor did amazing work collecting and disseminating information on IDPs. During the interview, they alerted me to a conference organised by the commission following IDP public policy. The conference was on the impact of public policy on IDP social and territorial protection. I attended this conference where many IDPs were present. During the breaks, I conducting short pre-interviews and realised the large pool of potential BU contacts. After this conference snowball sampling was used to select BU actors. As I also used observation as a research method I met most IDPs in their preferred surrounding, which for most BU actors, meant meeting them in the offices of the local NGO they had set up. In many cases BU and TD interviews were therefore intertwined.

The small local NGOs were united in two NGO cooperation organisations. BU actors were also identified by spending time at one of these NGO cooperations. My translator and I were also invited to a retreat, organised by this TD actor. At this retreat, in between their formal sessions, we had ample opportunity to interview BU actors. Another way to reach BU actors was through the Government IDPs support system. Upon arrival in Bogota, IDPs are required to go to Units of Assistance (UAO) or Dignifying Centres (DC) to register for assistance. Together with my translator we visited a UAO and a DC to get to know BU actors and learn about how TD actors contributed to IDP protection. Observing the functioning of these UAO/DC was instrumental for understanding Colombian protection context and culture.

Getting into contact with BU actors in Uganda, my third case study country, was also facilitated by a TD actor. The data collection process in Uganda was simplified by the existing

¹⁰³ Initially, just after the war, Collective Centres were housed in existing premises, like hotels. Later on, special accommodations were built to provide a place to stay to those who were forced to flee in the war and whose houses have been destroyed.

research connections Professor Jacques Zeelen had already established in country¹⁰⁴. Given the fact that in Uganda around 98% of the target population (inhabitants of Northern Uganda) had been displaced, locating BU actors to interview seemed easier. However, the large local differences in displacement patterns, together with extremely poor public transport, still posed serious challenges to interview BU actors. Therefore, transport assistance offered by an international NGO was accepted. The NGO did daily runs to almost all districts in Northern Uganda which allowed me to use area sampling as I deemed appropriate. Though I worked completely autonomously from the NGO, travelling with the NGO created potential difficulties (such as creating false expectations). I was aware of this problem and took care to clearly explain to the BU actors the terms of the interview. Additionally, travelling with the NGO created the possibility to triangulate the obtained information, as the NGO had many years of work experience with IDPs in the country. An additional benefit of travelling with the NGO was the opportunity to meet people in their local surroundings, which were sometimes very remote. Because of this I was able to observe and interview at the same time.

Triangulation of information, guided by the GT methodology, was one of the techniques used to process, analyse and interpret the collected information. During each fieldtrip, the collected data was processed and preliminarily analysed at the end of each day to determine the next necessary steps in data collection. Data processing consisted of taking the interview off the voice recorder and filing it on my laptop, memory stick and online. Though many IDPs did not care about their anonymity, the interviews were all given a code and a number to protect their identity. In a digital logbook, IDP interviews were coded as BU plus a number, while interviews with the State, non-State or Other Aid Actors were coded as TD plus a number. In other words, serial indexing was used (Mason, 1996, p111). The numbering was continuous, no case study differentiation was made in coding. Interviewee anonymity was further ensured by only using direct quotes sporadically in the data presentation and analysis chapters, even though exemplar quotes are a key characteristic of Grounded Theory (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p229) (Russell Bernard, 2000, p452).

Data analysis in the field was done for two purposes. Firstly, data analysis served to determine the extent to which the interview contributed to the emerging theory. The development of the eight components and their elements was a process that advanced during the data collection process. The components inspired the data collection process while at the same time also guided the data analysis part (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p36). The interaction between data collection and analysis led to the second purpose of the field-based data analysis, which was to determine which additional actors (BU or TD) had to be interviewed, and identify interview locations. In between field trips in-depth data analysis took place. Being away from hectic field work, data processing included coding (using open, axial and selective

¹⁰⁴ As Professor in Lifelong Learning at GSG/RUG he set up an ingenious system in which his PhD candidates supervised MA students who were collecting data on their MA thesis on a topic chosen by the PhD candidates.

coding) the interviews with the emerging theory at the stage it was at that point (Sarantakos, 2005, p349-350). During these periods, in between field trips, data was read in a literal, interpretive and reflexive way (Mason, 1996, p109). This included first determining the structure of the interview, which meant determining to which components and their elements the interview provided input to. After which the individual BU or TD phrases belonging to a component or component element were analysed (Briggs, 1986, p104-105). One of the difficulties of analysing the interview data in this manner was how to ensure contextuality (while also maintaining anonymity) (Briggs, 1986, p107). Having been immersed in the subject area during the field visits, as well as being sufficiently detached to the data in between the field visits, PPA developed most optimally (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p226).

Data analysis was further aided by the Constant Comparative Method, which meant comparing data from Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda. As PPA was still developed during the different field trips BU and TD interviews were consulted multiple times as new categories developed. This included re-coding part of the earlier collected data. Specific parts of the interviews (called incidents) collected in the different case study countries often applied to more than one component (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p105). The different incidents collected for the different components lead to the different elements (i.e., the theoretical properties) of the eight components. Data collection and development of components and their elements went hand in hand until theoretical saturation of components was determined by the researcher (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p106-107). This meant that no new information relating to each of the eight components came up, the elements within the components were well developed and the relation between the components and the elements were clear (Strauss and Corbin, 1998, p212). With the ongoing process of data collection, the components and their elements became clearer as incidents no longer necessitates the development of new components or elements. When outstanding incidents were recorded, previously collected data was consulted to determine whether a new component or component element needed to be created. With no new components or elements coming up, components became more integrated and PPA emerged. PPA was limited to eight components, to make the theory more manageable, abstract and therefore applicable to multiple situations (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p110).

By having a broader selection of BU and TD subgroups and increasing the number of subgroups in Uganda, the scope of the emerging theory increased, lifting the theory from the substantive level to that of a formal theory. Increasing the subgroups increased the comparative analysis of groups, which made the development of formal theory easier (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p82)¹⁰⁵. As a result, analysing the Uganda data showed the need for more abstract components within the PPA. This not only lead to an inclusion of formal theories like

¹⁰⁵ The reason why increasing the number of subgroups makes the formation of formal theory easier is because by having more, diverse, comparison groups, generalisation increases as does the qualification for the theory. Through this process the theory becomes more grounded and more complex (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p85).

Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory, but also resulted in increasing the categories of the emerging theory to the eight-different component of which the PPA is now comprised. The abstract nature of ST also increased the flexibility of the emerging theory, making inter and intra case study comparisons possible (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p54).

The more geographically dispersed BU subgroups in Uganda, though depicting some regional differences, overall presented similar IDP protection concerns (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p48). This finding, retrospectively, validated the sampling approach taken in Colombia to focus the research to a more limited geographical area. The diversity of data due to the wide array of BU and TD subgroups in the diverse case study countries, together with the decision to increase the number of subgroups during the Ugandan fieldtrip determined the saturation of each category (component) (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p61). The more diverse groups sampled in Uganda allowed for what GT calls diverging 'slices of data'. Other slices of data utilised included literature review and observation. By utilising divergent slices of data, different viewpoints were taken on the data, enabling a better development of PPA's components (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p65) (Mason, 1996, p143).

In the development of formal theory more data was collected for some components than others. For example, the component dealing with Giddens' Structuration Theory necessitated less data as it was on a higher, more abstract level. Component three and four however, were more closely linked to BU and TD actors' actual activities and more data was collected for these categories (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p70). Based on the data collection component three and four could be considered core categories, however in PPA each category receives equal attention. The development of PPA is the outcome the continuous interaction between theory development and data collection and analysis (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p43).

A difficulty associated with formulating formal theory was the danger of developing a conceptual framework and fitting the data into that framework (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p92). This did not occur during the development of PPA as the eight-component framework of PPA was developed during, and as a result of, the three data collection processes. The formulation of PPA based on the data collection in the different case study countries ensured that PPA was separated from time space restrictions and able to function on an abstract level, which increases its powers of prediction and explanation (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p93).

In the course of the research, theoretical sampling, coding and analysis were done simultaneously. This approach resulted in the re-coding of part of the collected data, but giving the familiarity with the categories this process of 'systematic coding' was less time-consuming than the initial coding (Glaser and Strauss, 1977, p71-72). The Bosnia data was not reworked as Bosnia was an exploratory study. The result of the re-coding, re-analysing and re-interpreting exercise of the Colombia and Uganda data lead to the actual Protection Pyramid Approach. This means that the Protection Pyramid Approach is presented both in theoretical format (chapter two), as well as in an adapted format (chapter seven) based on the information collected in the field (chapters four to six). The differences between PPA in the two chapters

is not great; the key difference between the two chapters is the grounding of chapter seven PPA in the empirical data presented as part of chapters four to six.

The Protection Pyramid Approach takes the form of a model, as can be seen in component eight, where all seven previous components come together and interact in order to contribute to improving IDP protection. Nevertheless, PPA is also an Approach, as each of the seven components prior to component eight has value in their own right. Each component contributes to improving IDP protection in its own way. The actual presentation of the research also follows the eight-component approach of PPA. This means that, with the exception of the first and this chapter, all chapters are organised along the eight components.

3.2.4 Summarising Remarks

This chapter has shown how the Protection Pyramid Approach (presented in chapter two) is operationalised to enable the collection of empirical data in the three case study countries. In order to collect empirical data, the first section of this chapter presented the research design. The choice for Structuration Theory as the ontology and epistemology of this research ensures that empirical data will be collected for both Bottom Up and Top Down actors. The use of Structuration Theory allowed the analysis of the BU and TD data to transcend into the Partnership Approach to Protection.

The actual development of PPA is strongly influenced by Grounded Theory methodology. This methodology dictates that data collection (including various sampling decisions and research methods), occurs simultaneously to data analysis, interpretation and the reporting of the research findings. This is why, though some elements of the research process are dealt with separately, most are presented in one subsection. Utilising a GT-methodology meant that PPA first developed as a substantive theory and then, due to the large and diverse amounts of data collected in the case study countries, into a formal theory. As a formal theory, the Protection Pyramid Approach consists of eight components (called categories in GT-terminology) with corresponding elements (called properties). Comprehensive, adequate and dignified IDP protection can only be provided if all eight components of PPA are used and fulfilled.

Having explained the research design and operationalisation, the use of the Protection Pyramid Approach in the collection of empirical data in Colombia and Uganda can now be presented in the next chapters. Chapter four presents the BU data set for Colombia and Uganda, while chapter five does the same for the TD data. In line with the formal theory which PPA has become, the data in each of the following chapters is presented according to the eight components of PPA.

Chapter Four: BU Data Presentation & Analysis - Colombia & Uganda

In this chapter the data collected in Colombia and Uganda are presented and analysed in order *'to document and analyse strategies being adopted by IDPs to protect themselves in CPEs'*. The data collected from BU actors in both case study countries is used to determine the protection potential of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) presented in chapter two. On the one hand this means that PPA is used to analyse the data collected in Colombia and Uganda. The result of this exercise is visualised in the figure containing all PPA component (elements) and presented in the eighth component for each case study country. On the other hand, PPA is used to determine to what extent BU actors are able to contribute to their own protection and how this is done. The information collected through this analysis is used in chapter six, after a similar exercise has been conducted for TD actors, to analyse the effect of BU and TD actors working together to contribute to improved IDP protection.

In this chapter the primary focus is on the protection strategies employed by BU actors. Having said this, BU actors' appreciation (or lack thereof) of TD actors' activities are also taken into account. For each PPA component the activities and challenges experienced by BU actors aiming to contribute to improving the true essence of IDP protection is presented for both case study countries. This is done in the first two subsections. In the third subsection of each PPA component a comparison between the BU data collected in Colombia and Uganda is conducted.

The discussion of the eight PPA components based on the BU data collected in both case study countries contributes to answering the main research question of this thesis which reads: *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'*. The analysis of the BU data commences with the presentation of the findings relevant to PPA component one in the first section below.

4.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology

The goal of the first component of the Protection Pyramid Approach is to give an overview of the protection culture and context in the two case study countries. In order to do so the protection criteria and typologies, presented in chapter two, are applied to the BU data collected in Colombia and Uganda. The next two subsections present, for each case study countries, the adherence to and use of the protection criteria and typologies, based on the Bottom Up data collected. The third subsection compares and contrasts the findings. The goal of this first section is to determine the extent to which BU actors in both countries feel they are protected, and if and how this differs between Colombia and Uganda. The ten protection criteria and typologies are summarised in figure 4.1.

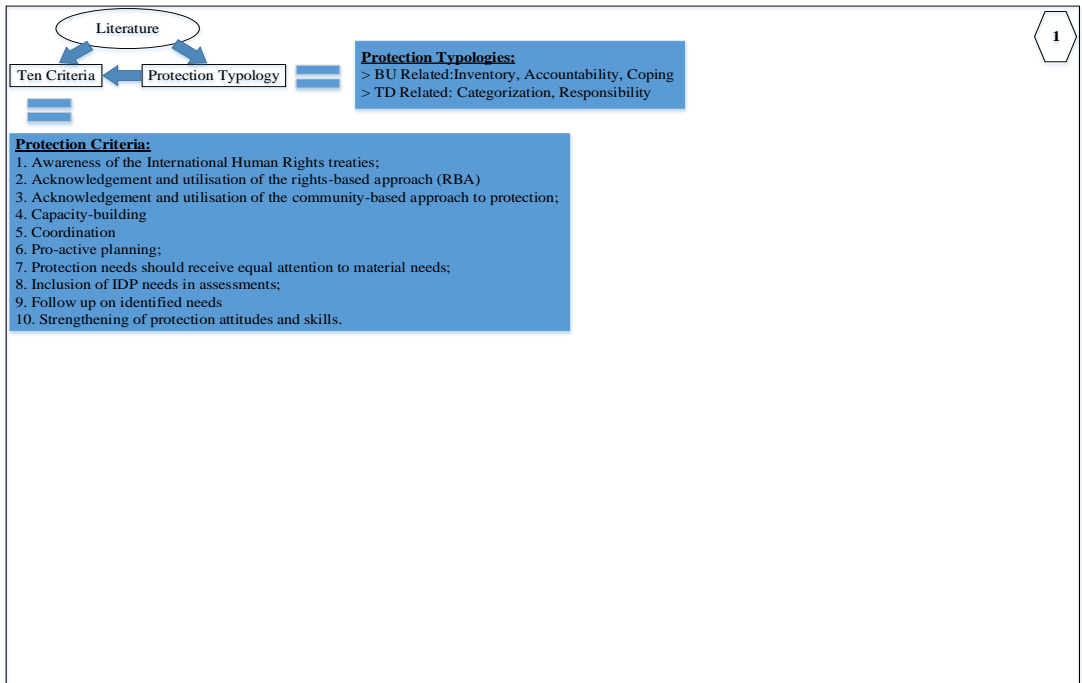


Figure 4.1: PPA Component One - Protection Criteria and Typologies

4.1.1 Colombia

Analysing the Bottom Up data collected in Colombia the fulfilment of Protection Criteria one showed that about half the IDPs knew they had Rights prior to displacement and the other half only found out during displacement. For criteria two, BU actors mentioned that the Government did not adequately fulfil its responsibilities as duty-bearer due to lack of knowledge on International HR Treaties. Additionally, the Government did not always treat IDPs respectfully and was accused of discrimination while not providing IDPs with assistance.

Alleged linkages between the Government and the paramilitary as well as criticisms on how the Government led the paramilitary demobilisation process decrease BU actor's perceptions of the Government as a responsible duty-bearer. At the same time, the Government lives up to its responsibilities, offering IDPs access to education and land restitution. BU actors, as rights holders, have been actively claiming their rights by making *tutellas*. The overall conclusion on the fulfilment of criteria two is therefore both positive and negative. This is not the case for community-based protection (criteria three) in which many positive examples were noted. These included starting a local peace process, setting up a civil resistance group, a social support network and IDP organisations. There were only a few cases in which a community was unresponsive to IDP needs.

In a similar way criteria four (capacity-building) was also more fulfilled than unfulfilled as BU actors' capacity was increased by education, for example on making *tutellas* or learning fight for their rights. Protection criteria five and six (coordination and pro-active planning) were not fulfilled according to BU actors, while the fulfilment of criteria seven was challenged by IDPs' negative perception of protection. Though BU actors' material needs were fulfilled according to criteria seven, the way in which this was done was not protection enhancing. This can be seen most clearly in the example of BU actors preferring to own than rent a house. BU actors did not indicate being included in needs assessments (criteria eight) but did mention that the follow up on their needs was weak, negatively influencing criteria nine. BU actors also did not notice a strengthening of protection attitudes or skills (criteria ten). In summary, criteria one and three are best fulfilled regardless of serious shortcomings while criteria two, four, seven and nine are partially fulfilled and criteria five, six, eight and ten are not fulfilled at all.

Moving on to analysing the extent to which the five Protection Typologies are useful to determine whether BU actors feel IDPs are protected, it was observed that the BU typologies were used more often than the TD ones. The lack of knowledge of the Government on International HR Treaties, as well as the Government's shortcomings as RBA duty-bearer, show TD actors are not fully able to use the TD Typologies of Responsibility to contribute to IDP protection. The far reaching national IDP legislation developed by the Government, however, does show how this TD actor uses the TD typology of Categorisation. The positive effects of this typology are nevertheless, decreased by shortcomings in implementation of the far-reaching legislation. Of the three BU protection typologies, BU actors in Colombia gave examples which showed the use of the typologies of Coping and Accountability. Though more attention on coping mechanisms will be provided in section six of this chapter, examples of coping mechanisms used by IDPs when displacing, making a denouncement/declaration, setting up IDP support network, civil resistance groups and IDP organisations. The extensive use of making a *tutella*, shows the importance BU actors give to Accountability. BU actors did not make much use of the Inventory typologies as they, in their own words, had 'lost everything they had worked so hard for'.

All in all, based on the protection criteria and typologies, it can be concluded that IDPs in Colombia were not adequately protected, even though numerous protection activities were engaged in by both BU and TD actors, according to the analysis of the BU empirical data.

4.1.2 Uganda

Similarly, to Colombia, the protection culture and context in Uganda was determined by utilising PPA component one to analyse the BU empirical data collected in Uganda. Starting with the protection criteria IDPs in Uganda indicated that they were not very aware of existing International Human Rights Treaties. This was the case even though IDPs received training on their rights, which increased their capacity (criteria four). Regardless of the training, IDPs were not actively demanding their rights, thereby not exercising an important component of their responsibilities as rights-holders. IDPs were, however, critical about the activities of the duty-bearers, as they were of the opinion the Government did not fulfil their rights. Other TD actors, like the LRA, further challenged their protection due to their violent attacks and other protection decreasing activities such as looting, aiming and kidnapping. Both aspects of criteria two (RBA) therefore did not positively contribute to IDP protection. Due to the extremely large number of inhabitants of Northern Uganda displaced by the conflict, community-based approaches to protection (criteria three) did not feature in the BU data, even though family is mentioned as an important coping mechanism for IDPs.

The TD-initiated movement into ‘protected villages’ could have positively contributed to IDP protection if coordination and pro-active planning (criteria five and six) had been applied. However, IDPs reported that the forced and violent move into the camps at very short notice, decreased rather than increased their protection. The lack of physical protection in the camps, as well as lack of food and other basic necessities, show that protection and material needs were equally ignored, meaning criteria seven was not fulfilled. None of the interviewed IDPs mentioned anything which indicated the fulfilment of the remaining protection criteria. In summary, it can be concluded that in Uganda, according to the analysis of the BU data utilising PPA component one, most protection criteria were not fulfilled and BU actors felt IDPs were not protected.

Given the negative appreciation of the protection criteria, it is not surprising that protection typologies were not utilised much. The clear exception to this observation pertains to the BU typology of Coping. While the discussion of coping mechanisms will occur in section six, coping mechanisms utilised by IDPs consisted, amongst others, of: displacing, staying in the bush, sleeping in different places at night, relying on family and friends. IDPs did not use the BU typology of Accountability, due to their weak contribution to the Rights-based approach and lack of HR knowledge. In relation to the BU typology Inventory, the short notice of the move into ‘protected villages’, prevented IDPs from taking many of their belongings with them. Determining the use and strength of TD protection typologies, BU

actors did not mention the use of the TD typology of Categorisation, regardless of the existing national and regional IDP legislation. Though BU actors did point out that they were of the opinion that the Government did not fulfil its legal obligation towards IDPs. According to BU actors, TD actors used the TD typology of Responsibility when providing rights training to IDPs (who were then required to pass this information on to other IDPs). Nevertheless, the lack of awareness of International HR treaties, and the weak role of rights-holders in RBA, decreased the positive contribution BU actors hoped TD actors would make to IDP protection.

In summary, though IDP protection was increased through training, which increased capacity and helped fulfil rights, not many of the protection criteria were fulfilled. The minimal and challenged contribution of TD actors under the TD protection typologies of Responsibility and Categorisation forced BU actors to rely on the BU protection typology of Coping. The protection culture and context for BU actors in Uganda therefore looks bleak.

4.1.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component One

Comparing the protection culture and context in the two case study countries shows that, based on the analysing of BU data utilising PPA component one, the situation for IDPs in Colombia is marginally better than that of IDPs in Uganda. The reason for this is that more protection criteria are fulfilled in Colombia than Uganda and the TD protection typologies in Colombia had a stronger, positive, effect on IDP protection than in Uganda. Nevertheless, the challenges to IDP protection in both countries are similar, with both countries suffering from lack of knowledge on legislation. Interestingly in Uganda this shortcoming was noticed in BU actors, while in Colombia it was pinpointed to the TD actors. These shortcomings in both countries exist regardless of the presence of elaborate IDP legislation in Colombia and (though to a lesser extent) in Uganda.

Additionally, BU actors highlighted the shortcomings of the Government in both countries. In Colombia, this meant that BU actors pointed out the lack of implementation of legislation, while BU actors in Uganda spoke in more general terms about Governmental legal shortcomings. These shortcomings not only decreased the protective capacity of the TD typology of Categorisation, it also had a negative effect on protection criteria two (RBA). This negative effect is compounded in Uganda, by a lack of the BU Accountability typology, in which rights-holders do not claim their rights from duty-bearers. This is markedly different in Colombia where IDPs use *tutellas* to force duty-bearers to live up to their responsibility.

In Colombia Community-based approaches to protection (criteria three) are used a lot by BU actors while this is not the case in Uganda. In both countries, an extent of capacity building (criteria four) takes place, though this is larger in Colombia than in Uganda. Another similarity between both case study countries is the importance of protection vis-à-vis material needs. In Colombia, the example of the difference between owning or renting a house showed that TD actors did not fulfil criteria seven as they prioritised the material aspect of owning a

house over the perception of protection related to ownership. In Uganda material and protection needs were both ignored. A final similarity between both countries is the weak or non-existing fulfilment of the remaining protection criteria.

Comparing the use and protection increasing effect of protection typologies in both countries showed that BU protection typologies (especially Coping) were valued more than TD ones. BU actors in both case study countries mentioned the TD typology of Responsibility, but emphasizing a lack of knowledge and implementation. The BU typology of Inventory is non-existent in both countries, while the Accountability typology only exists in Colombia, where it is well developed and used a lot.

The analysis in this section showed that, in both case study countries, PPA component one was useful to determine the protection context and culture in Colombia and Uganda. Analysing the BU data in both countries through PPA component one showed that the protection context and culture in Colombia was marginally better than in Uganda, with BU actors indicated a higher level of IDP protection in Colombia than Uganda. The usefulness of PPA to analyse the BU data and its effect on IDP protection in relation to component two is presented in the next section.

4.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

In this section the second component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) is used to analyse the data collected from BU actors in Colombia and Uganda. This means the empirical data is analysed to identify what BU actors consider their ‘felt’ needs and which ‘perceived’ needs they believe TD actors identify for them. The greater the overlap between ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs the greater the protection potential of ‘derived’ needs. For these needs to materialise BU and TD actors need to cooperate in the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). BU/TD cooperation within PAP moves along the protection continuum running from soft protection cooperation in which protection is absent to hard protection cooperation, at the top of the pyramid, where IDPs are fully protected. The needs that are identified, belonging to either BU or TD actors can also be represented by the two sides of the academic dualisms identified in chapter two and shown in blue boxes in figure 4.2. Using PPA component two to analyse the BU data collected in Colombia and Uganda to determine the extent to which IDPs are protected is presented in subsections one and two. In subsection three the findings of Colombia and Uganda are compared and contrasted to each other.

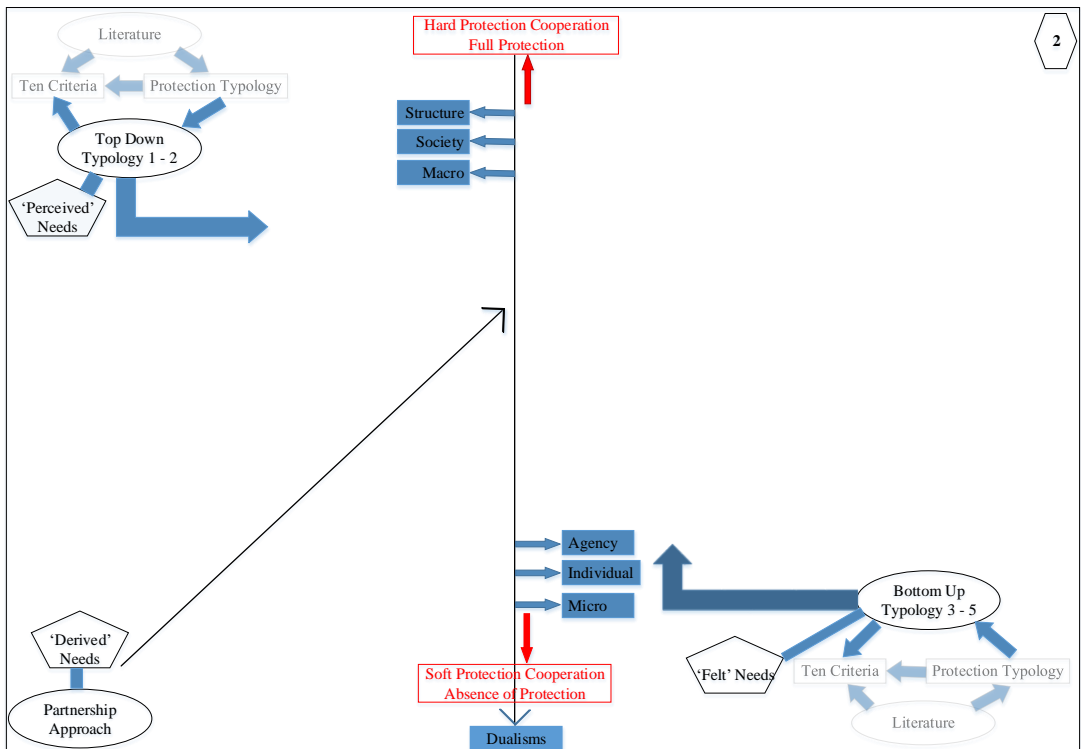


Figure 4.2: PPA Component Two - Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

4.2.1 Colombia

In this subsection, it is first determined who the different protection providers in Colombia are, according to the BU actors, and how they contribute to IDP protection by presenting their ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs. The success of BU and TD cooperation is discussed as part of PAP and the corresponding ‘derived’ needs. BU/TD cooperation can then be pinpointed along the protection continuum to visualize the extent of IDP protection in Colombia.

BU actors who have both a positive and a negative effect on IDP protection are friends, strangers, employers and house owners. While employers have a more or less equally positive as negative effect, strangers and house owner are more negative than positive contributors to IDP protection. This situation is reversed for friends. People from the same town or village and other IDPs only have a positive effect on IDP protection. BU actors also acknowledge their own contribution to IDP protection. TD actors which have both a positive and negative effect on IDP protection (in about equal division) are the Government and the military. The family is identified as a TD actor which has a more positive than negative effect, while illegal armed groups and multi-national companies are TD actors which only negatively contribute to IDPs’ protection. Opposed to this IDP organisations, the church, NGOs and the ICRC only positively contribute to the protection of IDPs.

Focusing on ‘felt’ needs, BU actors were of the opinion that IDPs were most protected if they owned (not rented) a house and had access to their land with the corresponding property titles. IDPs preferred not be classified as an IDP due to the negative stigma attached to it. BU actors’ ‘felt’ needs also included receiving money for productive projects and having work instead of receiving assistance. At the same time, BU actors indicated that IDPs needed assistance (consisting of food, rent and money) and being provided in a timely and dignified manner. The Government should follow up on identified needs, increase their interest and attention to IDPs, provide IDPs with information, prevent discrimination and improve education to its employees to be better able to protect IDPs. Still IDPs distrusted the army and police and set up small peace processes themselves. Another strong ‘felt’ need was the need for improved security, this did not only include physical security but also the Guarantee of Non Repetition (*Garantía No Repetición*), allowing IDPs to return. Other ‘felt’ needs were the possibility for IDPs to claim their rights and take care of their families. IDPs also felt the need to set up IDP organisations and social network, to protect themselves but also to make their suffering known to the world.

‘Perceived’ needs which contributed to increased IDP protection were the elaborate IDP legislation. The slow and insufficient implementation of this legislation did however decrease the protective capacity of this ‘perceived’ need. Other ‘perceived’ needs BU actors felt were identified by TD actors were the three months assistance (which included food and rent money), the land restitution process and the fact that the Government was trying to live up to its responsibilities vis-à-vis IDPs. The fact that many TD actors wanted to have the land

of the IDPs, with illegal armed groups even giving IDPs ultimatums to leave their house and land or be killed, negatively impacted IDP protection. A TD ‘perceived’ need also included the importance of setting up IDP organizations and social networks, providing the IDPs with support, safety, jobs and access to their culture.

Analysing the overlap between BU ‘felt’ and TD ‘perceived’ needs it can be observed how BU and TD actors mention a number of similar topics but differ in their understanding or fulfilment. Topics which BU and TD actors both indicated as important for IDP protection are housing, land and assistance. According to BU and TD actors adequate housing is crucial for IDP protection, but disagreement exists on what this constitutes. BU actors want to own a house, while TD actors believe renting a house is equally protection enhancing. As a result of this disagreement, PAP is suboptimal, meaning BU and TD do not engage in hard protection cooperation and IDP protection is located below the top of the protection continuum. Similar suboptimal PAP is observed in relation to land. BU and TD actors both acknowledge the importance of land. The land restitution process could be a good example of hard protection cooperation but because it started amidst conflict, IDPs who want to return home, do not feel secure enough and do not claim their land. A final example of positive, though incomplete PAP, exists in relation to assistance. BU actors indicated they need assistance, but would have preferred receiving it in a different shape and form (money for productive projects, instead of standing in line). An opportunity for hard protection cooperation and full protection is lost.

In the BU data, other examples of BU/TD cooperation were also observed, but because in these cases TD actors’ ‘perceived’ needs dominated BU actors’ ‘felt’ needs, the resulting PAP and ‘derived’ needs were negative. An example is the IDP registration process. In order to obtain assistance and be eligible for land restitution IDPs have to make a declaration. This process was felt to be long, bureaucratic and unnecessarily painful (as IDPs were forced to relive their displacement and related traumas). It also labelled people as IDP, which is not appreciated because of the associated negative stigma. This BU/TD interaction, therefore resulted in a negative PAP, negatively contributing to IDP protection and therefore located in the bottom half of the protection continuum. In the next subsection, the protection providers, needs and contributions to IDP protection for Uganda are presented.

4.2.2 Uganda

Similarly, to the previous subsection, BU and TD actors providing IDP protection in Uganda, according to the BU data, are presented. Their ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs are discussed as well as the extent to which they succeed in cooperating, captured within the PAP/‘derived’ needs. The more optimal BU/TD cooperation within PAP, the higher along the protection continuum this cooperation is located and the greater the contribution to IDP protection.

BU actors identified themselves and individuals, such as a teacher, referent, member of LC and even a rebel commander for their purely positive contribution to IDP protection.

Individuals mentioned by BU actors who only had a negative contribution were a camp commandant and food registrar. All other BU actors, such as friends, strangers, neighbour and people in the village/town IDPs came from, had both a positive and negative influence. TD actors which had a two-folded influence on IDP protection were the Government and its army and the family and community, though the latter two actors were a more positive than negative force. NGOs, the Red Cross and the church were regarded as only having a positive influence on IDP protection, while the LRA only had a negative influence.

Based on the analysis of the BU data different 'felt' needs were identified for IDPs to be protected. These 'felt' needs included assistance (consisting of shelter, food and farming equipment) but also being able to help each other. Being able to farm was an important 'felt' need, necessitating the end of land wrangling practices. IDPs also indicated a need for security and access to education. During the war, IDPs did not like being ordered into camps, but would have preferred the freedom of choice (choosing between the camp, their villages or being in the bush). In the camps IDPs felt a need for the freedom of movement. Other 'felt' needs centred around the emotional needs of IDPs, including receiving more attention from TD actors, and more respect from the Government and its soldiers. Some BU actors indicated a 'felt' need for psycho-social support, while others would have preferred the possibility to refuse it. BU actors also wanted to let go of the past, return and no longer be seen as IDPs.

Analysis the BU data, the following 'perceived' needs were identified. The most important one being physical protection from the Government and its army. The Government should also have sufficient knowledge on International Human Rights Treaties. Any protection activities engaged in by TD actors should also make full use of TD actors' potential. Other 'perceived' need relating to TD actors included increasing BU actors' Rights knowledge and fulfilment. At the same time, more practical 'perceived' needs were listed such as material assistance, which included clearing landmines and providing shelter. More emotional 'perceived' needs mentioned were counselling and receiving trust from TD actors.

Comparing the BU and TD actors' 'felt' and 'perceived' needs based on the analysis of the BU data, indicates that there is overlap on some topics, creating the possibility for PAP. One of these topics is the need for shelter. BU actors needed to rebuild their houses upon returning from the camps and the TD actors provided them with the necessary materials. This is an example of an optimal PAP, in which the hard protection cooperation between BU and TD actors' positions PAP and 'derived' needs at the top of the protection continuum. The need, indicated by BU actors, for receiving more attention and trust from TD actors, was fulfilled when the Government came to the camps to talk to the IDPs to get their advice. This too, is an example of optimal PAP leading to full protection.

Unfortunately, there are also example of suboptimal or negative PAP. To start with the former. Both BU and TD actors identified a need for security. TD actors fulfilled this need by ordering IDPs into camps. Both the timing of the move (before the harvest season) as well as the manner in which the move occurred (forcefully) was not in line with BU's 'felt' need

for protection, choice and respect. The opportunity for optimal PAP was therefore lost. Negative examples of PAP can be seen in the requirement of TD actors for BU actors to fight in 'Bow and Arrow Brigades'. Though there is overlap on the topic of security (in which both actors want IDPs to be protected) the manner in which the need is fulfilled is not in line with BU preferences, hampering the manifestation of PAP. Another example of a negative PAP occurred in relation to food. BU actors needed food and were able, in the camps, to register for it. Due to corrupt food registrars, some BU actors however were not provided with food. The lack of cooperation between BU and TD prevented hard cooperation and PAP leading to full protection, instead even decreasing IDP protection. Similarities (and differences) between protection providers and needs are also observed in the comparison between the two case study countries as presented in the next subsection.

4.2.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Two

Comparing and contrasting the protection providers identified by BU actors in both case study countries shows that more or less the same kind of actors are active (either positively or negative) in both countries. In both case study countries, the BU data shows that IDPs contribute to their own protection, though this is slightly more pronounced in Colombia than in Uganda. Another clear similarity between both countries was the acknowledgement that the Government, and its army, both positively and negatively influenced IDP protection, while the insurgent force (either the illegal armed groups in Colombia or the LRA in Uganda) were, in both cases, only a negative influence on protection.

Similarities can also be observed between the 'felt' needs identified by BU actors in both countries. In both Colombia as well as Uganda the importance of land, assistance, rights, respect, security, family and not wanting to be labelled as an IDP were noted. Additionally, the importance of housing was mentioned. However, in the same way as BU and TD actors within Colombia valued the protective capacity of housing differently, this was also the case for the inter-case study comparison. In Colombia, more importance was placed on housing than in Uganda. Differences in 'felt' needs were also seen between both countries. In Uganda BU actors identified the need for education, freedom of movement and choice for the possibility of psycho-social assistance. These topics were not mentioned in Colombia. In Colombia, the issue of return was not mentioned (even though IDPs wanted to return) as this was not yet considered a possibility. Instead, in Colombia a strong 'felt' need existed to set up IDP organisations or social networks, which was not identified in Uganda.

TD actors' 'perceived' needs, as identified within the BU data overlapped in relation to problems with land. However, though both countries experienced land problems, the nature of the problems differed. In Colombia land problems were related to the land restitution programme, which was introduced regardless of the country still being in conflict. In Uganda land wrangling practices constituted the main problems with land. 'Perceived' needs also

differed in relation to setting up IDP organisations (Colombia) and counselling (Uganda). Similarities between ‘perceived’ needs centred around the importance of rights, material assistance and the need for the Government to fulfil its responsibility vis-à-vis IDPs.

The extent to which IDPs were protected in both countries due to the (theoretical (based on chapter two)) suggested interaction between BU and TD actors in PAP and the corresponding ‘derived’ needs showed a difference between the quantity and quality of PAP in the two countries. Colombia had a higher quantity of positive PAP cases, the quality was lower (no purely positive PAP but suboptimal PAPs). In Uganda, the quantity of positive PAP was lower but those PAPs that existed were purely positive. Comparing the number of negative PAP in the two countries, Uganda had a higher quantity of negative PAP compared to Colombia. In conclusion, the analysis of the BU data in both case study countries showed that PPA component two is useful to determine IDP protection in either country. The analysis showed that the level of IDP protection in Uganda is lower than in Colombia. In the next section the level of IDP protection in both countries, is determine by using PPA component three Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs Theory.

4.3 Component Three: Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

The third component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) visualises BU and TD 'felt' and 'perceived' needs (identified as part of component two) visualised in Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid. This not only allows both actors to see which layers are prioritised by the protection providers, it also offer a roadmap on how to implement the most urgent protection priorities. The visualisation of the BU data collected in both case study countries and positioned within the layers of the pyramid, identifies the layers that should be prioritised in order to provide IDPs with the protection they need. Hierarchical fulfilment of needs according to the five layers of the pyramid leads, after fulfilment of layer five, to IDPs reach their full potential, which means they are no longer IDPs. For each case study country, the protection priorities, identified by BU actors, are visualised within the appropriate layers. This will be done in the first two subsections. The third subsection analyses whether there are differences in needs prioritisation between the two countries. Figure 4.3 below shows Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid as part of the PPA.

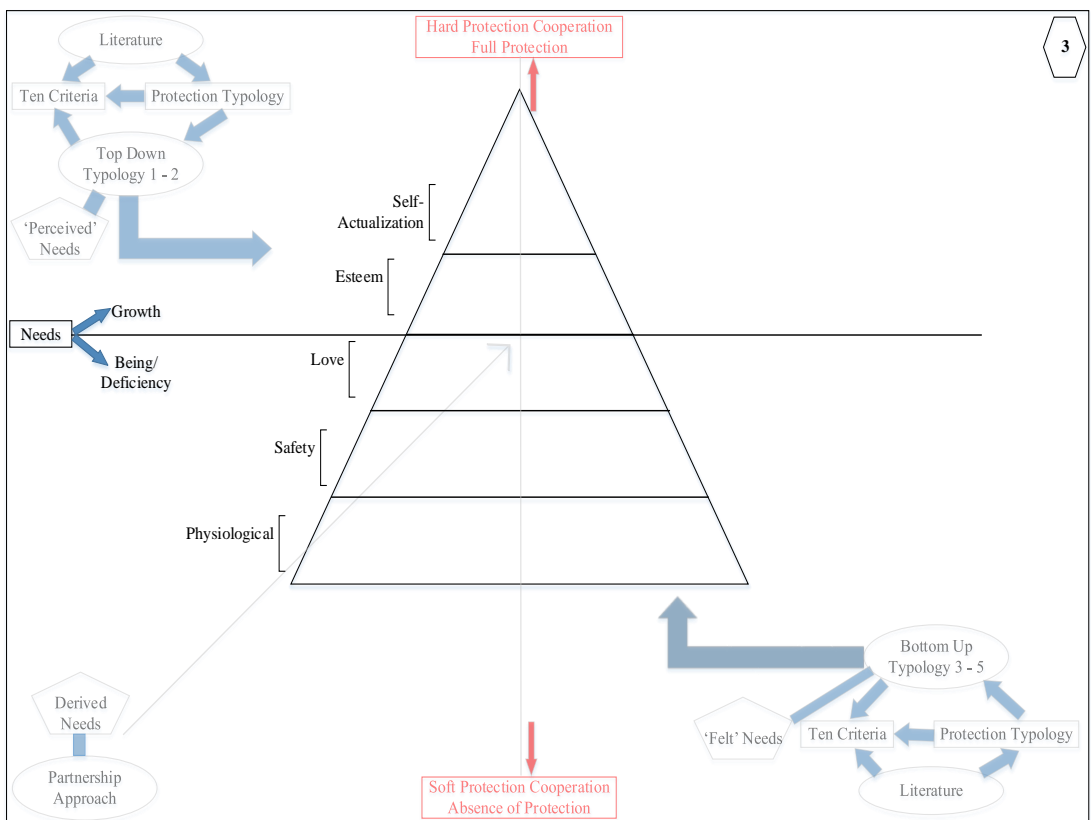


Figure 4.3: PPA Component Three - Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

4.3.1 Colombia

Analysing the data collected from BU actors in Colombia showed that (both BU and TD actors') activities relating to each of the five layers of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid were mentioned. These activities had both positively and negatively effect on IDP protection. Starting with activities which had a negative influence on the first layer (physiological needs, abbreviated as M1) were the civil war causing death, threats and displacement as well as problems with land such as illegal land misappropriations. IDPs were also caught in between land wrangling activities of the Government, guerrilla and paramilitary groups. Other, layer one related challenges developed due to lack of land property titles, not being able to sell their land (protected under Law 70) and not receiving sufficient support from the Government when they lost their land and wanted it back. When they were forced to flee IDPs lost everything and had to rely on Government assistance, which sometimes took long to arrive and was too little when it did arrive. Positive influences reported by BU actors in relation to layer one were the possibility to make a declaration/denouncement which entitled them to assistance, including food. If necessary IDPs would make a *tutella* to access this assistance. During flight, IDPs would share the food they had with each other. Food and access to land were the two main priorities according to BU actors, as they allowed IDPs to be self-sufficient and independent. Some IDPs were already engaged in the process of land restitution.

The civil war challenged the second layer of Maslow's pyramid, safety needs (abbreviated as M2). BU actors reported killings, rapes, forced recruitment, kidnapping and threats relating to land, occupation or political activity. IDPs feared being attacked or accused of collaboration. BU actors did not trust the Government sometimes prevented them from making a declaration, as some IDPs had been targeted after doing so. Due to security issues IDPs were not able to return. Return was also complicated by the destruction of their houses and lack of financial means, all challenges to M2. Financial and socio-economic security (part of M2) were caused by the IDP label making it difficult to find and keep a job or access services. To counter these negative influences, IDPs set up social networks for physical safety and job access. Men would accept any (low status) job which women found difficult. IDPs would also lie about being an IDP to access work. Safety was furthermore ensured by forming civil resistance movements, never travelling alone, moving around a lot, fleeing to the mountains and setting up a small peace process. Additionally, most IDPs made a declaration to access assistance, using *tutellas* if the assistance was not forthcoming. Where possible IDPs would rebuild their houses, but this was complicated by the fact that housing subsidy was received by cheque (instead of cash) and it was only sufficient to rent, not own a house.

Many of the safety related activities were geared towards ensure the wellbeing of the family. In love needs, the third layer of Maslow's pyramid (abbreviated as M3), strengthening the family and ensuring it survives is a key activity. IDPs would also rely on family for food and shelter (though not all families provided it). Food would be shared, though children would

be fed before adults. BU actors indicated that IDPs felt most secure around people from the same origin (showing the importance of community) and would set up social networks and organisations to help each other. When necessary IDPs would get psychological assistance, to make it easier to socialize with people. *Tutellas* were once again used to ensure rights were being fulfilled. BU actors felt that the Government did not show much interest for the needs of families. The war posed a great threat to a family's continued existence. Some BU actors indicated not being able to take care of their families, others would split the family, displace to different locations, even leaving family members behind. Though these activities threatened the fulfilment of love needs, it did secure the family's continued existence.

When BU actors were able to take care of their families this would make them proud and happy, positively contributing to their esteem needs (abbreviated as M4). Esteem needs were also strengthened when IDPs were independent, able to take care and respect themselves, felt self-sufficient, in control, enjoyed education, were relaxed and receiving respect from others. For some IDPs esteem entailed being able to be a leader, set up an IDP organisation or social network to help others. Most importantly, esteem needs were fulfilled by having a job, owning a house and having land (with property titles). If any of this was lacking IDPs would fight for their rights, which also increased their esteem. The Government would increase IDP esteem by treating IDPs well during the declaration process, providing assistance in a timely and dignified manner as well as providing the information IDPs needed. Not having to lie about being an IDP and the paramilitary truth telling process also had esteem increasing effects. Being labelled an IDP was esteem decreasing. M4 also decreased when experiencing threats (over land or political party association), having family members killed, having to live on the street, not having a job or having a low status job, being denied access to education and health care and feeling unsafe. Being badly treated during the IDP declaration process, being disrespected, not receiving the attention they deserved and having to wait long for assistance also negatively influenced IDPs' esteem needs.

For IDPs self-actualisation, layer five of Maslow's pyramid (abbreviated as M5), means no longer being an IDP, owning a house, having the property titles to one's land and enjoying education. To achieve this IDPs would engage in the process of land restitution, make *tutellas*, rely on Law 387 and remain calm. When BU actors had to give up their land following threats, having their land forcefully taken from them, losing the property titles to their land, or not being able to sell their land due to Law 70, the possibilities of self-actualisation were taken away. Self-actualisation was also challenged when IDPs were not able to overcome the cultural differences between their home areas and the areas they fled to.

Analysing the BU data within each of the layers a number of observations can be made. Within each layer, BU actors report activities which challenge the layer, but also activities which strengthen it. None of the layers has a purely positive or negative effect on IDP protection though some layers still stood out. One of these layers is layer two. Though the civil war influences all layers, layer two is most severely affected by it. The activities in

layer two have a negative effect on the fulfilment of layer one, but also on layers three till five. In a similar, though opposing, manner the activities engaged in within layer three have a positive effect on both the lower and higher situated layers. Layer three helps strengthen layers one and two. Activities relating to M3 also materialises when the needs in M1 or M2 have not been completely fulfilled yet, an observation opposing the hierarchical needs fulfilment suggested in Maslow's theory. Layer three is even of such importance that problems relating to this layer block further upwards movement in the pyramid. Therefore, it can be concluded that, in Colombia layer three has a protection increasing while layer two has a protection decreasing effect. Additional observations are that, contrary to Maslow's logic, layers do not only influence directly adjoining layers, but also layers located further away. Also, when too little attention is given to a layer, this layer does not materialise. This can be said of layer five, self-actualisation. BU actors have not reached this level yet, they are still IDPs, not being able to return. Whether these effects on the layers of Maslow's pyramid can also be observed in Uganda will be discussed in the next subsection.

4.3.2 Uganda

BU actors in Uganda also identified positive and negative influences in each layer of Maslow's pyramid. In Uganda, physiological needs are positively fulfilled by being a farmer able to access to farmland and who is able to grow different crops as well as having livestock. Farming occurred on other people's land as well, but that was seen as a suboptimal solution. Instead, during the war, some people would farm their own land during the day and sleep in the bush or the camp at night. Though this fulfilled M1 it was risky. This is why BU actors were grateful to be escorted by Government soldiers from the camps to their land to farm. Additionally, during the war, BU actors layer one needs were fulfilled by the food registrations and consequent food assistance in the camps (though corrupt registrars prevented this for some IDPs) and by receiving food from strangers. Having food delivered in the camps also made the people more vulnerable to LRA attacks to loot the food. The food delivered was also often insufficient. BU actors mentioned other threats to layer one as well, such as cattle raiding, land wrangling and lacking physical strength to farm. After the war, drilling boreholes had a positive effect on the fulfilment of physiological needs.

The practice of farming during the day and sleeping in the bush as night was risky because of the war. Nevertheless, being in the camps also did not assure the fulfilment of BU's safety needs. The security in the camps was low, both due to LRA attacks and the inability of the Government soldiers to provide protect. Additionally, Government soldiers posed a threat to the camp inhabitants. Abductions occurred from the camps (as well as from the villages). BU actors reported that the short notice and timing of moving into the camps (before the crop harvest) decreased their safety. The LRA also destroyed hospitals, further decreasing the fulfilment of M2. The Government did nothing, according to the BU actors, to improve the

situation in the camps, instead ordering the people to take up arms against the LRA (Bow and Arrow Brigades). Fear, illness and physical weakness further challenged BU's safety needs. Focusing on the safety increasing activities, BU actors mentioned that the Government soldiers did try to protect the camps. The camps also provided BU actors with shelter and IDPs were given NFIs and could access drugs. Other activities mentioned by BU actors which fulfilled safety needs were setting up small businesses, doing manual labour and receiving training. After the war, financial security was improved by Village Saving and Loan Schemes, while physical security improved by clearing landmines and building hospitals.

Many of the negative effects of the war materialise in layer three, love needs. Due to the war family members died or were abducted. In general, it was difficult to take care of one's children during the war. At the same time, fear and challenges strengthened family ties, with family members taking even better care of each other. As such BU actors were, in some way, able to take care of their children during the war. They were being assisted in this by strangers, LC members, as well as Government soldiers who would escort their children to school. IDPs would help other IDPs, showing the strength of community. IDPs also received training on interpersonal contacts. After the war people, would remain in the camps to ensure access to education for siblings. Unfortunately, when returning home to their villages some IDPs were not accepted, which negatively affected the fulfilment of love needs.

In Uganda, an important component of layer four, esteem needs, is education. Being able to access education had a strong positive effect on the fulfilment of M4 while not being able to access education, due to poor educational infrastructure had a strong negative effect. Education made IDPs feel equal to others and it increased self-esteem. During the war, there were schools in the IDP camps. With educational facilities lacking in most areas after the war the schools in the camps prevented people from returning. Overall, more men than women enjoyed education. Esteem needs are however not only influenced by education. Hatred, and the non-persecution of LRA rebels, all related to the war, negatively impacted the fulfilment of esteem needs. Counselling, psycho-social support and prayer had a positive effect on M4 as it made IDPs feel useful again and increase the respect they felt for themselves and others.

The lack of educational facilities however, also hampered the fulfilment of layer five, self-actualisation. This, together with the ongoing land wrangling problems prevented IDPs from reaching their full potential. Those IDPs who however, were able to attend higher education, like secondary school and vocational training, did experience, to a certain extent, the fulfilment of self-actualisation. BU actors mentioned wanting to be able to develop themselves, for which they needed peace, freedom and equality. Another important component of self-actualisation was the ability to forgive and reconcile with others.

The education problems, together with other problems in M5, result in an incomplete protection pyramid as layer five does not materialise. Analysing the positive and negative influences of need fulfilment in each layer, it can be observed that layer two has a more negative than positive influence. Layer two, most strongly influenced by the war, negatively

influences all other layers of the pyramid. Layer two threatens the achievements in M1, prevents upward movement, but also negatively affects the fulfilment of already (partly) materialised higher level layers (such as M3). Even though the war negatively affected layer one, BU actors still expressed the need to farm and have access to land. This is in line with Maslow's logic that a lower layer will always have priority over a higher layer. This observation holds true whether the higher layers are fulfilled or threatened. Contrary to Maslow's logic, higher level needs can materialise before lower level layers are fulfilled and even be prioritised, as is done by BU actors emphasizing education (M4 and M5).

4.3.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Three

Analysing the similarities and differences of the fulfilment of the different layers of Maslow's pyramid in Colombia and Uganda leads to the following observations. Though the activities related to layer two have a negative effect on all the layers of Maslow's pyramid, this can most strongly be seen in the Uganda BU data. In representation A of figure 4.3.1 the large negative effect of M2 is shown by representing M2 in dotted manifestation. The dotted lines indicate how M2 prevents upward movement, even though higher level layers (M3-M5) have materialised. In Colombia, the negative effects of this layer are however, offset by the positive effects of layer three (Figure 4.3.1 B in which layer three is enlarged).

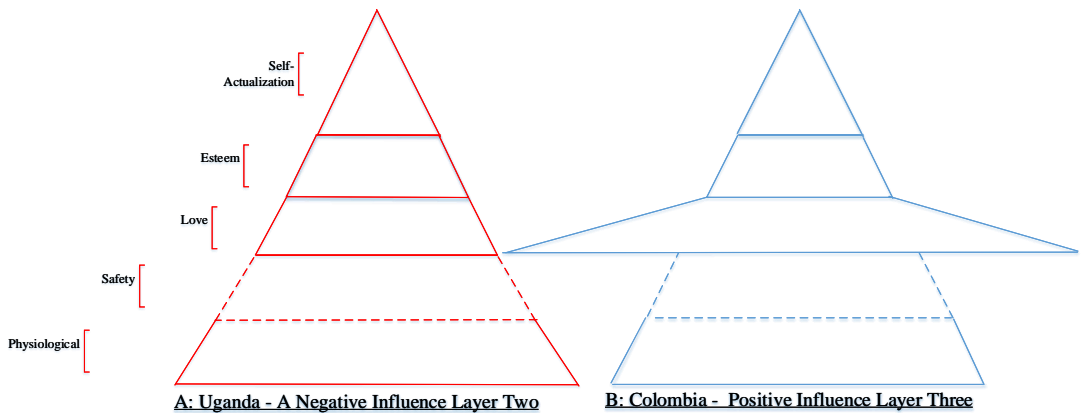


Figure 4.3.1: Comparison PPA Component Three Protection Pyramids Uganda (A) and Colombia (B)

Another difference between the case study countries is a stronger emphasis on farming in Uganda, compared to Colombia, even though land is important according to IDP protection according to BU actors in both countries. Education is also highlighted as being important in both countries, however, the level of desired education in Uganda is lower than in Colombia. Nevertheless, layer five, in both countries is challenged to the extent that it does not even materialise. Therefore, the protection pyramid in both countries is stunted, missing its top layer. The reason for this however, differs in both countries. In Colombia, the protection pyramid is stunted because IDPs have not yet been able to return home, hence they have not

yet stopped being IDPs (As can be seen in figure 4.3.2). In Uganda, even though the majority of IDPs have gone home, layer five has not materialised due to challenges IDPs experience upon return or relocation. These challenges include a

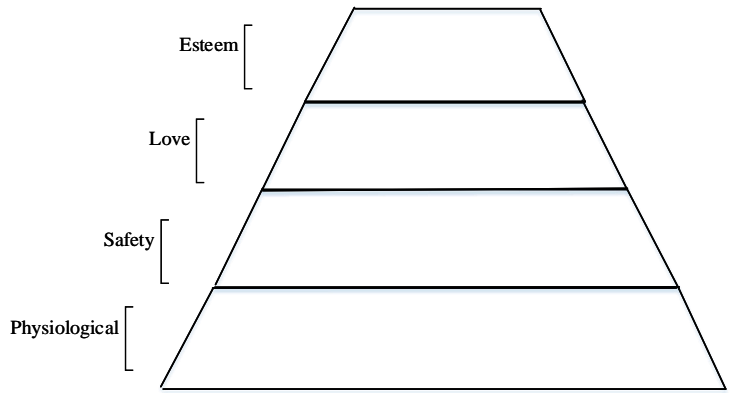


Figure 4.3.2: Stunted Protection Pyramid due to non-materialization Layer Five

weak educational infrastructure in the return area and not having closure of the war due to the lack of a peace agreement or the apprehension of Joseph Kony.

In conclusion, the pyramid which has been added to the Protection Pyramid Approach in component three has visualised the layers deserving top priority according to the BU data collected in both case study countries and how this affected IDP protection. For both case study countries layer two was the most challenged layer, in need of most attention for its strong negative effect on IDP protection. The layer with the strongest positive effect on IDP protection differed between the two countries. In Colombia layer three had most positive effects on IDP protection while in Uganda layer was most strongly emphasised for its potentially positive effect on IDP protection. These concluding observations continue the trend visible in the analysis of PPA components one and two, which is that IDP protection in Colombia is marginally better than in Uganda. In PPA component three this conclusion is based on the fact that the stronger positive influence on IDP protection is located in a higher layer in Colombia than in Uganda, hence closer to the top of the pyramid where IDPs are fully protected. Whether this trend continues in the next PPA component is analysed in section four dealing with the Revised Protection Definition.

4.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction

In the fourth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) a Revised Definition of Protection is introduced. The necessity for a revised definition was an underrepresentation of BU’s contribution to IDP protection. Given the importance of the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) it was felt that BU actors and TD actors’ contribution should be given equal standing. The revised protection definition consists of three elements; Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and maintains that ‘people are protected when their Human Rights are acknowledged and respected as well as tangibly and intangibly implemented through Livelihoods and Dignity’. The three elements of protection each take up an equal part and fixed location in the protection pyramid as shown in figure 4.4. In the first two subsections, the three elements of PPA component four will be used to analyse BU data. Representations of and interaction between the three elements will be pointed out for each case study countries in. In the third subsection, the findings of the two countries will be compared and contrasted.

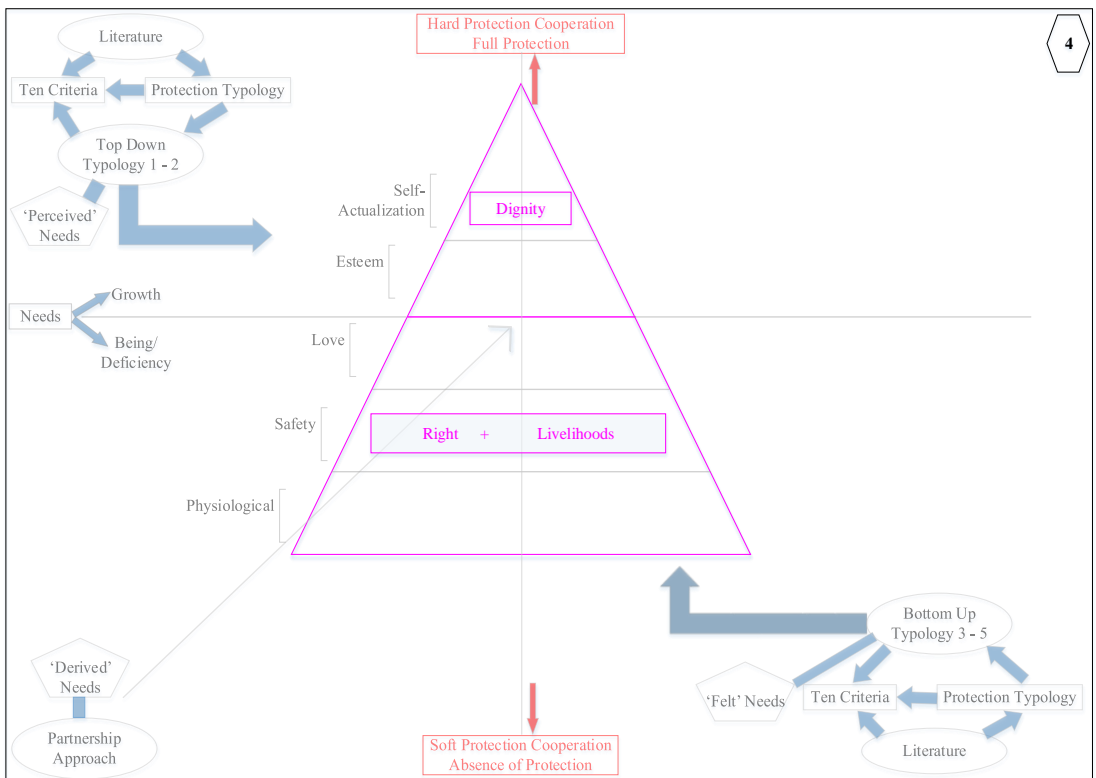


Figure 4.4: PPA Component Four - Revised Protection Definition

4.4.1 Colombia

Within the BU data positive and negative inputs to each of the three elements of the revised protection definition were identified. BU actors indicated that they considered the **Rights** element to be very important. Some BU actors felt rights were worth fighting for and became HR defenders. Others made *tutellas* or a declaration, set up IDP organisations or resistance movements and even started a small peace process to ensure the fulfilment of their rights. Having knowledge on rights was also considered important, though not something all BU actors had. Those who had knowledge mentioned that this was most often provided to them by Government employees, but others felt that these employees did not have enough knowledge and should be better trained on rights. The situation of IDPs' rights should also be made known to the world. BU actors explicitly mentioned a number of rights, which were Degree 1290, Law 1448, Law 70, the Law for the Protection of Indigenous Population and CCPR Article Six. One BU actor mentioned sentence T-025.

Most BU actors, instead of mentioning rights, described right by their entitlements¹⁰⁶. IDPs mentioned food, land restitution, health care, housing, education, money, rent, safety and the Guarantee of Non Repetition as important. Some of these 'rights', such as the latter, apply specifically to Colombia. Not all BU actors received the entitlements of rights. Rights were threatened by the war and related challenges such as killing, threats, kidnapping, rape, illegal recruitment, illegal land appropriation, attacks on villages and the necessity for BU actors to flee. The fulfilment of rights was also hampered by false promises, lies, corruption, discrimination and fear. Additionally, the implementation of rights is difficult, which can be seen from the analysis of the livelihoods element.

As part of the **livelihoods** element, BU actors complained about the assistance they were entitled to. BU actors either had to wait long before it arrived, if it arrived at all, and when it arrived it was too little and for a too short period. BU actors, because of their status as IDP, were also struggling to find and keep a house or a job, and access education and health care. Lack of money and difficulties with setting up productive projects complicated the tangible benefits of rights, even though they would use *tutellas* to ensure it. The livelihoods element of the revised protection definition was furthermore challenged by the fact that BU actors had to give up their land, lacked the property papers to claim it back, which all took place in a land restitution system which was flawed. Afro-Colombian IDPs struggled even more because of Law 70. The big climatological and cultural differences between the different regions in Colombia made it difficult for BU actors to obtain their livelihoods. IDPs, partly, overcame these challenges to their livelihoods by not mentioning that they were an IDP when applying for a job, setting up IDP organisations, civil resistance movements or small peace processes. Having a job was considered of crucial importance to be able to take care of one's

¹⁰⁶ Entitlements refer to the material or immaterial assets obtained upon the implementation of a law. In this research the legal representation of a law (represented by the articles) is referred to as the actual law.

family, providing it with an adequate standard of living, while making BU actors independent and able to take care of themselves. Making an IDP declaration gave IDPs access to assistance, which included food, and access to health care including psychosocial support. Important elements of the livelihoods element, as seen in the BU data, were owning a house, having the property papers to their land and being able to enjoy education (examples of the tangible implementation of BU actors' Right to an Adequate Standard of Living).

Intangible expressions of rights are found within the *Dignity* element of the revised protection definition. Positive expressions of this element, constituted owning a housing, having the property titles for one's land, having a job to take care of one's family and building up a life in the place of displacement. The cultural differences in these new places made some IDPs feel uncomfortable. Positive expressions of dignity are the land restitution process, the Guarantee of No Repetition, the truth telling process engaged in by the paramilitary and not having to lie about being an IDP. The fear IDPs experienced due to the war, but also due to the demobilization process of the paramilitary, as well as the lack of trust they had in the Government and police, decreased IDPs' dignity.

When BU actors were disrespected by the Government when making a declaration, or by others based on the stigma of being an IDP, this negatively impacted the dignity element. Some IDPs would get angry during the declaration process or while waiting for the assistance to arrive (which included coming often to the UACs/DC to ask about their assistance, making them wait in line like beggars), others felt shame, desperation and worthlessness. Not being able to take care of their families, displacing which often meant losing everything, or the declaration process in which IDPs had to relive the whole displacement process again was dignity decreasing. Dignity was increased when IDPs were treated well during the declaration process, and had knowledge, good health, were around their own people, able to help and be helped if necessary. For the latter two aspects, BU actors set up IDP organisations, social networks and civil resistance movements. Some BU actors mentioned that receiving psychosocial assistance, enjoying education, being an IDP leader or HR defender and making their suffering known to the world, increased their dignity. For others, it was important to be relaxed, while one IDP mentioned relying on God.

Based on the analysis of the BU data multiple possible interactions between the three elements of the revised protection definition were observed. Differences between interaction between the elements depended on the displacement phase, the activities of the Government or whether the interaction took place in an ideal world or in reality. The preferred interaction would also differ per gender and ethnic group. Overall a sequential presentation of the three elements, in which Rights were used to obtain Livelihoods which would strengthen Dignity, was most often mentioned. The dignity element was considered most important by BU actors, closely followed by Rights. The ideal interaction between the protection elements (R+L→D) was not mentioned. Under or overrepresentation of an element influenced the ideal shape of

the protection pyramid and in most cases negatively affected IDP protection. The three elements and their interaction in Uganda will be presented in the next subsection.

4.4.2 Uganda

In Uganda, the BU data also revealed positive and negative expressions of each of the three elements of the revised protection definition. BU actors in Uganda acknowledge the general importance of rights and are of the opinion that the Government and themselves have a responsibility vis-à-vis rights fulfilment, though the Government fails in this responsibility according to BU actors. In Uganda, the *rights* element is mostly only indirectly fulfilled. IDPs focus on the entitlement of the rights, not so much on the rights themselves. The only right which they mention often is the Right of the Child. BU actors felt that, during the war, soldiers enjoyed more rights than civilians. In the war, BU's rights were breached by LRA attacks and activities of Government soldiers, even though the UN and NGOs played a role in rights fulfilment and strengthening rights' knowledge by training (which continued after the war). Training was necessary because BU actors felt that the lack of knowledge on HR instruments hampered the fulfilment of their rights. Rights were also challenged because of the war itself and its related atrocities. Inter-family violence, lack of respect, lack of doctors and drugs and female unfriendly cultural practices also have a negative effect on rights.

The issues which negatively affect the rights element of the revised protection definition, also have a negative effect on the *livelihoods* element, as livelihoods are the tangible expression of Rights. The livelihoods element is therefore also negatively affected by the war, the insecurity in the camps due to LRA attacks and lack of protection by Government soldiers. Lack of physical strength and insecurity prevented BU actors to farm, which, together with the looting of food by the LRA, prevented the tangible manifestation of the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living. Food, NFIs, drugs and money was distributed to the camps, positively contributing to livelihoods, but it was insufficient. BU actors also suffered from illness and injury, due to the destruction of hospitals, were living in bad conditions and had difficulties accessing education, due to the destruction of schools, which all decreased BU's livelihoods. The opening of schools in the camps however countered this negative influence. BU actors aiming to improve their livelihoods, farmed their own or other people's land when they had the physical strength, set up social networks and did manual labour. Government soldiers provided a degree of safety when escorting IDPs to their land to work. The act of fleeing and IDPs' families positively contributed to the livelihoods element of the protection definition, but lack of money, cattle raiding and land wrangling challenged it.

Families not only had a positive effect on the livelihoods element but also on IDP *Dignity*, the third element of the revised protection definition. Being married, having a family and being able to rely on a community strengthened the dignity element. When BU actors received assistance, were able to enjoy education, received counselling, were able to work or

engage in activities which were in line with their preferences also increased their dignity. Other positive contributions to the dignity element, observed in the BU data, were rights fulfilment, respect, protection from Government soldiers, voluntary movements into and out of the camps, helping each other, feeling useful and praying. Experiencing fear, disrespect, lack of freedom and not having access to health care or counselling however decreased the dignity element. In any case, all the challenges relating to the war had a negative effect on IDP dignity. More in general the dignity decreasing effects of camp life, such as lack of privacy, high levels of alcoholism and domestic violence and lack of physical support were mentioned. Not being able to farm due to lack of land, or farming at a high risk, difficulties accessing education and the inadequacy of the provided assistance also had a negative effect on dignity. Though the war has ended the lack of peace still negatively influences dignity.

Regardless of the negative influences on the dignity element, this element is prioritised by BU actors when discussing the interaction between elements. Dignity is the missing link between rights and livelihoods and has the potential to make or break IDP protection. Having said this, BU actors also point out that all three elements are equally important, necessitating the presentation of each element within its own protection pyramid. However, the rights element is only indirectly mentioned and fulfilled, which decreases its protection potential. For BU actors in Uganda there is a stronger link between dignity and livelihoods than livelihoods and rights. Fulfilment of the three elements occurs in sequential order. Looking at the tangible and intangible expression of rights, more rights belonging to the lower half of the protection pyramid are fulfilled than those in the top. The effects of this observation on the ideal shape of the protection pyramid will be discussed in the next subsection.

4.4.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Four

Comparing the interaction between the three elements in both case study countries, showed a similar effect on IDP protection when one element of the revised protection definition was underrepresented. Though the dignity element was strongly emphasised in Uganda, the protection enhancing effect of this element of the revised protection definition was most strongly felt in the lower half of the protection pyramid, as was also the case in Colombia. An emphasise on the bottom half of the protection pyramid leads to a stunted protection pyramid as can be seen in figure 4.4.1a. When Rights or Livelihoods are underrepresented, or only indirectly fulfilled, as was the case for the Rights element in Uganda, the protection pyramid is equally suboptimal, as can be seen in figure 4.4.1b and c.

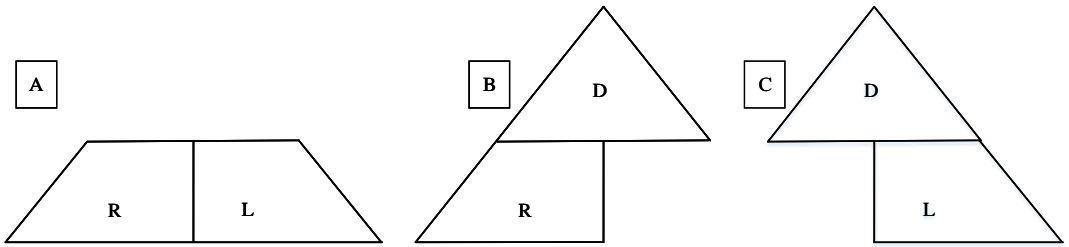


Figure 4.4.1: Suboptimal Protection Pyramids: A) D-element lacking B) L-element lacking C) R-element lacking

Figure 4.4.1 shows how the absence of one element leads to a suboptimal protection pyramid. Another situation was observed too in the BU data collected in the case study countries. In that situation, all three elements are used to provide protection to IDPs, but some elements are more important than others. Showing the relative importance of each elements of the revised protection definition, by their appropriate size, shows how each element individually contributes to IDP protection in a case study country. In Uganda for example low quality rights education was provided in the camps. Though this activity strengthened the Rights element, the low-quality means that the livelihoods and dignity element are suboptimal. Figure 4.4.2 shows the relative importance of each elements on IDP protection in Uganda.

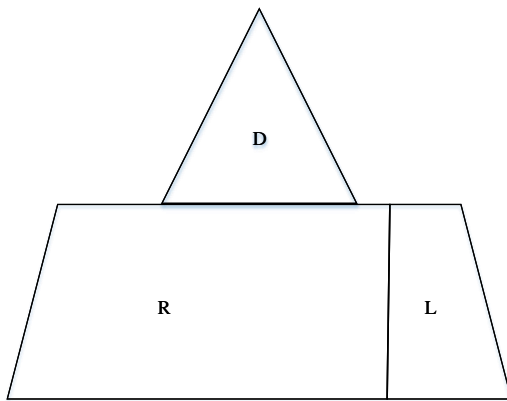


Figure 4.4.2: Representation Relative Importance Protection Elements in Uganda During Displacement

In figure 4.4.1 it was shown how the underrepresentation of an element could destabilize the protection pyramid. Therefore, the more realistic representation of reality was suggested in the previous paragraph, represented by figure 4.4.2. However, in addition to underrepresentation, overrepresentation of an element of the revised protection definition can also destabilize the protection pyramid, negatively affecting IDP protection. This can occur for example in relation to the Dignity

element, which is emphasised by BU actors in both countries. Figure 4.4.3 shows the representation of the protection pyramid when the dignity element received more attention. However, close analysis of the BU data revealed an interesting phenomenon. Instead of toppling over, as suggested by figure

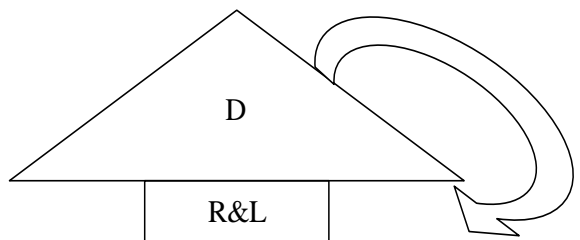


Figure 4.4.3: D-element over emphasized

4.4.3, the dignity element turns out to have a special effect on IDP protection, because of its unique quality of influencing the other two elements. When the dignity element is positive, it has a positive effect on the other two elements, but if it is negative it has a negative influence. This unique effect, observed in both countries, is called the Dignity-injection column and can be positive, negative or both (figure 4.4.4.)

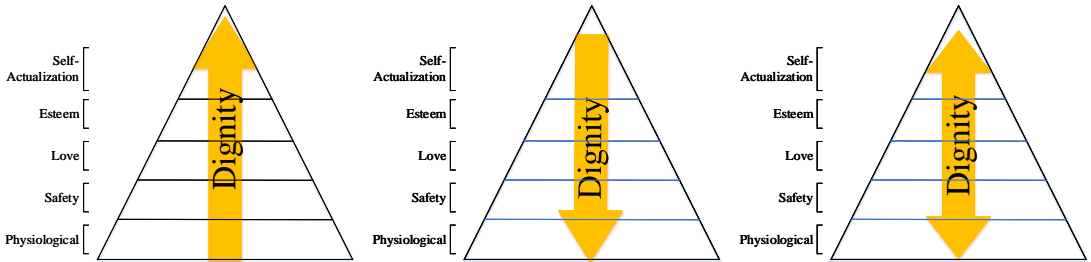


Figure 4.4.4 :Positive and Negative Dignity-injection Column

The Dignity injection column is however not the only interesting phenomena of the dignity element of the revised protection definition. In addition to having a strong internal effect on the protection pyramid, dignity can also have a positive external influence the interaction between the three elements, positively influencing IDP protection. This phenomenon has been called the effect of the ‘Submerged Protection Pyramid’. When this situation occurs, external Dignity is provided to IDPs (for example by TD actors creating an elaborate IDP legal framework improving IDP dignity) that it surrounds the pyramid (shown in yellow in figure 4.4.5), it positively influences IDP protection. The phenomena of the Dignity injection column and the submerged protection pyramid are outcomes of the analysis of the BU data, collected in both case study countries, with PPA component three. The strong protection increasing effect of these two phenomena shows the added value of PPA in general and PPA component three specifically for IDPs. The next subsection zooms in on the protection enhancing effect of PPA component four, IHRL.

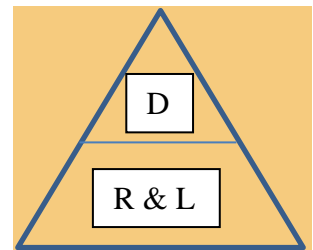


Figure 4.4.5: Submerged Pyramid

4.5 Component Five: International (Human Rights) Law

Utilising component five of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) to analyse the BU data in Colombia and Uganda means zooming in on the rights element of the revised protection definition. In this definition rights are considered the foundation of the protection pyramid. In this section the BU data is analysed in light of the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR) and the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR). By inquiring which rights BU actors know, believe are being fulfilled (or not), BU actors' needs and priorities become known and can be visualised in the protection pyramid. Given that this component builds upon the previous component all general rights related information will not be presented, only information pertaining to the two Covenants and country specific IDP legislation. The reason why IDP legislation is also discussed is because this is *lex specialis* which has a higher protection potential than general HRs. The positioning of the two Covenants within protection pyramid is visualised by figure 4.5. The analysis of both case study country's BU data (first two subsections) will reveal whether this general visualisation also applies to Colombia and Uganda. In the third subsection, the two protection pyramids will be compared and contrasted.

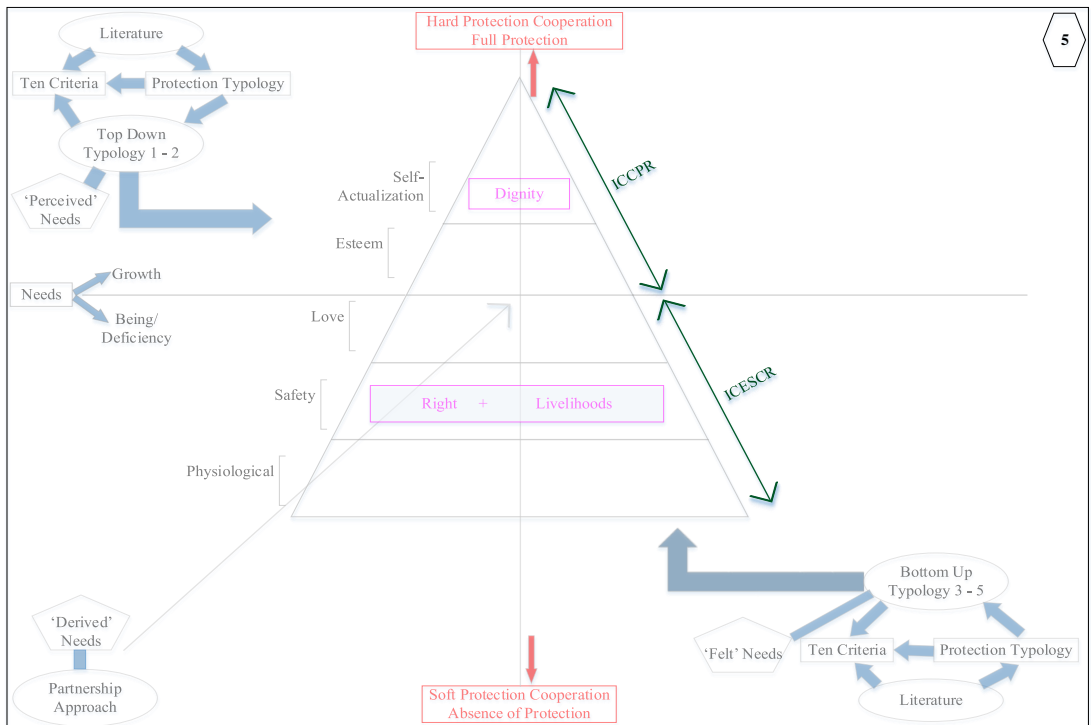


Figure 4.5: PPA Component Five – International Human Rights Law

4.5.1 Colombia

In Colombia BU actors are generally well aware of their rights. About half the IDPs knew they had rights prior to their displacement, the other half found out after being displaced. Translating this observation to specific knowledge of the rights within the two Covenants the most mentioned rights were ICESCR Article 11 (Adequate Standard of Living), ICESCR Article 13/14 (Education) and CCPR Article 6 (Right to Life), though this latter right was described in terms of safety. BU actors in Colombia also mentioned a number of non-existing rights, such as the Right to Land Restitution as well as the Right to Money or Rent. When asked what the most fulfilled rights were BU actors mentioned ICESCR Article 11 (Standard of Living), ICCPR Article 6 (Life), ICESCR Article 12 (Right to Health), and ICESCR Article 13/14 (Education). These most fulfilled rights were also the rights which were most breached. Other rights which were breached were ICESCR Article 10 (Right to Protection of Family)/ICCPR Article 23 (Right to Marriage and the Family), ICESCR Article 6 (Right to Work), ICCPR Article 2 (Non-discrimination) and the non-existing Right to Land.

In addition to mentioning rights belonging to both Covenants BU actors utilised a number of other rights as well. BU actors did not explicitly mention these rights but they can be distilled from their activities. All of these rights belong to the Civil and Political Rights Covenant. One of the most obvious rights BU actors used (but not mentioned) was ICCPR Article 12 (Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence). BU actor's human rights activism (becoming HR defenders and setting up IDP Organisations and Social Networks to help other IDPs safeguard their rights) can be seen as fulfilling ICCPR Articles 21 and 22 (Freedom of Assembly, Association and Trade Unions). Furthermore, the IDP organisations, thanks to a landmark *tutella* in 2002, ensured the legal personality of these IDP organisations, fulfilling ICCPR Article 16 (Recognition of Legal Personality) as well as ICCPR Article 25 (Political Rights). The ability to use a *tutella* can be said to fulfil ICCPR Article 19 (Freedom of Opinion, Expression and Information).

In addition to knowing their general HRs, BU actors in Colombia are also familiar with specific IDP Laws, such as Degree 1290, Law 387, Law 1448, T-025, Law 70 and the Law for the Protection of Indigenous Populations. Additionally, BU actors mentioned the 1991 Constitution, which gave them the possibility to make a *tutella*. BU actors in Colombia have the possibility to ensure their rights as IDPs by making an IDP declaration. In order to do so they need to make a declaration about the reason why they had to flee. The Government then decides, based on analysis of the IDP story with known facts, whether the person is an IDP or not. If the Government judges the story is true the person is admitted into the IDP Registry, which entitles them to assistance and possibly land restitution. The land of Afro-Colombian IDPs is also protected by Law 70. BU actors in Colombia however do not always make use of the *lex specialis* available to them. This can be because they either deem the process to cumbersome and without a chance for success or because they do not consider

themselves IDPs and are able to take care of themselves. Additionally, IDPs are afraid that making the declaration will endanger their safety. The Guarantee of Non Repetition is another Colombian IDP right set up to provide protection but which the Government cannot ensure.

BU actors in Colombia know and use the different rights available to them to improve their overall protection. For example, the right to make a *tutella* is used to ensure their Right to an Adequate Standard of Living. National, IDP and international human rights are used in a mutually empowering way. Another interesting phenomenon can be observed in Colombia, which is that the general positioning of the Covenants along Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid both holds true and is challenged at the same time. Judging from the testimonies of the BU actors the ICESCR is prioritised above the ICCPR, in the same way as explained in chapter two. However, looking at the activities engaged in by BU actors, ICCPR plays a very important role in Colombia, even though ICESCR has not been fulfilled yet. The relevance of this observation will be further discussed in the third subsection. First, however, the importance of human rights in Uganda is presented in the second subsection below.

4.5.2 Uganda

In Uganda BU actors are not very familiar with International Human Rights Law or IDP specific laws. BU actors focus more on the entitlements of rights than on the rights themselves which means a loss of the protection potential of rights. Apart from ICCPR Article 12 (Right of the Child), no specific reference is made to ICESCR or ICCPR. Nevertheless, translating the entitlements to rights the most fulfilled (and breached) rights are ICESCR Article 11 (Standard of Living) and ICESCR Article 13/14 (Education). Other rights which can be deduced from the BU testimonies and which positively contributed to IDP protection are: ICESCR Article 6 (Work), ICESCR Article 12 (Health), ICESCR and ICCPR Article 3 (Gender Equality), ICCPR Article 6 (Life). Other activities which challenged their protection, often related to the involuntary move to the camps and their stay in the camps, led to breaches of ICESCR and ICCPR Article 1 (Right to Self-determination), ICESCR Article 10 (Right to Protection of Family)/ICCPR Article 23 (Right to Marriage and the Family), ICESCR Article 15 (Right to Culture), ICCPR Article 12 (Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence) and ICCPR Article 17 (Recognition of Privacy). In addition to this Ugandan BU actors mentioned the breach of the non-existing Right to Land and Inheritance. Though the rights listed here relate to both Covenants, the BU actors placed more emphasis on the rights belonging to the Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights than the Covenant for Civil and Political Rights. This prioritisation is in line with the logic of the protection pyramid in which the bottom of the pyramid should be fulfilled before attention can be paid to the top.

In addition to having very limited knowledge on general human rights, BU actors were also not very familiar with any IDP legislation which might pertain to them. This is a pity as Uganda was the initiator of the first enforceable regional instrument for IDP protection, called

the Kampala IDP Convention. Those IDPs who have heard of the Convention equate it in very general terms with respect and emphasis their own responsibility for their protection without referring to any particular component of the Convention. The limited knowledge of general and IDP specific legislation shows BU actors in Uganda are not able to capitalize on regional and international initiatives for their own protection. The conclusion of the analysis of the BU data from Uganda from the perspective of component five is therefore that IDP protection can be greatly improved if BU actors are provided with information on general and IDP specific regional and international information.

4.5.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Five

Comparing the analysis of the BU data sets from Colombia and Uganda, utilising PPA component five, shows that BU actors in Colombia are more familiar with human rights (at national and international level) than BU actors in Uganda. Though BU actors in Colombia also did not always refer to the actual right to which they were entitled, they were familiar with the concept of rights, while BU actors in Uganda only focused on the entitlements of rights. This means that for both case studies, but especially the Ugandan one, the protection pyramid (showing the two Covenants positioned alongside Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid) was needed to translate entitlements into rights. Once this was done it became apparent that BU actors in Uganda are more concerned with the ICESCR, while the BU actors in Colombia emphasise the ICCPR more. The Ugandan case study therefore operates more in line with the hierarchical logic of component three (based on Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory), while the Colombian case study discounts this logic. The latter observation is however not completely true as BU actors in Colombia still suffered serious shortcoming in their ICESCR rights, necessitating attention for this Covenant too. In conclusion, therefore, the general division of the Covenants along the protection pyramid, utilising Maslow's logic of hierarchical needs fulfilment in general, though not always, holds true.

The emphasis by BU actors in Colombia on ICCPR related rights, even though ICESCR rights are not (fully) fulfilled yet, shows the added benefit of this fifth protection component. By analysing the data through this component, it becomes clear that attention to the top of the pyramid can occur even when the bottom half of the pyramid is not yet (fully) fulfilled. Visually this means that the protection pyramid in Colombia would look like figure 4.5.1. The dotted lines of the bottom half of the pyramid show that only providing protection based on component five would create inadequate protection because the protection pyramid in figure 4.5.1 is unstable. The pyramid is unstable because the dotted lines indicate that the lower half of the protection pyramid is not yet fully fulfilled, not providing the stable foundation necessary for optimal IDP protection. The danger of providing incorrect assistance based only on the analysis of data utilising component five, does not exist for Uganda. This is because the development of the protection pyramid follows the recommended path of PPA.

The analysis of the BU Colombia data utilising component five shows the necessity of analysing data from of all the different PPA components. Even though BU knowledge of their HRs in Colombia is higher than that of their counterparts in Uganda.

Building upon the observation that Colombian BU actors are more aware of their rights than Ugandan BU actors the benefit of this knowledge is that in Colombia the different kinds of law work together,

strengthening each other, to improve IDP protection, which is not the case in Uganda. Additionally, the Ugandan context does not foresee in such a powerful tool to claim rights as the *tutella* system in Colombia. Nevertheless, the challenges which BU actors in both countries experience to their rights are similar, both suffering from the negative effects of war and a corrupt and at times an incapable or unwilling Government. Having analysed the BU data in both countries and pointing out the benefits of conducting such an analysis utilising component five, the next subsection will show the benefit of analysing the BU data from the perspective of Anthony Giddens Structuration Theory (Component Six).

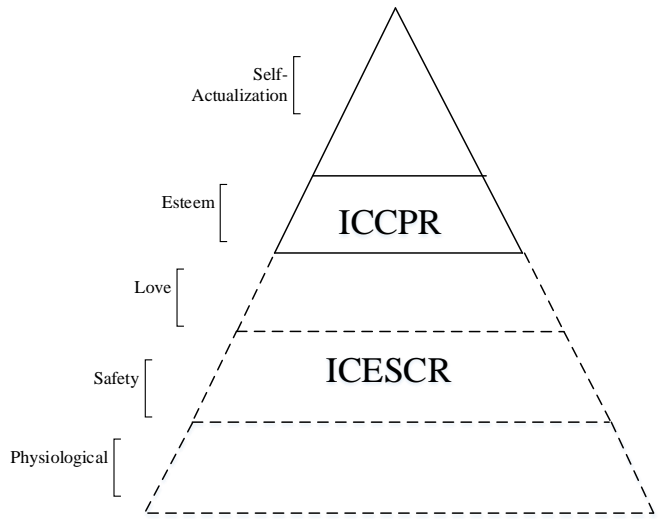


Figure 4.5.1: Instable Pyramid due to Prioritization ICCPR over ICESCR

4.6 Component Six: Giddens' Structuration Theory

In component six, Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST) has been added to the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). Within ST, Agency (A) and Structure (S) are presented as each other's equals with the aim to be transcended by the Duality of Structure (DS). Additionally, attention is paid to IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms. The goal of component six when analysing the BU data is to determine, within each case study country, what the different elements of component six consist of and how they contribute to IDP protection. At the end of this section it is then possible to determine how big the influence of each of the elements on IDP protection is. The attention paid to the different elements of ST provides yet another perspective upon how IDPs are, or should be, protected. The location of the elements within the Protection Pyramid is provided by figure 4.6. In the first two subsections of this section the different elements of component six are discussed for each case study countries after which the findings are compared and contrasted in subsection three.

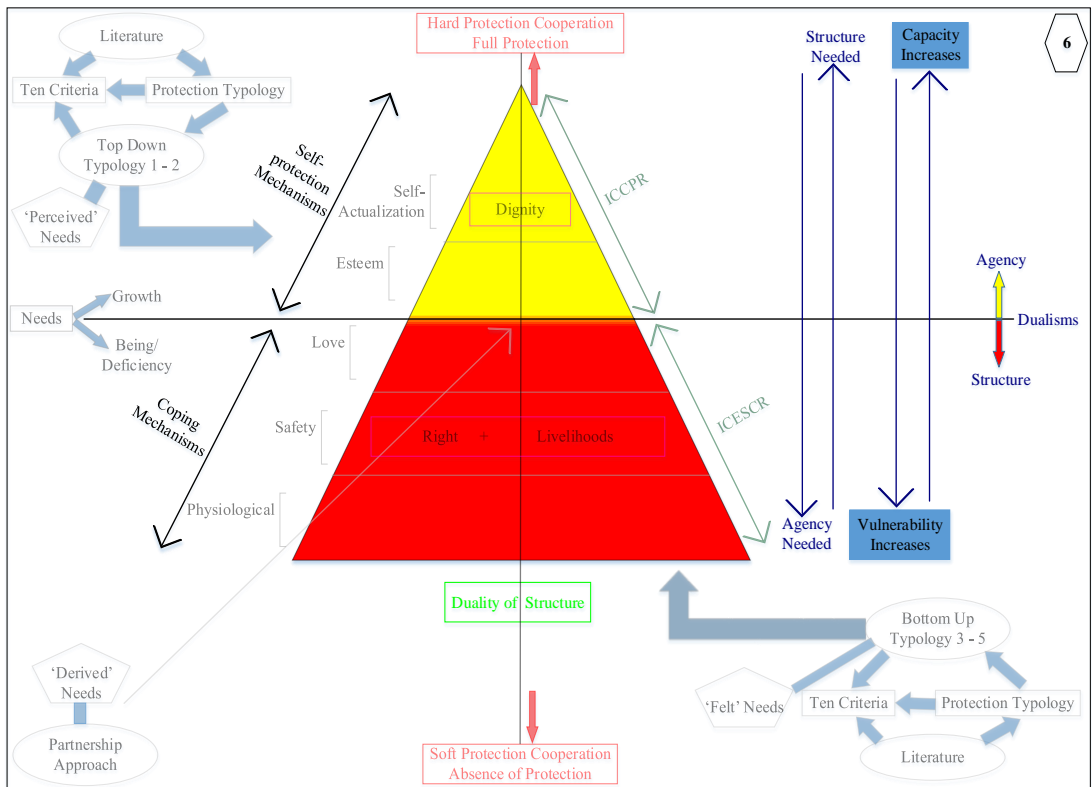


Figure 4.6: PPA Component Six – Giddens' Structuration Theory

4.6.1 Colombia

PPA component six is utilised to analyse the BU data collected in Colombia. Examples of the different elements of the component, such as Agency, Structure, the Duality of Structure, ontological security as well as time-space and coping and self-protection mechanisms are identified to determine the extent to which IDPs are protected. Many of the elements have a positive and negative influence on IDP protection. Examples of how Agency positively contributes to IDP protection are displacing, which includes, moving around a lot, fleeing alone, leaving the family behind or splitting the family. Other examples are not joining illegal armed groups and not disclosing one's IDP status when applying for a job. Some IDPs became a HR defender, made an IDP declaration or *tutella* and pressured the Government to provide protection. Being a leader, having a fighter's mentality, feeling in control, staying calm, happy, relaxed and secure are other examples of positive Agency. Unfortunately, the BU data also showed that IDPs were forced to engage in negative Agency. Some IDPs joined illegal armed groups to contribute to their protection, while others did not remain calm during the Declaration process and the subsequent wait for assistance. Feeling fear and suffering from the negative stigma attached to being an IDP are also examples of negative Agency, making it difficult for IDPs to find work and take care of their family. Difficulties setting up a productive project also had a negative effect on protection.

Examples of constraining Structures are war related activities and accusations of collaboration with opposing parties, as well as the destruction of houses and appropriation of land. The paramilitary demobilization, in itself an enabling Structure turned into a constraining one when the demobilized paramilitary continued to endanger IDP protection. Similarly, family or community normally are enabling Structures but analyse of the BU data revealed they can also have a constraining influence. Constraining structures at the Governmental level include lack of knowledge and capacity, corruption, discrimination and disrespect. Even the well developed and far reaching legislation, an enabling Structure in relation to being able to make a declaration, *tutella* or become part of the land restitution system, also had constraining influences on IDPs. Having access to education, health care, psycho-social support and transportation are enabling Structures positively contributing to IDP protection. BU actors who succeeded in setting up productive projects, IDP organisations, social support networks and civil resistance movements were able to create Structures which positively contributed to their own protection.

When these positive and negative manifestations of Agency and Structure interact with each other this leads to positive or negative Duality of Structure. Examples of both kinds of DS have been identified in the BU data. When IDPs did not mention that they were an IDP (positive Agency, abbreviated as A+), IDPs increased the chances of getting a job (enabling Structure, abbreviated as S+) which would allow them to take care of their family (enabling Structure, abbreviated as S+), in this example DS is positive. Enabling Structures which are

being replicated can be replicated at the same, or at a higher or lower level. Those IDPs who decided to become a HR defender did so because they wanted to end suffering (A+), setting up an IDP organisation to do so (S+ at the local level), and, by using *tutellas*, these IDP organisations have been able to influence and improve IDP legislation at a higher level (S+ national level). Examples of negative DS were also identified within the data. Those IDPs who did not lie about their status of being an IDP suffer from the attached negative stigma (A-), had more difficulties in accessing employment (S-) and were therefore less able to take care of their families (S-). In all of these examples all elements have been either positive or negative. Analysing the data revealed that if one of the elements is negative, this negatively influences the other elements. For example, a BU actor reported making a Declaration (A+), but because of the alleged links between the Government and the paramilitary (S-), the paramilitary targeted the IDP (S-). Examples of negative agency and positive structure leading to a positive DS were not observed, probably because negative agency would prevent a BU actor to engage with an enabling structure in the first place.

The Duality of Structure is not the only influence on IDP protection, so is time-space. Time-space surrounds the protection pyramid and determines the extent to which the pyramid can reach its full potential. When time-space is constrained, the protection pyramid cannot reach its full potential. This situation was observed in Colombia, where the ongoing war created a negative constraining time-space, preventing IDPs making a declaration, find work or return home. Time-space can be pushed towards the top of the protection pyramid by the far reaching IDP legislation and the protection this offers to IDPs. Time-space is therefore intrinsically linked to ontological security. In a neutral time-space ontological security is high, while in a negative constrained time-space ontological security is challenged. BU actors have reported making use of the legal opportunities available to them to improve their ontological security (making a declaration or *tutella*). Though this improved their situation, it did not lead to full protection due to the continued fighting between TD actors. It can be observed that BU actors mostly engage in activities which improve their ontological security, while TD actors engage in activities which both improve and challenge ontological security.

The final element of PPA component six are IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms. Analysing the BU data lead to the identification of positive and negative (and both) coping mechanisms. Displacing is an example of both a positive and negative coping mechanisms. It is positive because it prevents BU actors from getting killed but it often also means losing everything. Identified coping mechanisms could further be divided into practical (such as sharing food, lying about IDP status, hiding property papers and using a nickname not to be recognised by paramilitary) and personal ones (such as singing, playing football, being around one's 'own' people, having a fighter's mentality, staying calm and having self-respect). Negative coping mechanisms show resemblance to negative agency and include joining an illegal armed group and splitting or leaving behind the family when displacing. A number of coping mechanisms were also self-protection mechanisms, depending on their goal.

This applies for example to IDP organisations or making a *tutella*. When used to access assistance, these are coping mechanisms, but when they enable access to education they become self-protection mechanisms. Other self-protection mechanisms are accessing psycho-social assistance and being a HR defender.

Analysing the BU data in Colombia using PPA component six shows that most elements have both a positive and a negative effect on IDP displacement with Structure having more of negative than positive effects. This is because the constraining Structure of war is only partially offset by the enabling Structure of IDP legislation. An additional constraint to the enabling structure of IDP legislation is the difficulty BU actors report in accessing entitlements such as land. Agency, on the contrary, has a mostly positive influence on IDP protection as BU actors are more likely to contribute than diminish their own contributions to IDP protection. However, the data showed that BU actors do engage in negative Agency, either because they have no choice or because a loss of protection in the short term ensures protection in the long run.

Regardless of positive or negative manifestations of Agency and Structure, all activities are influenced by time-space, which can only be neutral or negative. In Colombia, due to the ongoing civil war, the time-space is negative and constraining, preventing the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential, which negatively affects IDPs' ontological security and therefore their protection. The analysis of ST's Structure element within the Duality of Structure showed how a positive Structure creates a positive DS, which positively contributes to IDP protection. It was observed that even though a Structure might exist at a local level (like an IDP organisation) it can still be replicated and reproduced, in a positive way, on a higher level (such as on the national level when aiming to change IDP legislation). Positive DS is however offset by negative DS. The negative manifestations of the different elements of Giddens' theory are however compensated by BU actors. This concludes the analysis of the contribution of BU data in Colombia to IDP protection seen through the lens of Component Six. In the next subsection, a similar exercise will be conducted for Uganda.

4.6.2 Uganda

Using Structuration Theory and the other elements of PPA component six when analysing the BU data collected in Uganda positive and negative contributions to IDP protection were observed. Starting with the Agency element; displacing, hiding in the bush, farming other people's land, utilising one's physical strength and knowing and fighting for one's rights are examples of Agency which positively affected IDP protection. Similarly, talking to and helping other people, accepting counselling, having trust, being able to let go of the past, which includes being able to forgive and reconcile had a positive effect on IDP protection too. Agency is strengthened by education, religion, respect and creativity, without which BU actors are less able to contribute to their own protection. Agency decreases or even becomes negative

when BU actors are not able to enjoy education, are not able to farm or work or when they are deceived, do not receive respect, were afraid, lacked trust and were not able to pray. All these examples of negative Agency, negatively affected IDP protection.

Examples of enabling Structures were the attempts of TD actors to strengthen IDP rights, both nationally and regionally through the Kampala IDP Convention. Assistance with farming, receiving assistance, offering access education and counselling but also the camps and transit camps were examples of enabling Structures (though the camps are also examples of constraining Structure). Cultural rituals and the outcomes of social networks as well as the family, community and TD actors such as the UN, NGOs and the church can also be seen as enabling Structures which positively contributed to IDP protection. Peace, freedom and equality do the same. Additional constraining Structures identified in the BU data included; the lack of food, shelter, health care, houses and schools during the war. Also, the war itself is a constraining Structures negatively influencing IDP protection. TD actors fighting in the war, but also family and landlords also constrained and negative influenced IDP protection. Constraining Structures can also be identified in the neglect of IDPs and the fulfilment of their rights, land wrangling and lack of financial security. The fact that IDPs were not treated with respect and endured discriminatory practices all negative influenced IDP protection. After the war the lack of schools, roads and health centres were also constraining structures.

The interaction between Agency and Structure leads to the Duality of Structure. Examples of both positive and negative DS were observed in the BU data collected in Uganda. Examples of a positive DS increasing IDP protection occurred when BU hid in the bush (A+), to be able to work their land during the day (S+) which allowed them to take care of their family (S+). Positive DS was also observed during the return process, however, when the return was involuntary this led to a negative DS, decreasing IDP protection. The move into the camps also led to a negative DS. This is because the move to the camps was involuntary (A-). Regardless of the fact if the camps are seen as an enabling or constraining Structure (S+/-), IDPs were more vulnerable to LRA attacks in the camps (S-), making DS negative therefore meant the move into the camps was protection decreasing. Other examples of negative DS can be seen in the way IDP privacy, inter-family and community interactions and cultural values diminished in the camps diminishing IDP protection. In Uganda, more example of negative than positive DS occur.

On the one hand the presence of negative Duality of Structure can be explained by the negative constraining time-space (which prevents the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential) exist(ed) in Uganda. The war, with all its negative side effects, is an example of such a negative constraining time-space. At the same time the end of the war, combined with peace, freedom and equality, pushed the negative constraining time-space outwards, towards its normal position, at the outer edges of the pyramid. Whether or not time-space is constrained or normal, to an extent, also depends on the perception of BU actors. Similar situations were valued differently by different BU actors. The visual effect of the movement between a

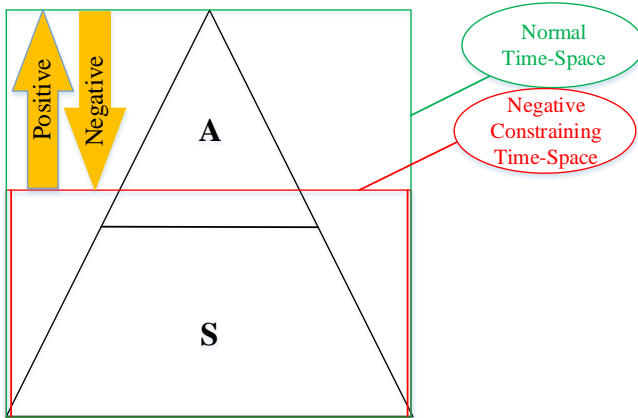


Figure 4.6.1: Time-Space and the Protection Pyramid

constrained and normal time-space are shown in figure 4.6.1. The negative time-space also has a negative effect on BU actor's ontological security. At the same time, ontological security is increased by being in the bush, going to the camps, enjoying education and having trust. Elders deceiving IDPs in the camps, land wrangling and problems with farming decreased ontological security.

BU actors in Uganda dealt with these challenges to their ontological security by employing coping and self-protection mechanisms. More coping than self-protection mechanisms were identified in Uganda, which both had positive and negative effects on IDP protection. Coping mechanisms showed many overlaps with positive and negative Agency. Additionally, BU actors identified family, friends and NGOs as positive coping mechanisms. Coping mechanisms also differed to the extent that some were more practical (like hiding in the bush at night and farming during the day, travelling to the fields in groups or sleeping in different places in the bush every night), while others were more personal (like receiving counselling or comforting each other, using one's intellect and knowledge and praying). An examples of a negative coping mechanisms was fleeing without bringing anything. After the war, BU actors were increasingly able to utilise self-protection mechanisms such as education, psycho-social assistance, rights fulfilment and Village Saving and Loan Schemes. Unfortunately, the implementation of rights is challenged, psycho-social assistance and education is not always available and IDPs suffered from lack of respect and land wrangling, negatively influencing their protection. The fact that more coping than self-protection mechanisms were identified in the BU data shows that BU actors in Uganda have been (during the war) and still are (post-war) mostly active in the bottom part of the protection pyramid. This observation is strengthened by the pre-occupation, within coping mechanisms, on safety and farming. Having said this, more positive than negative coping mechanisms were identified, which means that the bottom of the protection pyramid has a stable base upon which the top halve can materialise.

During the war the negative effect of constraining Structures, compounded by the negative constraining time-space, had a strong negative effect on IDP protection. However, after the war, with the time-space being moved out towards its normal position, the negative constraining Structure has not quite disappeared and Structure remains weak. This weakness became visible in issues such as lack of rights fulfilment. The larger number of negative than

positive DS follows logically from the predominantly constraining Structures. Structures were not differentiated between higher or lower levels, even though they existed at different levels. The final observations which can be made about BU data in Uganda confirms that though all elements had positive and negative manifestations, Agency was mostly positive while Structure and the Duality of Structure were mostly negative. Coping and self-protection mechanisms were utilised to counter these negative influences but no mechanisms were mentioned which were both coping and self-protection mechanisms. This is a clear difference in relation to Colombia, as will be further elaborated upon in the next subsection.

4.6.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Six

The benefit of having activities, as observed in Colombia, which utilised both coping and self-protection mechanisms, touches upon an important element within PPA, which is that both the top and bottom halve of the protection pyramid are needed for IDP protection. In this section this has also been shown by Agency and Structure working together in the Duality of Structure. The manifestation of Agency and Structure (either positive or negative) determined, in both case study countries, whether DS was positive or negative. Another observation which can be deduced from comparing the two case study countries is the presence of more self-protection mechanisms in Colombia than Uganda. This is interesting as Colombia is still suffering from civil war, a constraining Structure which diminishes the protective capacity of the protection pyramid due to the negative constraining time-space it creates.

In Uganda BU actors, both during as well as after the war, still rely heavily on their coping mechanisms. This means that the level of protection in Uganda is lower than that of Colombia. Part of the explanation for this can be found in the lingering on of the negative time-space of war in Uganda. Additionally, the non-recognition of BU actors of enabling Structures TD actors created in the legal sphere (such as the limited acknowledgement and lack of knowledge on IDP rights), negatively contributed to IDP protection because it created more cases negative Duality of Structure in Uganda compared to Colombia. Rephrasing the above from a Colombian perspective shows the positive effect of recognizing enabling Structures, both in relation to Structure, but also because of their positive effect on the Duality of Structure. A positive DS can be so powerful that its effect positively contributes to IDP protection regardless of the ongoing civil war in Colombia and the negative constraining time-space it creates. In Uganda where the time-space has been pushed to its normal position, IDP protection is still decreased due to the presence of negative Duality of Structure.

Another difference between the two countries is the observation, in Colombia, of higher and lower level Structures, as well as the fact that lower level Structures have the possibility of positively affecting higher level ones. This realisation highlights the protective capacity of Structures in Colombia and the weakness of Structures in Uganda. Differences between the case study countries can also be observed in relation to Agency. In Uganda,

negative Agency is mostly experienced by BU actors due to internal reasons (such as lack of trust) while in Colombia negative agency is 'imposed' on BU actors by external factors (not getting a job because of an IDP status forcing IDPs to lie).

Using PPA component six to analyse the BU data collected in both case study countries leads to an important realisation. When utilising the PPA, it is not only important to analysing IDP protection from the perspective of different components but it is also necessary to pay attention to the component's elements. For PPA component six this meant realising how the manifestation of Structure influences the Duality of Structure which, at the same time, can be offset by coping or self-protection mechanisms. Only when analysing the interaction of all component elements the actual effect on IDP protection can be determined. The effect of PPA component seven on IDP protection is presented in the next subsection.

4.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement

In the seventh component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the three phases of displacement are added to the protection pyramid. Phase one covers protection from displacement, phase provides protection during displacement while phase three focuses on protection during return, resettlement and reintegration. The division in three phases is based on the division maintained in the Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement. When multiple displacements occur, phase one and two alternate and get repeated, which is why they are shown together. When this occurs IDPs move downwards in the protection pyramid, as can be seen by the arrow to the right of figure 4.7. When IDPs are able to stay for a longer duration of time in one location their protection increases and they move upwards in the pyramid. The aim of component seven is to determine the way displacement occurred in the two case study countries and what BU actor's corresponding needs, concerns and capacities were. This will first be done for both case study countries individually (subsections one and two) after which the findings will be compared (subsection three).

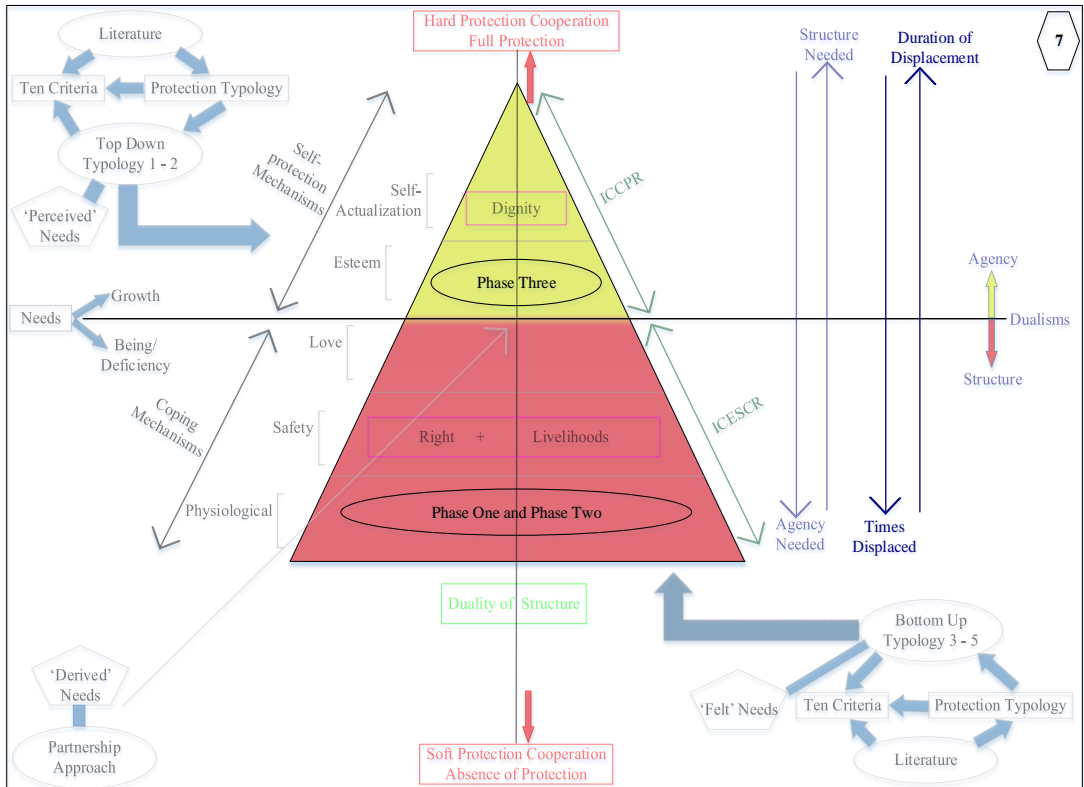


Figure 4.7: PPA Component Seven - Phases of IDP Displacement

4.7.1 Colombia

In Colombia, most IDPs have not yet returned, this means that phase three has not materialised yet and only phase one and two apply. Visualising this in a protection pyramid means that the top half of the pyramid is still missing (represented by the dotted line of phase three in figure 4.7.1), as a result IDPs in Colombia are not optimally protected. In addition to this most BU actors have been displaced multiple times, alternating between phase one and two.

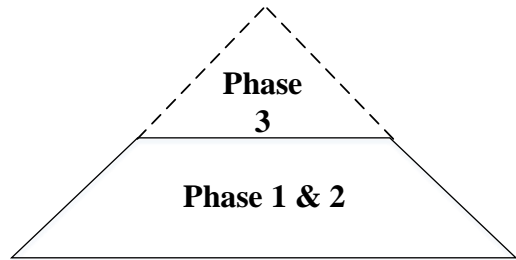


Figure 4.7.1: Colombian Displacement Phases

The reasons provided by BU actors to displace were war related. In some cases, BU actors were given an ultimatum before they had to leave as TD actors would take over their land and properties. If given an ultimatum BU actors had the possibility to pack a bag. When able to pack a bag BU actors reported bringing ID and property papers, clothes, food, money, valuables and practical goods like flashlights and batteries. Being able to take ID and property papers (when BU actors possessed these papers), this eased the process of making a declaration and entering the land restitution process. To get away BU actors used physical strength and/or transportation, while some relied on family and friends. Some BU actors decided to stay as close as possible to their village for as long as possible. At the moment of displacement BU actors also had to make decisions regarding their family. Some decided to leave family members behind, others split their families, displacing in different directions.

When being forced to displace, entering phase two, most IDPs moved to large cities. In their place of displacement some BU actors made an IDP Declaration, giving them access to assistance (including food, education, health care and psychological support) as well as enabling them to start the land restitution process. In many cases this declaration was not made immediately due to lack of knowledge, distrust of the Government, being able to take care of oneself and relying on family and friends. Other IDPs would set up IDP organisations and support networks to help each other to find work, access land, set up productive projects or find safety and comfort. BU actors also wanted to make their suffering known to the world and learned about their rights in this phase. Additionally, some BU actors received practical assistance such as mattresses, blankets, clothes and kitchen utensils in phase two.

At the time of visiting Colombia most BU actors had not returned yet but indicated their wish to. BU actors had therefore not yet accessed phase three of displacement. Return was not possible due to insecurity in their home areas. Security issues with illegal armed groups first needed be solved before the Government provided IDPs with the Guarantee of No Repetition, a prerequisite for return. Return was also hampered by lack of education and job opportunities in the return areas.

The insecurity which prevented phase three to materialise is similar to the insecurity BU actors experienced in phase one. The move to the large cities provided IDPs with a level of physical and additional security. The extent of protection in all phases of displacement in Colombia depends on how displacement started. If BU actors were given an ultimatum they could prepare for their departure, bringing personal and property papers with them. This eased the declaration and land restitution process in phase two and would, if successful, determine how well protected BU actors would be in phase three. If BU actors had to leave at the spur of the moment and were not able to bring anything with them, this decreased their chances of protection in all following phases. The land restitution process BU actors started in phase two applied to phase three, even though the security situation did not permit phase three from materializing yet. The extent to which BU actors possessed knowledge on their rights had a similar effect on all displacement phases. The lack of rights knowledge, however, was partially offset by knowledge provided by IDP organisations. The effect of displacement on IDP protection in Uganda can be read in the next subsection.

4.7.2 Uganda

Displacement in Uganda has gone through all three phases of displacement. Yet BU actors in Uganda had a worse starting position compared to BU actors in Colombia due to a lower general level of rights knowledge. Many BU actors in Uganda emphasised the actual moment of displacement, sometimes seeing it as a separate phase. In this research this moment is not considered as such. In Uganda BU actors alternate between phase one and two, which is why these two phases are shown together in the bottom half of the protection pyramid. The needs and concerns identified by BU actors however change in each displacement phase.

In phase one of displacement some aspects of protection were good. BU actors were for example able to farm, children went to school and families were living at their homes. Other aspects of protection were already challenged, such as the lack of rights knowledge within BU actors. Interestingly, while some aspects of BU protection gradually decreased in each subsequent phase (such as issues with land), other aspects, like rights, increased during the subsequent displacement phases. Both in the camps and upon return BU actors were offered and enjoyed training on rights. The lack of rights knowledge at the start of their displacement, did however negatively impact on their displacement. Certain protection aspects (such as education) were suboptimal during all displacement phases. Finally, some protection activities engaged in within phase one, temporarily halted in phase two and started up again in phase three (farming, at least for those BU actors who could access land).

In phase two BU actors relied heavily on their coping mechanisms. This was necessary because IDPs experienced challenges to their physical security (due to the fighting and lack of assistance), emotional wellbeing (inability to take care of their families) and economic, social and cultural needs (not being able to farm, find work, lack of privacy and loss of cultural

values in the camps). Phase two saw the most intense fighting. The (involuntary) move into the camps was both an improvement as well as a challenge to IDP protection.

In phase three of displacement the security situation improved considerably with the signing of Cessation of Hostilities Agreement. Peace, freedom and equality as well as access to counselling positively contributed to IDP protection. At the same time, however many BU actors still needed, but did not have, access to assistance and were suffering the effects of land wrangling, making it difficult for them to farm. IDP protection was also challenged in phase three by lack of respect and destroyed houses, schools, hospitals and infrastructure.

Visualising the three displacement phases in a protection pyramid shows that, though phases one and two alternate in Uganda and phase three follows upon phases one and two (in line with the chapter two protection pyramid), the needs experienced by BU actors in each displacement phase are those depicted by a complete protection pyramid. Therefore, instead of showing the three phases of displacement within one protection pyramid, each protection pyramid should be depicted in a separate pyramid.

Each of these protection pyramids is shaped representing the duration of a displacement phase. As displacement in Uganda is generally believed to have ended in 2010 the three-displacement phase related protection pyramids for this case study country are shown in consecutive order and looks like figure 4.7.2.

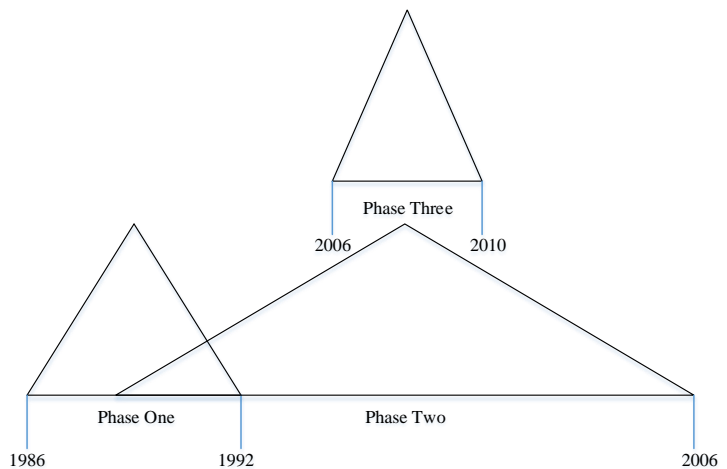


Figure 4.7.2: Ugandan Displacement Phases in Consecutive Pyramids

4.7.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven

Comparing how displacement of BU actors influence IDP protection in both case study countries shows that, according to BU actors in both countries, the actual moment of displacement influences protection in all subsequent phases. BU actors in phase one in Colombia experienced violence and threats, but their protection generally improves after having moved to the large cities. BU actors in Uganda experienced a similar threat to their protection in phase one, compared to Colombia, but contrary to BU actors in Colombia, did not see as large an improvement in IDP protection. This can be explained by the place BU actors displace to (large cities in Colombia and the bush or camps in Uganda). Government

involvement also differed in both case study countries (strongly influencing displacement phase two in Uganda, but not so much in Colombia). Another difference between both countries relates to the alternations between phases one and two. In Colombia, though some IDPs mentioned being displaced multiple times, this was less than the multiple displacement experienced by IDPs in Uganda. This caused phases one and two to alternate more in Uganda than in Colombia. Land played a large role in PPA component seven but in different ways and phases in both countries. While land was a reason for displacement in Colombia, it was a larger problem for IDP protection in phase three in Uganda (land wrangling). Nevertheless, land problems negatively influenced displacement phase three prevented it from occurring in Colombia and BU actors not being able to access their own land in Uganda.

The difference in BU actors' rights knowledge is markedly different in both countries, being much higher in Colombia than in Uganda. This means BU actors in Colombia were better able to contribute to their own protection (by making a declaration or *tutellas*). In Uganda, BU actors acquired rights knowledge towards the end or even after displacement, decreasing their possibilities to contribute to their own protection. The lack of rights knowledge of Ugandan IDPs is compounded by the fact that there are no IDP organisations, like in Colombia, to compensate for the problems this caused to IDP protection. As a result, according to the BU data, IDP protection in Uganda is lower than that of IDPs in Colombia. The strong influence of rights shows the added benefit, promoted in the PPA, to focus on different components when determining IDP protection. The use of PPA showed the higher level of IDP protection in Colombia compared to Uganda. Given the importance of the different components of PPA, the next section analyses the effect on IDP protection of the interaction between these components.

4.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD

Component eight is the final component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). This component includes all previous components and adds a feedback mechanism, as shown in figure 4.8. The lessons learned offered to BU and TD actors enables them to improve their contributions to IDP protection. The feedback mechanism ensures that the aim of the PPA, which is to contribute to IDP protection by increasing the understanding of it, is consolidated within both actors, which will improve BU and TD actors to future IDP crises. The first two subsections show how, based on the BU data collected in each country, the interaction promoted by PPA (both inter and intra component) increases the understanding of how BU actors can contribute to their own protection. In the third subsection, a comparison of PPA interactions and feedback to BU/TD actors, in both case study countries, is provided.

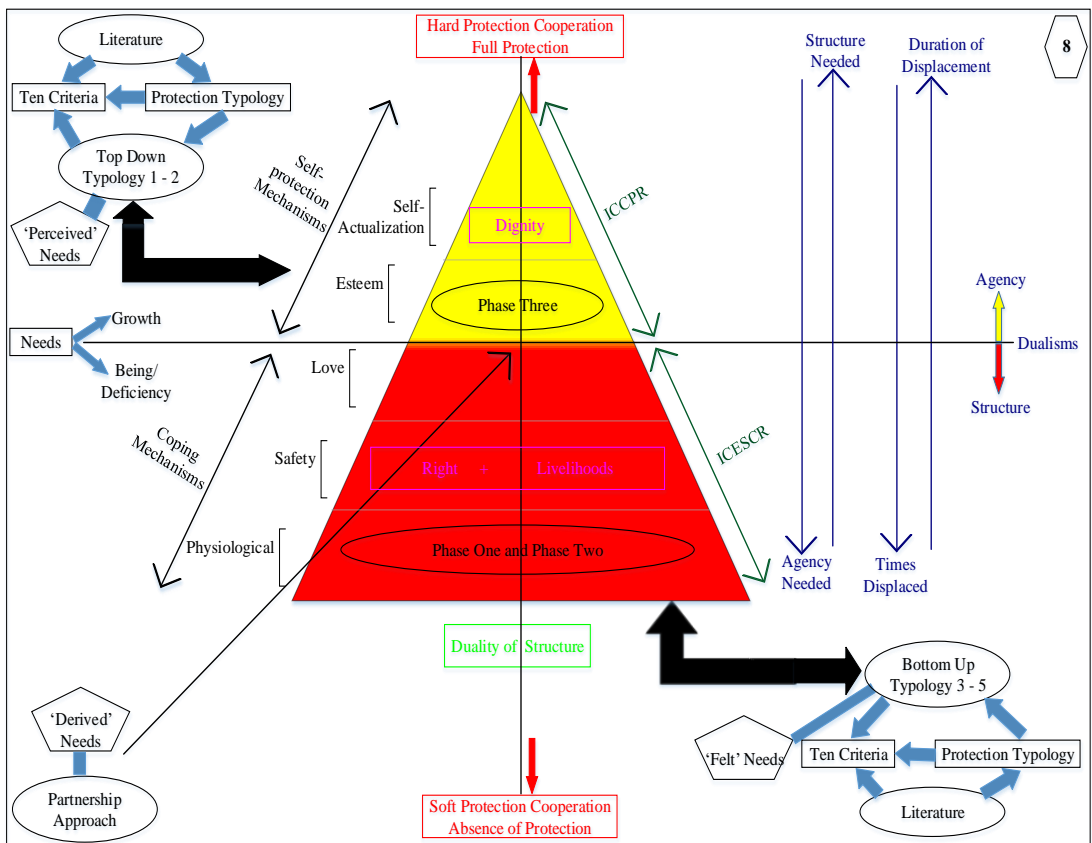


Figure 4.8: PPA Component Eight - Combined Protection Pyramid with Feedback Mechanism

4.8.1 Colombia

In the discussions of the previous seven components it has been shown how PPA can be used to analyse BU data and how each component element contributes to IDP protection as each

component (elements) clarifies aspects of the IDP crisis. This means that the analysis of the components helped understand the protection culture and context, the protection providers etc. in Colombia. Each component, through its unique perspective increased BU actor's understanding of IDP protection in Colombia. If a component contributes to increased understanding of IDP protection, as foreseen in the theoretical protection pyramid of chapter two (shown by figure 4.8 above), the component (or its element) is shown in the same way. If, however, a component (element) only provides suboptimal increased understanding it is shown with a dotted cross (or arrow). If the component (or one of its elements) has a negative effect on IDP protection than it is crossed, or if it has no influence, it is left out. Combining the contributions of each of the seven protection components developed based on the analysis of the BU data in Colombia leads to figure 4.8.1.

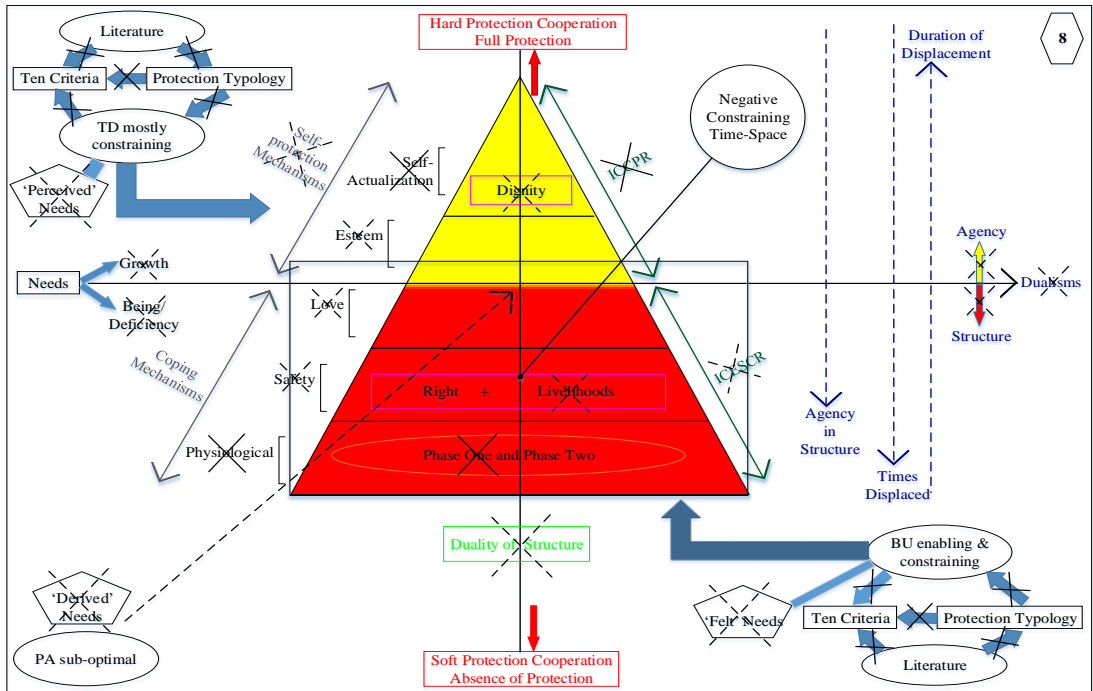


Figure 4.8.1: PPA Components based on BU Data Colombia

The goal of the eight PPA component is to determine whether BU actors in Colombia have used each component and its elements in an interactive way, and how this influenced IDP protection. Additionally, for IDP protection to be optimal, PPA components should be strong. Working on improving the protective capacity of components, BU actors should use a hierarchical approach, starting with the bottom half of the pyramid (as explained in PPA component three on Maslow's theory). Looking at figure 4.8.1 it becomes clear that only component elements were able to contribute to improved understanding of IDP protection in

Colombia. At the component level, most components had both a positive and negative influence (shown by the dotted cross). The component element with most impact on IDP protection was the Rights element, increasing the understanding of how to contribute to improved protection. Given that the input of most component (and their elements) was suboptimal, IDP protection in Colombia was also suboptimal. This conclusion, based on the summary presented in figure 4.8.1, is not surprising. It is in line with the conclusion presented in chapter two. There it was concluded that existing protection models and approaches on their own do not provide comprehensive protection. Given that each PPA protection component deals with only one perspective, the summary of these components leads to suboptimal protection. This conclusion shows that the added value of the PPA lies in the fact that it uses multiple approaches, has a clear hierarchical roadmap and pays attention to the protection culture and context.

In the Colombian BU data, it became clear that, instead of a hierarchical approach, BU actors have a preoccupation with the top halve of the protection pyramid, regardless of the challenges to the bottom halve. This observation necessitates a deviation from the hierarchical logic dictated by component three, and instead attends to the cultural and contextual preferences indicated by the BU actors. By doing so BU actors show understanding of the protection culture and context (fulfilling component one) which will increase their contribution to IDP protection, making it more dignifying.

IDP protection increases through the inter-component interaction. This takes place when IDPs submit *tutellas*. By doing so IDP use the Rights element (component four) to fulfil needs in the five layers of Maslow's theory (component three). While most elements in component three (the pyramid's layers), on their own, suboptimally contributed to protection, when interacting with other elements, they make a positive contribution to IDP protection.

The protective effect of the interaction between different protection components can have even more far reaching effects, such as breaking through the negative time-space which constrains the pyramid from reaching its full potential. Due to the negative time-space, the top part of the pyramid is challenged. Not only are the esteem and self-actualisation layers hampered, IDPs cannot utilise their Agency as they please, have problems utilising self-protection mechanisms as well as fulfilling ICCPR. BU actors, by setting up IDP organisations, increase inter-component interaction, break through the negative constraining time-space, ensuring a more positive contribution of the aforementioned component elements. IDP organisations show inter-component interaction because, as such, these organisations self-protection mechanisms (M5), which can submit *tutellas*, which means they utilise the rights element while being recognised as a Legal Personality in line with ICCPR Article 16, and at the same time create enabling structures. BU actors setting up IDP organisations push the negative constraining time-space back to its normal position. This paves the way for BU/TD interaction in PAP, creating a movement along the protection continuum towards hard

protection cooperation and full protection. Full protection is easier reached when protection components are explicitly mentioned, instead of only indirectly.

The issue of land shows clearly how inter and intra-component interaction contributes to IDP protection. In Colombia, not all land related inter and intra component interactions, however, positively contribute to IDP protection. Land has the possibility to directly strengthen Maslow’s first and fifth layer, while indirectly contributing to layer four. Land can contribute to the first layer by enabling IDPs to farm, which gives them access to food. However, in the Colombian case, (il)legal armed groups took IDPs land, depriving it of its positive contribution to IDP protection. Land contributing to layer five as it shapes IDPs’ identity (through the concept of territory). Improvements in the top of the pyramid, strengthens IDP Agency, which then can contribute positively to Structure, (shown by the left protection pyramid in figure 4.8.2). With Agency strengthening Structure, Structure then, according to the Structure in Agency arrow, can strengthen Agency. The Structure in the most right protection pyramid of figure 4.8.2 is however so severely constrained that it does not bring Structure to Agency (black cross). This shows that regardless of the enabling Structures the negative effect of land on the bottom half of the protection pyramid, constrains Structure to such an extent that it is not able to strengthen Agency.

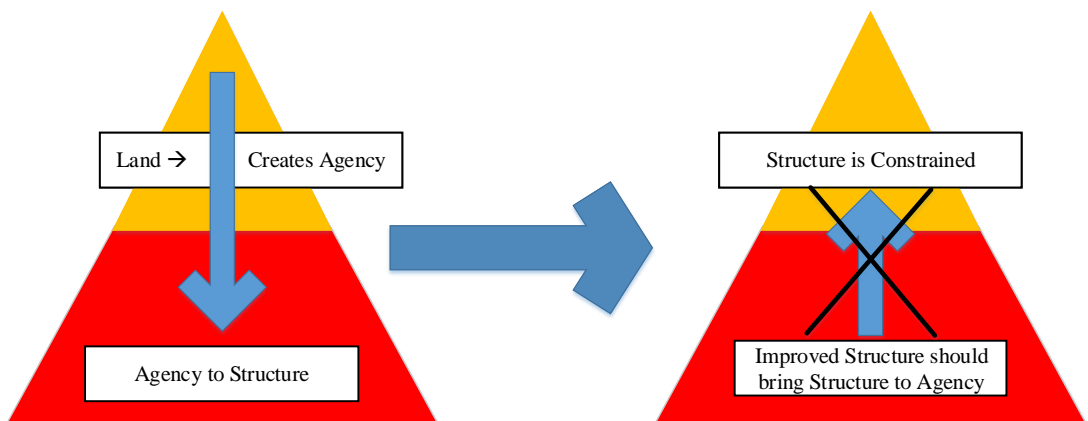


Figure 4.8.2: Effect of Land on Agency in Structure and Structure in Agency

Figure 4.8.2 shows the theoretical movements of Agency and Structure and how they are constrained by the land related constrained Structure. The lack of protection potential can be explained by the decrease in Dignity which IDPs experience when they are not able to take care of their families. Negative Dignity, either due to their land taken away from them, but also developing as a result of having to flee, can become so dominant that it prevents other component elements from being utilised, thereby limiting inter component interactions. Some IDPs find the categorisation as IDP, Dignity decreasing and therefore chose not to make a declaration. In this situation, the dignity decreasing effect of the IDP status, outweighs the contribution of the fulfilment of layer one (entitling IDPs to assistance). IDPs then chose not to make a declaration. Not making a declaration also negatively affects IDPs’ livelihoods and

the fulfilment of ICESCR Article 11 (Adequate Standard of Living). This example the inter component interaction which follows the decision not to make a declaration therefore has a negative effect on IDP protection. Since the negative influence originated from the Dignity element this is described as a negative Dignity injection column (represented by the left pyramid of figure 4.8.3).

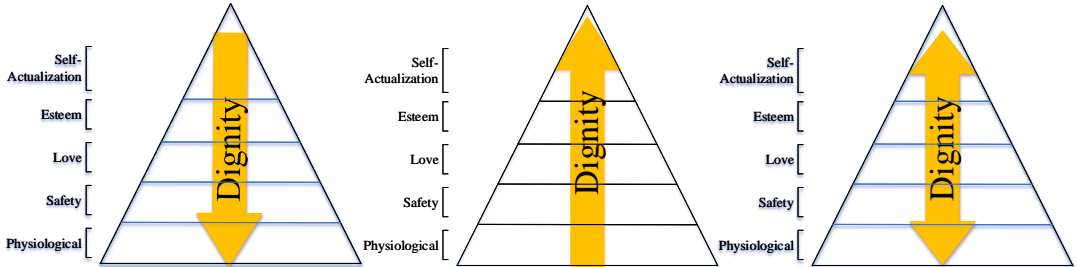


Figure 4.8.3: Two-way Dignity Injection Column in Protection Pyramid in Colombia

The opposite of a negative Dignity injection column, a positive Dignity injection column (represented by the middle pyramid of figure 4.8.3) was also observed in Colombia. To describe the effect of such a positive Dignity injection column the example of making a declaration is used again. The Dignity increasing effect of being able to take care of one's family is so important to IDPs in Colombia that they make a declaration. They do so regardless of reports of threats to IDPs after making the declaration, the cumbersome, lengthy procedure and the fact that it still does not always result in work. The challenges that IDPs note in the bottom half of the pyramid are taken away by the increase in their Dignity, Esteem and Agency. Making the declaration IDPs, through the positive Dignity injection column, overcome the challenges in the lower half of the pyramid, strengthening the lower half and enabling an upwards movement to occur again in the protection pyramid. The Dignity element is so strong that it can counter any challenges to the lower levels of the pyramid. Dignity therefore can have a protection enhancing and decreasing effect, or both, as shown in the last pyramid of figure 4.8.3. When analysing the BU data in Colombia many examples of Dignity-injection columns were observed.

Going back to figure 4.8.1 at the beginning of this subsection it can be observed that, based on the analysis of the BU data, TD actors in Colombia have a mostly constraining influence on IDP protection. This negative influence on IDP protection influences inter component interaction. TD actors have been described as constraining because they are considered corrupt and discriminatory vis-à-vis IDPs. These two negative activities affect both the top and bottom half of the protection pyramid. Discriminating BU actors trying to find work, based on their IDP status, creates a constraining Structure. Discrimination also negatively affects Agency, when IDP children have problems accessing education. Both of these effects negatively affect IDP Dignity but also the fulfilment of Rights (including ICESCR Articles 6/13/14, Right to Work and Education). TD actors' discriminatory practices

preventing IDPs from getting a job challenge IDP Livelihoods and the fulfilment of M1 and M2. Therefore, corruption and discrimination do not only negatively affect Agency and Structure but as a result also other PPA components (elements). The point to be emphasised here is how one negative protection component (element) can have a negative snowball effect on other protection component (elements) and their interaction, as can be seen in figure 4.8.4.

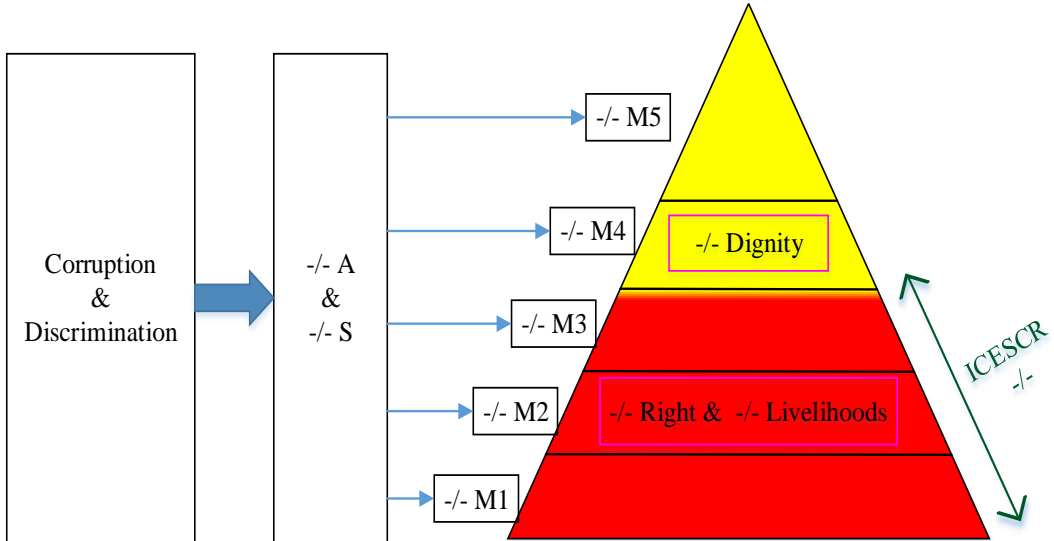


Figure 4.8.4: Negative Influence Component Two on Components Three till Six

The added benefit of component eight includes the addition of a feedback mechanism. This means that the negative effect of TD actors being a constraining influence on IDP protection, can be reported back to the TD actors, giving them the possibility to address this. Specific feedback to TD actors would be to stop corruption and end discriminatory practices, instead acting more as duty-bearers fulfilling their responsibilities vis-à-vis IDPs by implementing the legal framework protecting IDPs. Feedback should also include pointing out the strong protection enhancing effect of the existing IDP legal framework in Colombia which positively contributes to IDP protection. Some feedback has a large protection enhancing snowball effect, such as ending land problems or stopping the war. The positive snowball effect of solving IDPs' land problems not only improve layers one and five, but also positively contributes to the Livelihoods element and strengthens IDP Agency. This gives IDPs the possibility to start pushing the negative constraining time-space towards its normal position, allowing the protection pyramid to reach its full potential. Solving land problems does not only mean that TD actors provide an enabling Structure, allowing for the manifestation of Structure in Agency. It also means that the third phase of displacement could materialise.

Feedback is not only provided to TD but also to BU actors, even though their contribution to IDP protection has been mostly enabling. BU actors can work on improving their lack of trust and self-respect. These negative feelings negatively impact the Dignity element, causing a negative Dignity injection column. Though BU actors are not able to change TD imposed negative Dignity (relating to discrimination when finding work), they do have the possibility to strengthen internal Dignity creating a positive Dignity injection column. BU actors can also refrain from engaging in negative activities and increase the use of their self-protection mechanisms. BU actors should be applauded for the use of their coping mechanisms and the rights element, and encourage them to continue to make *tutellas*. The feedback mechanism of component eight shows how both BU and TD actors can improve their contributions to IDP protection. The BU and TD effect on IDP protection and the lessons the two actors can learn from the case study Uganda is presented below.

4.8.2 Uganda

Similarly, to Colombia, the analysis of the Ugandan BU data in the previous seven protection components results in an overview the contribution of each PPA component to IDP protection. As can be seen in figure 4.8.5 some component elements positively contribute to IDP protection while others only have a suboptimal contribution (shown by a dotted cross or arrow), a negative impact (full cross) or no impact at all (left out) on IDP protection.

Figure 4.8.5, in which almost all components and their elements are represented in their suboptimal format, shows that on their own none of the PPA components can provide IDP protection. To be able to provide protection to IDPs in Uganda, BU actors should utilise all PPA protection components which includes working together with TD actors. Similarly, to what was explained in relation to Colombia, both actors in Uganda have the possibility to strengthen the different (suboptimal) PPA components and their elements in a hierarchical way, focusing first on the bottom half of the pyramid and then on the top half. This approach is the one followed by BU actors in Uganda as the analysis of the BU data showed that BU actors in Uganda are predominantly focused on the bottom half of the protection pyramid. Nevertheless, activities in the top half of the pyramid take place too. The extent to which inter and intra component interaction contributes to IDP protection in Uganda is discussed below, after the presentation of figure 4.8.5 showing all PPA components.

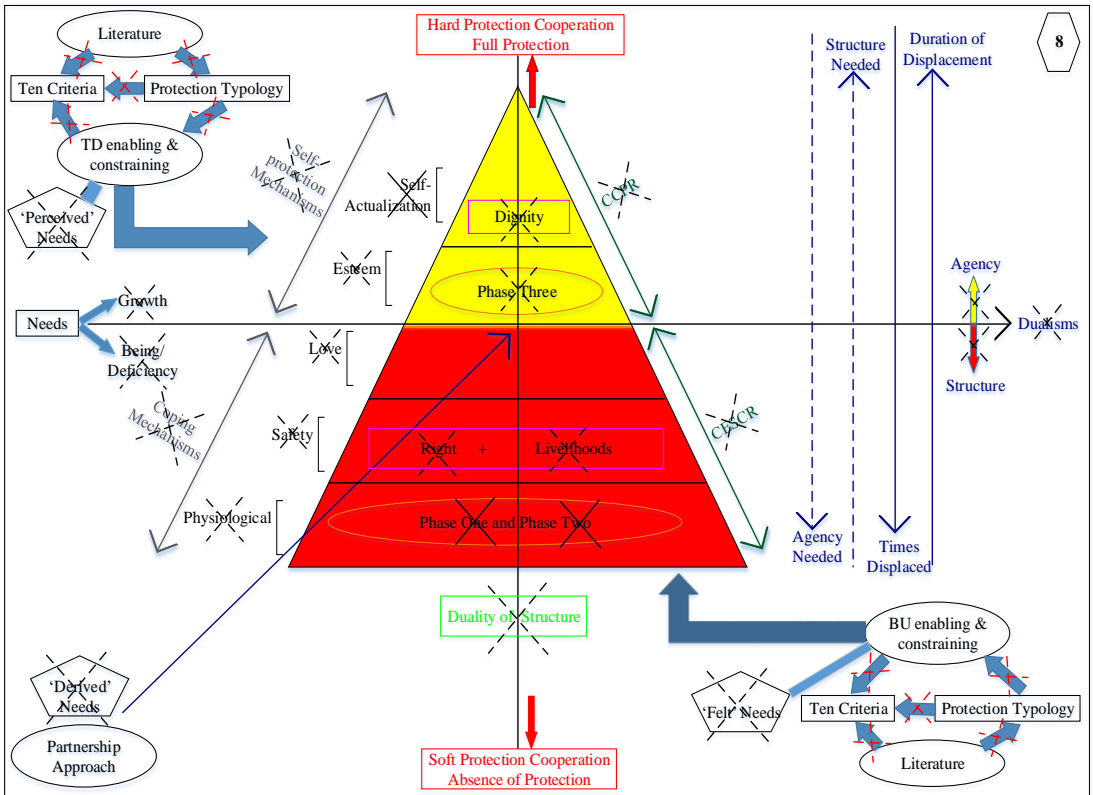


Figure 4.8.5: PPA Components based on BU Data Uganda

Based on the analysis of the BU data in Uganda, it can be observed that TD actors strengthened rights education (the Rights element in PPA component four). This activity increased IDP Agency and allows them to move upward within the pyramid but also between displacement phases two and three. Shortcomings in the Rights element lead to a barrier between the two halves of the pyramid making it more difficult for IDPs to proceed to the top of the pyramid where protection is optimal. Structure and allows movement within the pyramid thereby also strengthening Agency, adding Agency and Structure to each half of the pyramid. Strengthening the Rights element has, because of its positive inter-component interaction effect, contributes to improved IDP protection. At the same time, strengthening rights knowledge, strengthens Visually this is represented by the two protection pyramids in figure 4.8.6.

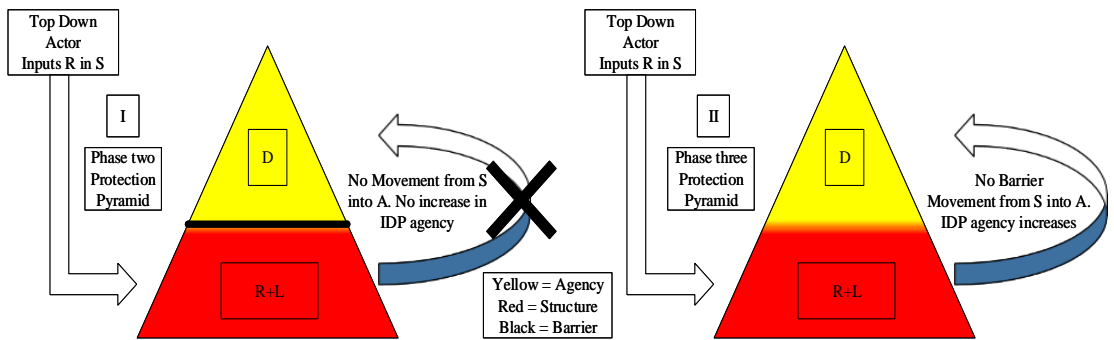


Figure 4.8.6: Barriers preventing TD-R Input benefitting BU

The increase in rights knowledge also has a positive influence on the fulfilment of the two Covenants. Improved knowledge on rights makes IDPs demand food which strengthens the livelihoods component and, through the protection formula logic, also Dignity. Unfortunately, the rights component of R/L/D is also weakened by for example the behaviour of Government soldiers. Not only does this mean that a TD actor is not enabling, it also means the certain rights in both ICESCR and ICCPR are breached. Government soldiers, during LRA attacks on IDP camps, have accidentally killed IDPs, breaching their right to life. The soldiers have also prevented the Freedom of Movement which negatively impacted IDPs livelihoods, though livelihoods were positively impacted by food assistance. The way in which food assistance was provided, however, had a negative effect on dignity because standing in line decreased the self-esteem of, especially, men and cultural leaders. At the same time, however the food distributions, targeting women, empowered them, increasing women's Agency, feelings of self-esteem and Dignity. In conclusion, the food distributions, had a different effect on the two genders while strengthening the interaction between some components but weakening intra-component interactions as well. The latter can be observed in PPA component five were some right, such as the Right to Adequate Standard of Living were improved by food distributions but challenged others, such as the Right to Equality. This example of intra and inter component interaction shows how the positive or negative manifestation of a component element (the rights element) affects IDP protection.

Another example of inter and intra component interaction and its effect on IDP protection can be seen in the analysis of education. Education is negatively impacted in the different phases of displacement. IDPs have highlighted problems accessing education during displacement but also upon return not all children were able to go to school. This did not only mean that their rights were breached, but also negatively affected their livelihoods (lacking knowledge negatively influences the possibilities BU actors have to contribute to their own protection) and decreases their dignity. When BU actors were able to access education, for example in the camps, this had a strong protection increasing effect. Therefore, education creates two opposing forces within protection pyramid, with opposing effects on IDP

protection (represented in figure 4.8.7). On the one hand, access to education increases IDP protection and the positive effect of education allows them to move from a phase two protection pyramid to a phase three protection pyramid (green arrow). The green upward arrow represents the presence of schools in the IDP camps, showing that in phase two IDPs were able to move through all layers of the pyramid. With the end of the war education also became possible in phase three. However, on the other hand, within the phase three protection pyramid (top pyramid), IDPs experience an inability to move upwards to enjoy full education, due to the lingering effect of the war. The war, which created a negative constraining time-space in phase two, still continues to exist in phase three, constraining the enjoyment of education in that phase. The negative constraining time-space therefore transcends different displacement phases hampering phase three pyramid from reaching its full potential, instead moving away from IDP protection (shown by the red arrow). Education has positive and negative effects on IDP protection when analysed from an inter and intra component perspective.

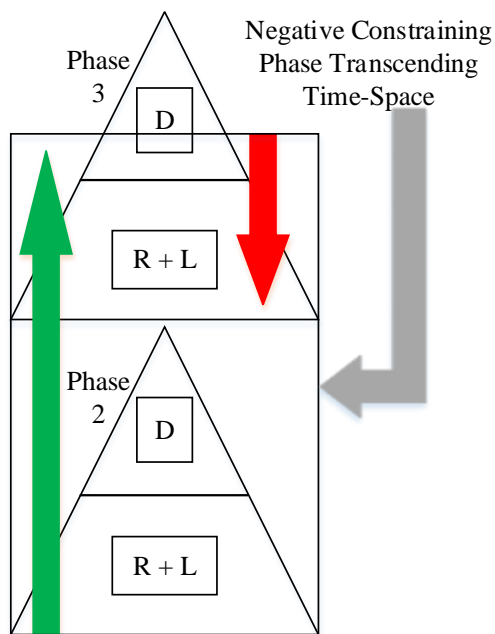


Figure 4.8.7: Opposing Movement Within and Between Protection Pyramids

The return process, symbolised by the movement from displacement phase two to three, also has both a positive and negative effect on IDP protection when utilising an inter and intra PPA component analysis. Safe and voluntary return is a key prerequisite for return, enshrined in the Guiding Principles of Internal Displacement and should be offered by TD actors. The Government of Uganda indicated that return was possible due to increased security in the return areas of return and closed the camps in response to this. By initiating the return movement, it could be argued that TD actors addressed BU's safety needs, dignity as well as creating an enabling Structure. However, camps were closed without any consideration for BU actors, they were not consulted. Instead the return process was enforced on them (by the closure of the camps) and though entering phase three means moving upwards in the protection pyramid, the TD activity was Dignity decreasing, disregarding BU Agency and breaching BU actors Right to Freedom of Movement. The unilateral TD decision to close the camps could have been an ideal situation to apply the Partnership Approach to protection and use the Duality of Structure contributing to the improvement of IDP protection. Instead PAP and DS became a negative influence on IDP protection. Additionally, the dignity decreasing effect of the camp closure negatively affected BU's safety needs, preventing them to take care

of their families (breaching love needs and ICESCR Article 10). The negative Dignity created a negative Dignity injection column (shown by the left protection pyramid in figure 4. 8.8.) negatively influenced the bottom half of the pyramid.

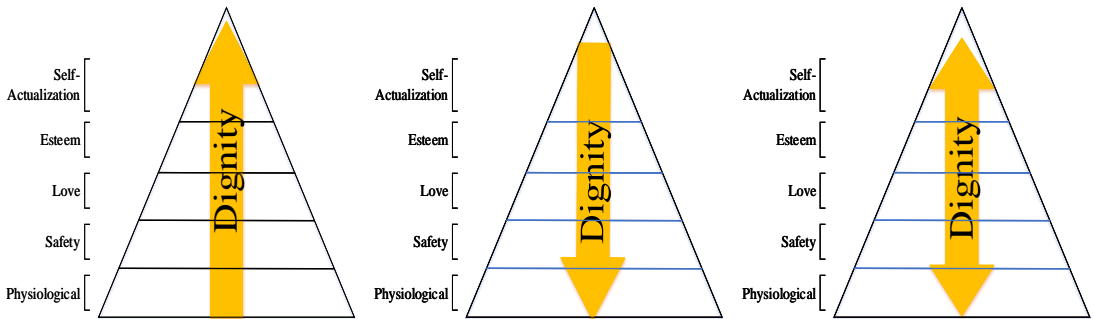


Figure 4.8.8: Positive and Negative Dignity Injection Column in Uganda

Examples of a positive Dignity injection column were also observed in Uganda, following from the example of access education in the camps. Though food assistance was often lacking and IDPs were not able to farm their land due to insecurity (all threats to the lower half of the protection pyramid), education still had a positive effect on IDP protection due to the positive Dignity injection column (shown by the middle pyramid in figure 4.8.8). This column gave BU actors the strength to look for alternatives, such as farming the land of others, or asking the Government soldiers to escort them to their land to farm. In Uganda, therefore, the Dignity injection column can have both a positive and negative effect on IDP protection, as shown in the most right pyramid of figure 4.8.8.

A process similar to the Dignity injection column can also be observed in other protection components, for example within component six (Structuration Theory). TD actors providing information to BU actors not only created awareness and empowerment, strengthen the Agency element of ST. As a result of the Agency in Structure and Structure in Agency arrows, increasing Agency strengthens the lower half of the protection pyramid, contributing to an enabling structure. With the lower half of pyramid being well developed, this in turn provides the foundation upon which the top half of the pyramid can develop. Continuing with the information example. Increased information strengthens the rights element, improving BU access to the entitlements of their rights, such as livelihoods but also physiological needs. Being able to access food improves BU's ability to take care of their family and move away from coping to self-protection mechanisms. In other words, increased information, creates positive Agency in the top of the pyramid, bringing Agency to S, strengthening Structure which creates an upward movement to improve Agency. This process is depicted in figure 4.8.9.

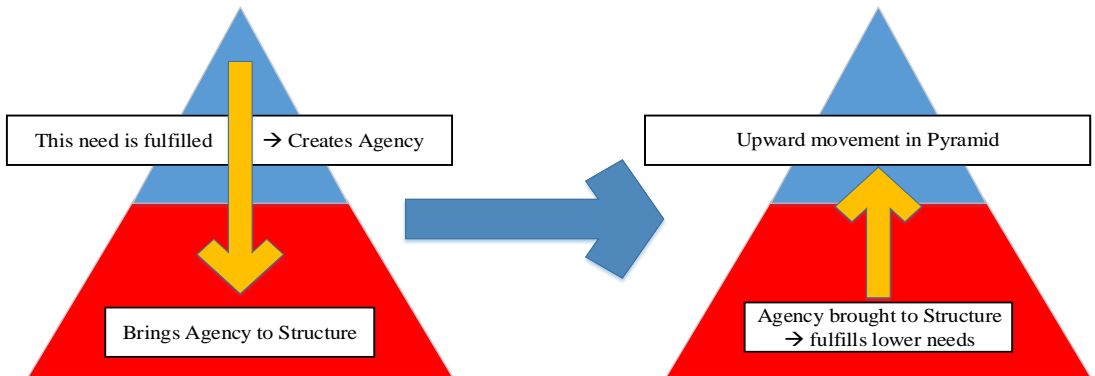


Figure 4.8.9: Positive Agency Injection Column on Fulfilment of Lower Halve of Protection Pyramid

Having focused on the influence of TD actors on IDP protection based on the analysis of BU data, the BU data also shows how BU actors activities, and the resulting intra and inter component interactions, affected their own protection. Some BU actors wanting to return have not done so yet to satisfy the needs of family members. In these case BU's own wish to return has been sacrificed (constraining component seven) for the benefit of a family, which then becomes a constraining Structure (component six). In most cases family members, did not want to return due to lack of educational facilities in the return areas. Education strengthens the rights and livelihoods element of the family, but decreases the dignity element of the individual BU actor. Structure then dominates Agency. The interplay between S/A, R/L/D and return shows the effect of inter and intra component interaction on protection.

The lessons learned from the inter and intra component interaction which can be fed back to both BU and TD actors are the following. Feedback to BU actors includes expressing their 'felt' needs as clearly as possible to the relevant TD actors. They should also not engage in activities that endanger their own protection. In relation to the rights element, BU actors are advised to increase awareness of this, not only focusing on the entitlements of rights. Explicitly noticing Rights releases the large protection potential of this element, as it has the possibility to positive influence many other protection elements and their interactions in the protection pyramid. Additionally, BU actors should also be aware of the increased protection potential of Dignity and Agency. As such it might be necessary for BU actors to change their perception of situations and increase their use of self-protection mechanisms. BU actors should also compensate for TD actors' shortcomings as this does not lead to increased protection but just endangers BU actors (Bow and Arrow Brigades). Finally, in relation to return, BU actors should be aware that multiple displacement increases their vulnerability. Movements should always be voluntarily.

TD actors on the other hand should never enforce return on IDPs and should refrain from creating situations which make multiple displacements necessary. TD actors are advised to continue to use TD typologies and fulfil the protection criteria in order to fulfil their legal responsibility to IDPs. In that sense, TD actors, should continue the strengthening and

implementation of the rights element, to ensure BU actors also have access to it prior to displacement (to allow BU actors to capitalize on the large protection potential of this element). TD actors should do so without losing sight of the great protection potential of the Dignity element. TD actors should listen more to BU actors and increase their involvement with them. In any case TD actors, should be more aware of the impact of their activities on IDP protection. This means only creating enabling Structures and working hard to get rid of the negative constraining time-space. TD actors should not put their responsibilities on BU actors, not force them to return and prove BU actors with as much information as possible.

4.8.3 BU Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight

Comparing the application of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) in the two case study countries the following observations can be made. In both countries component eight of the PPA showed that the protection provided to IDPs was suboptimal. Providing protection to IDPs by focusing on one component does not create the desired comprehensive IDP protection which is the aim of this research. The inter and intra component analysis subsequently presented for each case study country showed how interaction between component creates the possibility for comprehensive protection. Positive inter or intra component interaction, especially when tailored to the country specific protection culture and context, allows BU actors to move upwards in the protection pyramid towards hard protection. This dignity increasing development is further strengthened due to the cooperation with TD actors in the PAP/DS. At the same time, it should be realized that challenges to protection components have a negative effect on inter and intra component interaction which decreases IDP protection

Analysing the differences between both case study countries shows how culture and context play a larger role in Colombia than in Uganda. In Colombia BU actors had a strong preoccupation with the higher levels of the protection pyramid even though the lower ones were not yet fulfilled, while this was less the case for Uganda. Though the importance of education was highlighted within Uganda, it never played an equally strong role in the provision of protection as IDP organisations and social networks did in Colombia (all located in the top half of the protection pyramid). Instead, in Uganda, more emphasis is placed on the lower half of the protection pyramid than on the top half. This occur regardless of the fact that the war in Uganda has ended and therefore the effect of the negative constraining time-space of war could be expected to have moved back to its original position, allowing the protection pyramid to develop to its full potential. This however, did not occur and, even though the war is over, the negative constraining time-space it created, lingers on, negatively affecting intra and inter component interactions and therefore IDP protection.

Regardless of the focus, within the case study countries, on the top or bottom half of the protection pyramid, land plays a crucial role in IDP protection in both countries, affecting inter and intra component interaction in a similar way. Partly, the important role of land in

both case study countries can be explained by its location in the protection pyramid. It is located both the top and bottom halves. Both the problems with land as well as its positive, protection enhancing effects are observed in Colombia and Uganda.

This is not the case for the rights element. In Colombia, this element has a strong positive effect on many different protection elements, as well as on the other two elements within the revised protection definition (component four). In Uganda, the rights element is less developed, and almost unknown to BU actors prior to displacement. This means that not only as a protection element in its own regard, but also in relation to its interaction with other elements, the protection potential of the rights element is lower in Uganda than in Colombia.

Inter and intra component interactions in Uganda focus strongly on land, education and return. Additionally, in Uganda, contrary to Colombia, all protection elements have materialised, as the war is over and BU actors have been able (forced) to return. In Colombia, the third phase of displacement element has not occurred yet as almost no BU actors have returned so far due to insecurity.

A final similarity between both case study countries is the presence of a positive and negative dignity injection column, which strongly affects IDP protection. This section has analysed the intra and inter interactions between the different PPA components for each case study country individually and compared to each other. The goal of this exercise was to determine the extent to which BU actors felt IDPs were protected and in which way the Protection Pyramid Approach contributed to this. Within the conclusion to this chapter below, the contribution of BU actor's protection strategies to IDP protection, based on the application and analysis of the Protection Pyramid Approach, is presented.

4.9 Conclusion

In this chapter, BU actor's contribution to IDP protection has been analysed, answering the first sub research objective which was *'To document and analyse strategies being adopted by IDPs to protect themselves in CPEs'*. In order to do so the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), developed in chapter two, was used to analyse the data collected from Bottom Up actors in Colombia and Uganda. Each of the eight components of the PPA were used to determine the extent to which BU actors feel IDPs are actually protected in the two case study countries. In each section of this chapter, a component of the Protection Pyramid Approach was analysed. This entailed identifying case study specific manifestations of the components and elements in both countries. The manifestation of the PPA component and their elements were analysed for their individual contribution to IDP protection, as well as how the interaction with other component (elements) influenced IDP protection. The results of these analyses were compared and contrasted, through a cross-country analysis.

The relatively small data set used for this research, creating familiarity with the data due to its repeated use, underlines the main hypothesis of chapter two, which was that IDP protection is best understood when analysed from different perspectives. Using PPA to analyse the BU data set for its contribution to IDP protection showed, on several occasions, that relying on a single component analysis gives a skewed picture of the level of IDP protection in a country. Instead, the protection potential of the Protection Pyramid Approach lies in the fact that it combines many different models, approaches and perspectives, allowing for the analysis of an IDP crisis from different angles. Showing the interactions within and between components gives a comprehensive overview of the protection context and culture. It also shows how the different protection providers, in a Partnership Approach to Protection, can contribute to fulfilling IDPs' needs. Additionally, within the PPA, IDPs fulfil a dignified role in their own protection, enabling them to ascend the protection pyramid along the protection continuum, until they are no longer an IDP.

Again emphasising the importance of utilising the combined strength of the different protection components, important conclusions can also be drawn from individual components. One of these conclusions is the value of the Rights and Dignity element (component four) for IDP protection. To start with the latter element, Dignity had a strong effect on IDP protection. This was reiterated in the presence of positive and negative Dignity injection column in both case study countries. This Dignity injection column allows for the Dignity element to influence the Rights and Livelihoods elements in the same way as, according to the protection formula, the Dignity element is a result of the interaction of the Rights and Livelihoods element. A similar effect was observed in IDP Agency and through the fulfilment of Esteem Needs. All three elements are located in the top of the protection pyramid. This means that, contrary to the normal vertical hierarchical movement through the protection pyramid (based on Maslow's logic), the top half of the pyramid influences the bottom half. Moving on to

the protection-enhancing effect of the former, the Rights element of the Revised Protection definition, the analysis of the BU data of the two case study countries showed that pre-displacement knowledge on rights has a strong positive effect on IDP protection within each displacement phase. As BU actors in Colombia had this prior rights knowledge, their starting position was better compared to BU actors in Uganda where this information was lacking. The importance of the rights element is further elaborated on in component five, on International Human Rights Law.

From the analysis conducted within PPA component five, the protection pyramid (as explained in chapter two), in which the two International Covenants are positioned alongside Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid creating a Protection Pyramid, indeed enabled BU actors to contribute to IDP protection. In both case study countries, the BU data underlined the protection enhancing effect of prioritising the fulfilment of ICESCR over ICCPR. Having said so, the Colombian case study also pointed out that the ICCPR could be used to strengthen the ICESCR (along the lines of the Dignity injection column logic). The protection pyramid eases the communication and interaction between BU and TD actors, improving cooperation between BU and TD actors leading to the manifestation of the Partnership Approach to Protection (component two). When both actors contribute equally to this approach IDP protection, also from the utilisation of PPA component six (Structuration Theory) Agency and Structure are transcended into Giddens' novel concept of the Duality of Structure. However, in both countries, BU actors have had to use their coping mechanisms to compensate for TD actors' shortcomings. In these situations, IDP protection decreases because of different interlinked negative intra component interactions (negative PAP and DS).

With each component added to the Protection Pyramid Approach a model was created, built on the merits of different perspectives. Analysing an IDP crisis from all these different angles allows justice to be done to reality, by being fully aware of the actual level of IDP protection in a country. The analysis of the Colombian and Ugandan BU data has confirmed and enriched the Protection Pyramid Approach presented in chapter two. Analysing the data collected from TD actors in both case study countries in the next chapter enables further utilisation and testing of the Protection Pyramid Approach in relation to IDP protection.

Chapter Five: TD Data Presentation & Analysis - Colombia & Uganda

In this chapter the Top Down (TD) data collected in Colombia and Uganda are analysed utilising and informing the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) developed in chapter two. The goal of the chapter is two-fold. Firstly, the chapter uses PPA to analyse the top down data relating to the protection of Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) collected from Top Down actors. The result of this exercise consists of a visualisation of the utilisation of PPA in each case study country. This will be done by indicating, for each component (and their elements) whether the component (element) has been used in the case study countries (utilising the figure belonging to PPA component eight). Secondly, the PPA is used to determine the extent to which IDPs are factually protected in Colombia and Uganda. Both goals are captured in the second specific objective of this research which is *'to identify and analyse, in general, and specifically, the approaches and strategies protection providers, mandated to protect IDPs, adopt towards IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms'*.

This chapter serves as a counterweight to the previous chapter in which a similar exercise was conducted for Bottom Up (BU) data. Together these chapters, pave the way for chapter six, in which the benefit of interaction between BU and TD actors within each component of PPA data for the protection of IDPs is determined, and chapter seven were possible additions to PPA in light of the lessons learned from the BU and TD data analyses and interaction are suggested. As such, this chapter contributes to the main research question which is *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'*.

The structure of this chapter is similar to the previous chapter. Each of the eight PPA components will be dealt with in a separate section. In each sections the first two subsections present and analyse the TD data for both case study countries while case study comparison occurs in the third subsection. The chapter's specific objective is answered in the conclusion.

5.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology

In this section the extent to which IDPs are protected, according to the protection criteria and typologies of component one of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), is presented. The aim of component one is to determine the status quo of the existing IDP protection environment in the case study countries (Colombia and Uganda) and the role TD actors played in this. In the first subsection, the fulfilment of the ten criteria and five typologies in Colombia is analysed, while the second subsection does the same for Uganda. In the third subsection, the differences and similarities are between the two case study countries is determined and how this influences IDP protection. Figure 5.1 gives an overview of PPA protection component one.

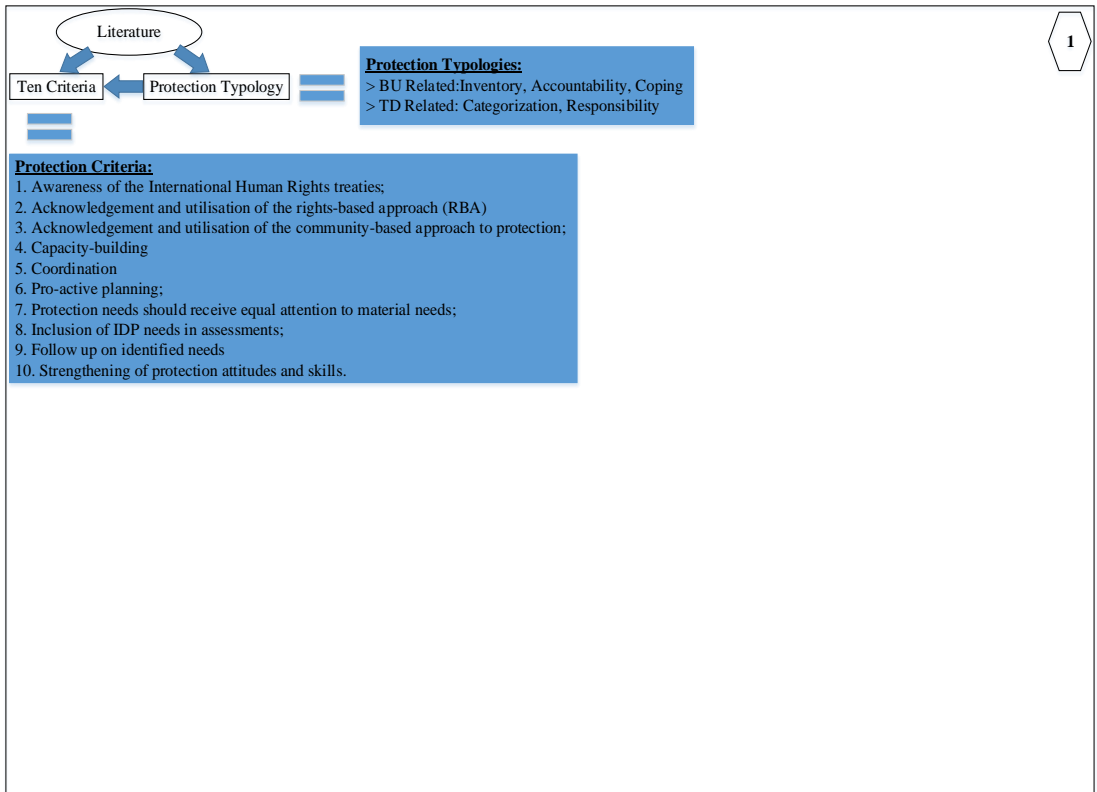


Figure 5.1: PPA Component One – Protection Criteria and Typologies

5.1.1 Colombia

This subsection presents the ten protection criteria and five protection typologies identified in the Top Down data set collected in Colombia. In Colombia TD actors show a strong desire to inform IDPs about their rights. This strengthens people's rights awareness, which means TD

actors activity contribute to fulfilling criteria one. For example TD actors develop advocacy programmes. Additionally, right's awareness in the Units of Attention and Dignifying Centre (UAOs/DC) is ensured by the Personaria (a Government entity) which orients IDPs on their rights (giving them a booklet on the Victim's Law) and how to access their right. Both the UAOs/DC as well as the *tutella* mechanism are an acknowledgement and utilization of the Rights-based Approach (RBA), facilitated by TD actors. At the same time, however, TD actors, by continuing fighting, diminish the positive effect of this second protection criteria. In any case TD actors' contribution to the RBA has been two-fold. Though the Government is considered responsible for its own people, TD actors also recognise its lack of capacity and problems with corruption. Additionally, the Government's activities have led to displacement and the Unconstitutional State of Affairs, declared by the Constitutional Court in the decision T-025. Other TD actors, as part of the Protection Cluster, have positively contributed to RBA, but the narrow interpretation of who is an IDP within Law 1448 is not helpful to ensure the protective capacity of protection criteria two. The Community-based Approach (CBA), criteria three, is equally dual in its contribution to IDP protection. The misuse of power by some IDP leaders show that the CBA lacks protective capacity, while the strong community bonds and corresponding protective activities of ethnic communities proves the opposite.

TD actors have given many examples of capacity building (fourth protection criteria), such as training, workshops and access to education. TD actors focus on strengthening IDP and Government capacity. IDP capacity is strengthened through education and material support. Material support aims to lift IDPs out of their pre-displacement poverty (called 'transformative reparation'). TD actors, like UNOCHA, were active in coordination (criteria five). Coordination takes place between and within the UN system, Government and non-Governmental organisations. UN coordination mechanisms include different hierarchical level Protection Working Groups. Within Dignifying Centres, Government entities involved in IDP protection are coordinated by a representative of the Secretary of Government. The Governmental system for IDP protection is the National System for Integral Assistance for Victims (SNARIV¹⁰⁷). SNARIV includes all ministries and is coordinated by an Executive Committee, whose technical secretariat is the Victim's Unit. In addition, a newly formed Government body called Unidad Nacional de Proteccion (UNP) is tasked with implementation of Law 1448 and engages in coordination activities. At local level, TD actors witness coordination between IDP organisations within the National Working Group of IDPs. This Working Group, as part of Law 1448, belongs to the National Working Group for Victims.

The extent to which the capacity-building and coordination activities lead to equal attention between protection and material needs (criteria seven) can be disputed. In theory, the DC, utilising the 'Life Projects' approach is set up to ensure protection needs receive equal attention to material needs. The DC, with its 'Integral Approach' is an improvement as UAOs

¹⁰⁷ Also called SNAIPD.

were described as ‘Existentialist’ due to their strong focus on material need fulfilment. At the same time, the DC does ensure a greater involvement of IDPs in assessing their own needs (fulfilling criteria eight). The ‘route of attention’ that IDPs follow within the DC includes several stations in which specific attention is given to the individual situation of an IDP. Furthermore, IDP input is appreciated in different fora, such as the National Working Group for Victims. The aim is to ensure that IDP needs are included in Government Policy and Budget at national or territorial level. In addition to Government actors, UN and NGOs also aim to include IDPs in their assessments. Follow up on identified needs (criteria nine) is done by the Personaria and Ombudsman’s Office in the DC and at a higher level by the Constitutional Court. Finally, in relation to the tenth protection criteria, especially UN and NGOs, have actively increased the knowledge of IDPs and Government employees on their protective responsibilities. The Governmental National Plan for the Attention to Victims with its guidelines on how to deal with victims (including IDPs), has been instrumental.

At the same time this National Plan is as a way Government is providing protection, thereby fulfilling TD Protection Typology of Responsibility. TD actors have also actively used the TD typology of Categorisation . This can be observed within the existing legal IDP framework. The Law assigns responsibilities to the different (Government) entities, and more specifically in the UAOs/DC, where IDPs can access Assistance/Reparations and Restitution. TD actors, through *tutellas* and the Unconstitutional State of Affairs (T-025), are aware of BU actors’ use of the BU typology of Accountability. Though TD actors can also mention IDP Coping Mechanisms, it is seen more as a survival strategy than a protection typology.

In conclusion, TD actors in Colombia utilised TD protection typologies of Responsibility and Categorisation , while observing BU protection typology of Accountability. Furthermore, Colombian Top Down actors developed activities in all but one of the protection criteria (criteria six). Having determines the protection culture and context in Colombia, the same will be done for Uganda in the next subsection.

5.1.2 Uganda

Analysing the Ugandan TD data showed that protection criteria six, eight, nine and ten were not fulfilled. The war, and the lack of acknowledgement that there was a conflict in the North of the country, are reasons for this, as is the prevalence of corruption. Without a focus on the suffering in the North, TD actors were not prompted to plan, do needs assessment, follow up on needs or create an environment in which protection concerns are heard and met. The non-fulfilment of these criteria shows that the protection offered to IDPs in the conflict in Northern Uganda was sub-optimal, according to the standards distilled from the literature.

Nevertheless, IDP protection was strengthened by organisations using a Rights-based approach (criteria two) in their operations. Having said this, not many organisations worked explicitly on rights, most only contributing indirectly to this element of IDP protection. The

Government's work on the Kampala Convention shows TD actor's commitment to criteria one. Some organisations, instead of RBA, used a Community-based or Participatory Approach (criteria three) which also positively affected IDP protection. The organisations which used a needs based approach strengthened the material aspects of IDP protection, but were weak on other aspects of protection (such as rights and dignity). IDP protection only increases, according to the literature, when both protection and material needs are met (criteria seven). This criterion was suboptimally fulfilled because while some TD actors in Uganda provided access to services and others set up HR and peace clubs, discrimination, for example in relation to land or the fulfilment of rights due to cultural practices, decreased IDP protection.

Capacity building activities (criteria four), offered by TD actors, consisted of providing training, teaching people about the law when mediating in conflicts and strengthening local organisations. These activities positively contributed to IDP protection. Protection criteria five (coordination) was the most fulfilled criteria. The Cluster approach is a clear example in which TD actors coordinated their activities. Most coordination took place between UN agencies and NGOs (though NGOs were hired as implementing partners), closely followed by NGOs working together with the local Government. UN-UN coordination decreased significantly when the Cluster Approach was dismantled in Uganda. A limited number of organisations worked together with the military. Examples of negative cooperation, due to lack of equality, trust and misunderstandings were also observed between the different TD organisations and decreased IDP protection. When TD actors worked together, IDP protection improved.

The typologies identified by TD actors which contribute to IDP protection are, TD typology of Responsibility and BU typology of Accountability. In relation to the TD protection typology of Responsibility, those TD organisations disseminating and teaching about rights transferred their responsibility for IDP protection to others. A very concrete example of transferring responsibility is the strengthening of local organisations, such as the Ugandan HR Commission. UN and NGOs working with the Government, engage in TD internal responsibility transmission. Though the Ugandan rights environment is extensive and TD actors have divided the responsibilities for IDP protection amongst a number of TD actors, low implementation of human rights shows that the TD typology of Categorisation is not used. Awareness of the BU protection typology of Accountability could be seen in TD actors setting up stakeholder meetings, awareness raising activities and increasing TD internal accountability. Lack of Government accountability and transparency necessitate developing these activities. Though TD actors were also able to identify coping mechanisms (a BU protection typology) this was not seen as a typology but as a BU actors means of survival.

Assessing the fulfilment of the PPA Component one it can be concluded that, looking at the protection criteria, IDPs were somewhat protected as six of the ten criteria were met, though not all fulfilled optimally. The awareness among TD actors of the Rights-based approach as well as their coordination activities, contributed most to IDP protection. TD actors

provided protection by using the two protection typologies of Responsibility and Accountability. The similarities and differences in the protective environment created by TD actors in both countries is discussed in the next subsection.

5.1.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component One

Comparing the protection context and culture in both case study countries, shows that, purely looking at fulfilment of criteria and typologies, IDPs are better protected in Colombia than Uganda. In Colombia, all protection criteria except criteria six, are fulfilled, while in Uganda only six out of the ten criteria positively contribute to IDP protection. Additionally, TD actors in Colombia use one additional TD protection typology compared to Uganda. Interestingly, TD actors in both countries only pay lip service to the BU protection typology of Coping, instead focusing on the BU typology of Accountability. In Uganda, accountability also includes internal accountability amongst TD actors (such as the Government) to counter discrimination and lack of transparency. Though needed, internal accountability is lacking in Colombia. Disregarding Coping mechanisms as a protection typology in both countries is problematic as it means that there is a lack of equality between BU and TD actors. TD actors value their own, and the most TD-oriented, BU protection typologies, above the purely BU oriented typologies (Inventory and Coping). The lack of equality between BU and TD protection typologies helps explain the lack of IDP protection in both countries. The war and prevalent corruption in both countries also does not lead to a protective environment for IDPs.

Nevertheless, the war had different effects on IDP protection in the two countries. As more protection criteria are fulfilled and typologies are used in Colombia than Uganda, the war in Colombia, has a smaller protection constraining effect than in Uganda. Looking at the fulfilment of individual criteria, the difference in the protective capacity of criteria one (UDHR) can be explained by the elaborate legal IDP laws in Colombia at the national level while in Uganda, TD actors are focused on the regional level (Kampala Convention). Additionally, the implementation of IDP rights is low. This latter issue also explains the lack of the use of TD protection typology of Categorisation in Uganda.

Another difference between the two countries is related to criteria five (coordination). In Uganda coordination was mentioned as one of the most fulfilled criteria. This was the case regardless of coordination occurring mostly between the UN and NGOs, with only limited coordination with the Government or the military. Coordination with the military did not occur in Colombia. Given these differences in coordination, Government and IDPs play an important role in the coordination of IDP needs in Colombia, but not so much in Uganda. TD actors in both countries do however engage in RBA and CBA. This means TD actors in Uganda also, to some extent, recognise the importance of BU actors. The importance of equality between BU and TD actors is elaborated upon in PPA component two, discussed in the next section.

5.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

The previous section already showed the importance of equality between Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) actors. In this section, more attention will be paid to both sets of actors as well as their contribution (or lack thereof) to IDP protection in both case study countries. The contribution of BU and TD actors to IDP protection is represented in their ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs. The more BU and TD actors work together, the more successful the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) will be, as the ‘derived’ needs (representing the interaction between ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs) will be more successful. The level of PAP and ‘derived’ needs can be depicted on the protection continuum, which runs from soft protection cooperation where BU and TD actors do not interact and protection is lacking, to hard protection cooperation, where BU and TD actors interact perfectly and IDPs are fully protected. The different elements of component two are shown in figure 5.2 below. The presence and interaction of each of the elements shown in the figure will be discussed for each case study country in the first two subsections and compared to each other in the third.

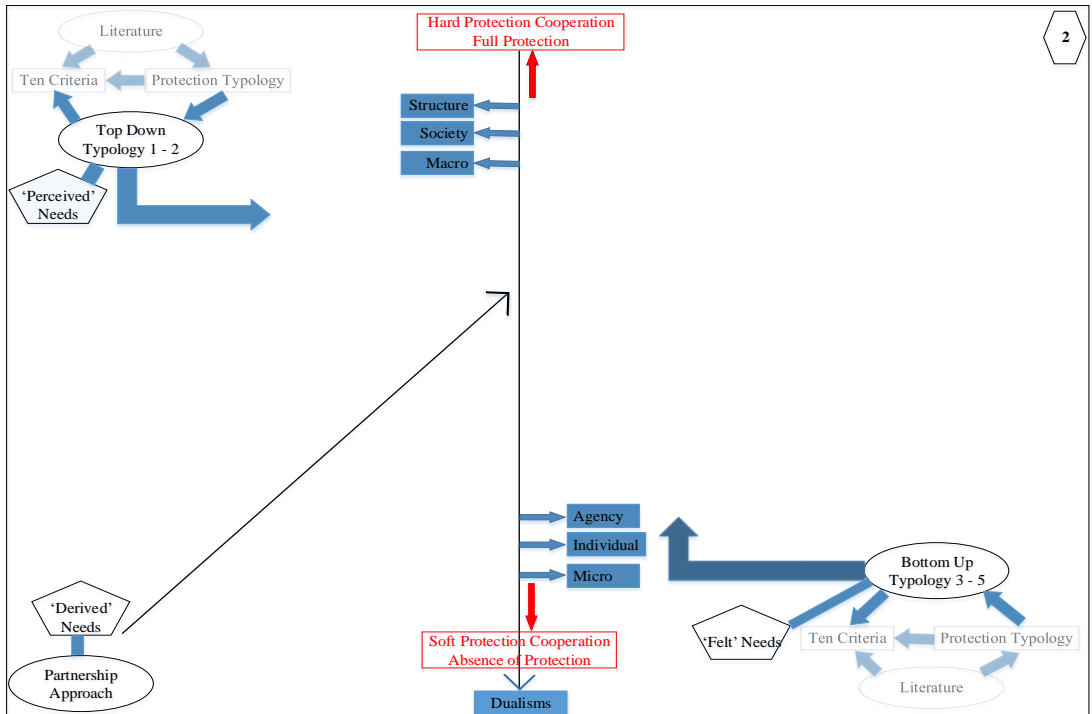


Figure 5.2: PPA Component Two – Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

5.2.1 Colombia

Analysing the protection providers in Colombia shows two things. On the one hand TD actors in Colombia do not indicate IDPs as protection providers. On the other hand, there are more

TD actors which have a negative than positive impact on IDP protection, with three actors influencing protection both positively and negatively. Those three actors are the Government, IDP organisations and the National Working Group for IDPs. The Constitutional Court, civil society and national and international organisations have a positive influence on IDP protection, while the national army, illegal armed groups, multi-nationals and donors have a predominantly negative influence on the protection of IDPs.

Regardless of the fact that TD actors did not indicate IDPs as protection providers, the TD data does mention BU actors' 'felt' needs. According to the TD actors' data, the two most important 'felt' needs are land and housing. BU actors want to have the titles to the land (to be able to return or sell the land allowing them to move on with their lives) and own their house (not rent it). Other 'felt' needs identified by TD actors and are the fulfilment of rights, accessing to food, health and justice as well as training to increase IDP capacities. IDPs also would like to start productive projects to have a means of income and access psychological assistance. Finally, an important 'felt' need is improved security, which includes an end to the killing and threats, and the Guarantee of No Repetition, allowing return.

The latter 'felt' need is also listed amongst the most important 'perceived' needs indicated by TD actors. TD actors are also of the opinion that displacement should stop and IDPs should (re)start their Life Projects. Another key 'perceived' need is Land, as shown by the Land Restitution system set up by the Government. TD actors approach land in a broad way including the concept of territory¹⁰⁸. Other 'perceived' needs are the need for food, psycho-social and judicial support (including Accompaniment) and trust. In relation to trust, TD actors indicate the importance of improving the functioning of the Government. This includes training civil servants as well as increasing the Government's institutional capacity. TD actors feel IDP protection is improved if IDP suffering is made known to the world, sensitizing national, international and civil society on the plight of IDPs. Finally, promoting pre-displacement cultural values and rituals, as well as building a Historic Memory Centre are also important 'perceived' needs according to the data collected from the TD actors.

Analysing the overlap between the 'felt' and 'perceived' needs, to determine the level of PAP and the materialization of 'derived' needs, shown that several instances of PAP take place, but their contribution to protection is suboptimal. Land and Life Projects are two issues which are mentioned in both sets of needs. However, the understanding of these issues differs for BU and TD actors. In the case of land TD actors focus on the territorial aspect while BU actors are more concerned about moving on with their life. The issue of housing is an example of a missed opportunity for PAP and 'derived' needs. Housing is indicated as one of the two most important 'felt' needs, offered to IDPs as part of Government's assistance. The reason why housing does not lead to hard protection cooperation is because BU actors want to own a

¹⁰⁸ Territory refers to the place where IDPs belong. This is the place where they had their life, their personal and generational history, social networks and properties.

house, while TD actors believe renting a house contributes sufficiently to protection. The differences in interpretation prevent optimal ‘derived’ needs. A similar problem exists in relation to psychological assistance, which is emphasised more by TD than BU actors.

Political cooperation also does not utilise the protective capacity inherent in PAP and ‘derived’ needs. In the political arena, both within the National Working Group as well as the UAOs/DC, BU and TD actors work together in a way which approaches hard protection cooperation. However, political cooperation is not indicated as either a ‘felt’ or a ‘perceived’ need, which makes the materialization of PAP and ‘derived’ needs impossible. The TD data collected in Colombia does include a number of examples of optimal PAP, increasing IDP protection, such as fulfilling right and the goal of ending fighting and improving Government capacity. Whether optimal PAP exists in Uganda will be analysed in the next subsection.

5.2.2 Uganda

Contrary to Colombia the analysis of the TD data in Uganda shows that the number of actors negatively contributing to IDP protection is slightly lower than those having a positive contribution. The Government is listed as the only actor having both a positive and negative influence, while the army and the LRA only negatively influence IDP protection. The UN, (national and international) NGOs and the church were listed as TD actors having a positive effect on IDP protection.

The TD actors interviewed in Uganda identified farming and food and Village Saving and Loan Schemes as ‘felt’ needs they believed IDPs considered of crucial importance to their protection. Developing communities, and related community dialogues, as well as dealing with the past were other important ‘felt’ needs for BU actors. Respecting people, having equality between men and women as well as ending discrimination and having individual choice were also ‘felt’ needs TD actors identified as being of importance to IDPs.

‘Perceived’ needs identified by TD actors centred around a number of the same issues as BU’s ‘felt’ needs. An important ‘perceived’ need mentioned by TD actors was supporting agricultural production and strengthening the Government, allowing it to act more as a duty-bearer. Promoting rights and creating rights awareness as well as setting up conflict resolution mechanisms, were other issues which were perceived as important to IDP protection according to TD actors. TD actors also aimed at strengthening the capacity of IDP, for example through education. At the same time, TD actors indicated the ‘perceived’ needs for health care, psychosocial support and food. TD actors also wanted to make IDPs financially secure. IDP wellbeing improved, according to TD actors by setting up peer support groups and social networks, which they therefore listed as ‘perceived’ needs. Displacement phase specific ‘perceived’ needs were the movement into the camp and making people return.

In relation to the Partnership Approach to Protection, TD actors indicate that this is hampered by IDPs not always being vocal about their needs. The lack of vocalisation can, in

part, be explained because IDPs are afraid to voice their needs, due to fear for discrimination and lack of trust. During the war, there were less examples of the Partnership Approach to Protection as BU actors were dependent on TD actors, there was no equality between them. Another example in which equality between the two sets of actors is lacking, is in the observation that IDPs are not included in the national meetings on the Kampala Convention. Other reasons why PAP does not occur in Uganda is because some TD actors work with the Government while others concentrate on consulting with BU actors. Focusing attention to both BU and TD actors, instead of on only one actor and set of needs, leads to the multiplier effect of PAP. Additionally, the focus of attention of TD actors is more on rights, while BU actors, according to TD actors, focus more on emotions. This difference also prevents PAP.

At the same time, there are also examples of positive PAP, such as in relation to farming and conflict resolution. The importance of communities is another positive example in which TD actors mention communities in both BU actors' 'felt' as in their own 'perceived' needs, allowing 'derived' needs to develop. Also within the education and health sector a movement towards hard protection cooperation can be observed. After the war, TD actors, have been rebuilding school and hospitals in which BU actors worked as teachers and doctors. In this way 'felt' and 'perceived' needs contribute to IDP protection. The problem with these latter examples of PAP is that the needs which are fulfilled have only been identified by TD actors. These needs do not constitute the most urgent needs to BU actors, according to TD actors. This also applies to the positive PAP which is created as a result of the training of trainers and local organisations. When TD actors train BU actors to train other BU actors, the trained BU actors become a kind of TD actors but benefitting from BU experience and empathy. In this example, BU and TD actors are strongly intertwined, allowing strong protection cooperation and full protection. This process is, however, hampered by the fact that the training of trainers and local organisations is not identified as an urgent 'felt' need by BU actors, according to TD actors. The extent to which TD actor's contribution to IDP protection is larger or smaller than in Colombia will be discussed in the next subsection.

5.2.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Two

Comparing and contrasting the findings of both case study countries in relation to protection component two leads to a number of observations. Concerning the protection providers in both countries, BU actors are not considered actors in their own protection. The protection providers that are identified in Colombia and Uganda by TD actors are largely similar (Government, national army, insurgent group(s), civil society). At the same time, there is a marked difference between the two countries relating to the positive contribution of humanitarian actors (recognised in Uganda but not in Colombia) and local TD actors (IDP organisations and National Working Group) (recognised in Colombia but not in Uganda).

Moving on to the needs identified by TD actors and the differences and similarities between them in the two case study countries. Overall, BU actors in Uganda were considered less vocal about their needs than BU actors in Colombia, were IDPs used *tutellas* to voice their needs. Another general observation is the lower level of equality and cooperation between BU and TD actors in Uganda than in Colombia.

In relation to ‘felt’ needs TD actors identified land/farming and food as two similar ‘felt’ needs observed in both case study countries. All other ‘felt’ needs identified by TD actors, in both countries, were different. At the same time, at a higher abstraction level, similarities can be observed in the different ‘felt’ needs identified by TD actors in both countries. This is because, though the actual ‘felt’ needs were different, the focus of ‘felt’ needs in both countries was the same. In both countries, TD actors identified practical ‘felt’ needs. Examples of this, in Colombia, centred on security and productive projects, while in Uganda Village Saving and Loan Schemes were identified by TD actors as a practical ‘felt’ need. In Uganda, additionally to practical ‘felt’ needs, emotional needs (such respect, community development through community dialogues, individual choice and non-discrimination) were identified. These emotionally focused ‘felt’ needs were largely lacking in Colombia.

More similarities between TD actor’s ‘perceived’ needs exist between the two case study countries. In both countries, TD actors mentioned rights, psycho-social support land/farming and food as ‘perceived’ needs. Additionally, though needs were phrased differently, they would still serve the same goal which was to make IDPs financially more secure (productive projects in Colombia and the Village Saving and Loan Schemes in Uganda). This ‘similarity in difference’ also occurred in both countries in relation to strengthening the capacity of BU and TD actors. Nevertheless, differences in ‘perceived’ needs were also observed. Colombian TD actors contributed to IDP protection by emphasizing the external component (making suffering known to the world) of ‘perceived’ needs, while in Uganda the emphasis was more on the internal side (strengthening community ties).

Though both case study countries showed instances of the Partnership Approach to Protection, there were fewer cases of PAP in Uganda than Colombia. Having said so, most cases of PAP in Colombia were examples of suboptimal PAP, or cases where the PAP potential was not recognised. Examples of PAP in Uganda were more outspoken in their contribution (or lack thereof) to IDP protection. Suboptimal PAP in Colombia was due to differences in understanding/interpretation of a certain need, while in Uganda, BU and TD actors could not agree on priority needs. The more outspoken cases of cooperation between BU and TD in Uganda were those in which no PAP occurred. This was due to BU and TD actors not being each other’s equals but BU being dependent on TD actors in the camps. Examples of ‘derived’ needs and PAP, identified in both countries, related to land and communities. PAP and ‘derived’ needs differed between both countries in relation to rights, productive projects and the Government, all of which occurred in Colombia and not so much in Uganda.

‘Felt’, ‘perceived’ and ‘derived’ needs as part of BU and TD actors’ activities and their cooperation in the PAP, help clarify what (should) constitute(s) protection and how BU and TD actors have contributed to this (or not). The lack of equality between BU and TD actors is an example of how PAP is hampered and negatively affects protection. The importance of ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs is further clarified in PPA component three, Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs (discussed in section three below). The pyramid taken from Maslow’s theory, visualises , in its different layers, the ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs identified by BU and TD actors. The closer the needs are together, the higher the chance for PAP and ‘derived’ needs to develop, giving BU and TD actors the possibility to contribute to the improvement of IDP protection.

5.3 Component Three: Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

In component two the needs which, according to Top Down actors, are important to IDPs (both 'felt' and 'perceived' needs) as well as the extent to which they interact in the Partnership Approach to Protection and the related 'derived' needs have been presented. The more BU and TD actors were able to cooperate, the higher they would get on the protection continuum towards full protection. The analysis of the TD data however showed that misinterpretations can occur between BU and TD actor's understanding of needs. This is why this section introduces the third component of the Protection Pyramid Approach which is Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory. The pyramid which is depicted in figure 5.3 does not only physically visualize which needs BU and TD actors find most urgent, it also provides a roadmap, to both actors, on how to reach full protection. At the top of the protection continuum, in Maslow's fifth layer (self-actualisation), IDPs are no longer an IDP as they have reached their highest potential within the PPA. For each of the case study countries the fulfilment and interaction of the different layers of Maslow's pyramid is presented in the first two subsections after which the findings will be compared and contrasted in subsection three.

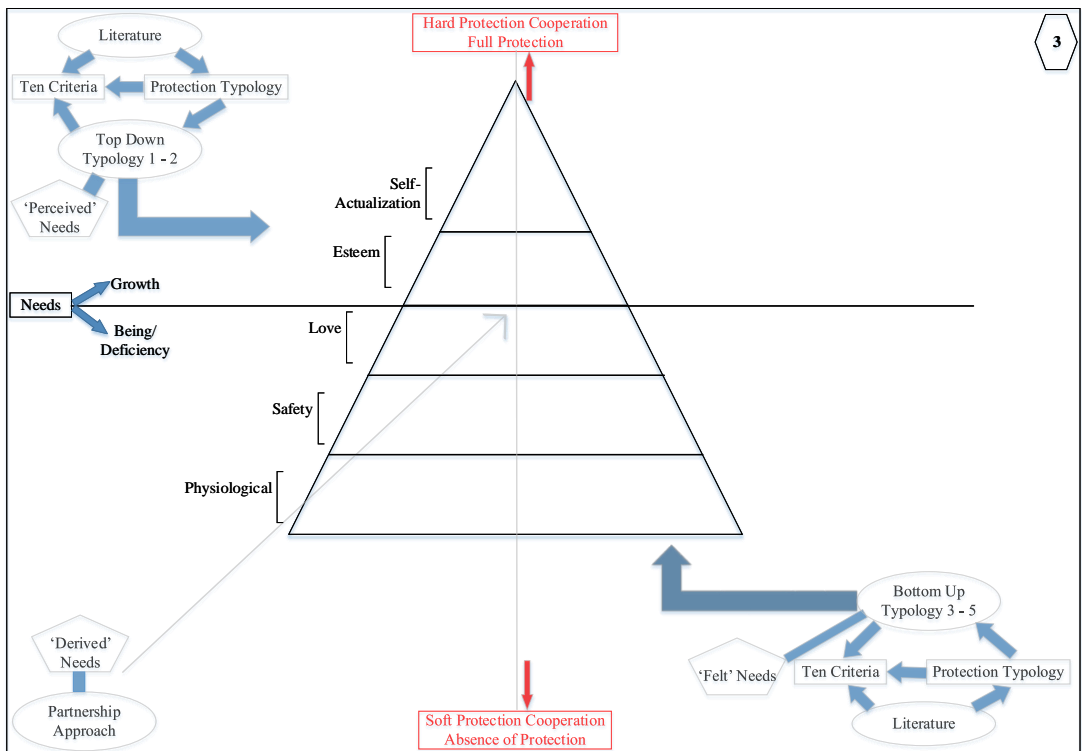


Figure 5.3: PPA Component Three – Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

5.3.1 Colombia

Top down actors in Colombia have contributed both positively and negatively to each of the five layers depicted in figure 5.3 above. By briefly describing the activities for each of the layers it is possible, at the end of this subsection, to determine in which layer IDPs' greatest needs are located and whether or not TD actors contribute to fulfilling those needs. At the same time, the findings presented at the end of this subsection show what needs to be done.

In Colombia TD actors indicate more challenges than fulfilments to layer one. Nevertheless, land (territory) also positively contributes to IDPs' physiological needs. The land restitution system, set up by TD actors, is a positive development but the ongoing war, lack of land titles and boundaries, as well as land being seen as an asset in the war which causes displacement, diminishes the protective capacity of land in layer one. Land restitution to BU actors also is low. TD actors try to fulfil other IDP needs in layer one by focusing on the HA part of the Victim's Law, but the supermarkets BU actors have to go to for their assistance are few and far away. The Governmental focus on food and shelter, taking up a large part of its budget, is not up to international standards and takes long to arrive. Additionally, the UAOs are said to have an Existentialist Approach, while the Victim's Law is believed to lead to dependency. Meanwhile it is difficult to fulfil the needs of a mobile population and when they settle down they struggle over resources with the urban poor.

The issues with land highlighted in relation to layer one also impact layer two, safety needs. TD actors fight amongst each other over land, forcing IDPs to sell their land, or take the land from IDPs forcing them to displace, thereby challenging their safety. Other war related issues, such as politically motivated violence, drugs and arms trafficking and forced recruitment also challenge IDP safety. The top five reasons TD actors mention as causes for displacement (corruption, human rights violations, lack of income, sexual assault and domestic violence) are all located in layer two. TD actors have however also contributed positively to safety needs. The Victim's Law grants IDPs, upon making a declaration, immediate access to shelter and a doctor. Once IDPs are accepted in the Registry they can access a housing subsidy and use the regular health care system. The protective effect of some of these TD activities is diminished by the way the assistance is provided (the housing subsidy for example comes in the form of a cheque instead of cash and only suffices to rent a house). At the same time the Victim's Law is difficult to implement and IDPs have to wait long to hear if they have been accepted into the Registry. Other positive contributions to IDP safety are that IDPs get cash as part of the transitional assistance and can participate in Life Projects, allowing IDPs to set up small businesses or engage in productive projects. TD actors have also developed a culture of saving, set up socio-economic stabilization working groups and provide work related training programmes. Additionally, the Protection Working Group monitors the security situation, the Ministry of Interior provides physical protection and the Unit of National Protection set up an Early Warning System. The acknowledgement by President

Santos of the ongoing conflict and the Guarantee of Non Repetition have also improved IDP safety.

Many of the challenges in layer two impact layer three, love needs, too. The war has caused the death of family member and community or IDP organisation leaders, while forcing families to displace to poor urban areas. In these areas IDPs had to get used to unknown social habits without being able to rely on their social networks, which were lost when BU actors lost access to their territories. At the same time, having a social network challenged IDP protection because BU actors are supposed to utilise that first before getting assistance. TD actors focus on strengthening the relationships between urban residents and IDPs. As part of the Victim's Law BU actors can rely on the ICBF, the Government entity focusing on family related needs. The needs of families are taken into consideration in the Differential Approach and when assigning houses to IDPs, which is positive. However, the procedure, during mass displacements, to do family instead of individual declarations is negative for BU actors. As domestic violence is a growing problem, TD actors have set up the Family Dynamics Programme to address it. TD actors also focused on the issue of solidarity when helping IDPs rebuild their lives. Additionally, TD actors provide community-based psycho-social assistance and trained community leaders to accompany IDPs in their legal dealings. These trainings are important as community leaders have also been reported to misuse the assistance system.

Helping IDPs become part of a community again, positively influences the fourth layer of Maslow's pyramid, esteem needs. TD actors try to change IDP mentality by strengthening IDP confidence, trust, resilience and recovery, while decreasing dependency and helping them get rid of the idea that they are victims. The land restitution system also increases resilience and recovery as it, together with the Guarantee of No Repetition, enable IDPs to return. As part of fulfilling IDPs' esteem needs, TD actors listen to IDPs, provide psycho-social assistance, help IDPs set up life projects, engage in community development, encourage political participation and set up truth telling and peace dialogues. Additionally, TD actors try to strengthen IDP esteem by giving IDPs timely information and ensuring their rights are fulfilled. Esteem increasing programmes in the Dignifying Centre are the Identification and Nutrition Programmes, ensuring IDPs have an ID card and adapt to cultural differences relating to food. Other TD related esteem increasing activities are providing education and setting up a Historic Memory Centre. Regardless of these activities, BU actors, according to TD actors, feel they do not get holistic support from the Government which decreases their esteem. Related problems are a lack of trust in TD actors, the Unconstitutional State of Affairs, ongoing HR violations and the difficulty of implementing the Victim's Law amidst conflict. The slow process of getting accepted into the Registry and once accepted having to come to the UAOs/DC numerous times to see if the assistance has already arrived, as well as the short duration of psychological assistance negatively influence layer four. Not having a job and being away from one's social network are also esteem decreasing.

Being challenged in the fulfilment of esteem needs, makes it difficult for BU actors to reach self-actualisation. Especially not having their land, not being able to return and the challenges relating to the land restitution system, prevent BU actors from reaching their full potential, which is to no longer be an IDP. All of these problems are complicated by the ongoing war, but also by the decision, within the Victim's Law, to treat IDPs as part of a larger group of Victims. In addition to their land, the end of displacement and the possibility to return, positive contributions to layer five are higher education, peace resolution dialogues, increasing Government's institutional capacity and setting up life projects.

Within these life projects the interaction between the different layers of Maslow's pyramid can be observed. Setting up a small business creates income and employment, which enable an IDP to take care of their family increasing an IDP's esteem. Life projects therefore strengthen Maslow's layers two, three and four. On a larger scale the Victim's Law and the UAOs/DC also aim to fulfil multiple layers at the same time. Different observations can be made about the interaction between and within layers. To start with the latter, all layers are positively and negatively affected by TD activities. TD actors' positive activities result in an upward hierarchical movement through the pyramid (in line with Maslow's hierarchical logic). If TD actors' activities are negative, layers within the pyramid will not materialise, hampering or even decreasing IDP protection. In the case of partial fulfilment, Maslow's pyramid becomes unstable. Moving on to the former, based on the analysis of TD activities contributing to each layer of Maslow's pyramid, as well as the challenges relating to the fulfilment of layers, it should be concluded that TD actors are of the opinion that the most important IDP needs are located in layer two. Given the ongoing conflict and related challenges, this seems a logical conclusion, negatively affecting interaction with all other layers. At the same time, it should be noted that TD actors have developed a large number of positive activities in relation to layer four. This observation runs contrary to Maslow's logic, which dictates that higher-level layers will not be fulfilled until lower level layers have been. Therefore, TD activities in Colombia necessitate to adjust this observation. The strongly developed esteem needs, assist IDPs to fulfil lower level needs in the pyramid, which in their turn, allow IDPs to move up in the pyramid. In conclusion, the Colombian TD data shows how the lower levels of Maslow's pyramid have a more negative than positive, while the top layers provide a more positive than negative effect on IDP protection. The extent to which this applies to Uganda is discussed in the next subsection.

5.3.2 Uganda

Similarly, to Colombia, TD actors in Uganda contribute both positively and negatively to each of the layers of Maslow's pyramid. Starting with layer one, physiological needs, TD actors have provided very hands-on practical goods and services, such as food, water, nutrition, seeds and tools. Additional positive contributions to layer one included; developing kitchen and

organic farming in the camps, providing start-up kits, allowing access to land, or when this was not possible setting up food distributions, creating farmer groups and water committees. The efforts of the TD actors did not always lead to the fulfilment of layer one. There were food shortages and other basic facilities were also challenged. People could not always access their land. When food distributions did occur, discrimination would sometimes take place or the food that was distributed was sold, causing people to go hungry. People also had to line up for food, which was contrary to traditional Acholi beliefs and convictions, causing social erosion. The food distributions also created a dependency syndrome, while the stay in the camps was also interpreted negatively. Land wrangling practices also had a negative effect on the fulfilment of layer one, physiological needs.

In layer two, safety needs activities, engaged in by TD actors, which positively contributed to the fulfilment of this need were; stopping the fighting, engaging in conflict mediation, having peace and providing mine-risk education. Physical security is both increased and threatened by being in a camp. Other threats to layer two include insecurity leading to death, being looted or abducted or running the risk of being killed when going to the gardens to farm. Competition between people, as well as domestic violence also decreased physical safety. In order to make IDPs financially secure TD actors have set up Village Saving and Loan Schemes, provided IDPs with compensation when their rights were breached, increasing IDP ownership of projects and helping them set up small businesses. The fact that IDPs often did not have many assets, and money was stolen from the PRDP decreased the protective capacity of this layer. Access to medical treatment and basic care, both in the camps and upon return, made IDPs more secure, while lack thereof decreased security. TD actors also paid attention to the need for hygiene. IDP safety is also increased by TD actors by offering free legal assistance, solving HR cases, providing social and transitional justice as well as engaging in mediation efforts to increase IDP's perception of safety.

TD activities relating to layer three, love needs, include ensuring that children's rights are taken up in development plans, setting up peer and family support groups, giving family care and stopping domestic violence. These activities positively contributed to the fulfilment of love needs. Solving conflicts between people improved interpersonal relationships, while receiving psycho-social assistance and being heard also had a positive effect on layer three. TD actors observed people supporting, comforting and talking to each other and taking care of family members, all fulfilling love needs. Lack of trust, competition between people in the community, stigmatization for being abducted, women and orphans having difficulty accessing land and families not being able to maintain preferred traditions while being in the camps, however, negatively impacted on IDP love needs, according to TD actors.

Esteem needs, layer four, are positive influenced by education, both in the camps and upon return, which existed of basic, vocational training or skills development. In order to offer this esteem increasing activity TD actors provided teachers and encouraged parents to send their children to school. Hygiene, receiving psycho-social assistance as well as solving

problems by themselves and getting better prices for their produce also positively contributed to the fulfilment of layer four. Culture has had both a positive and negative effect on IDP's esteem needs. When IDPs were able to dance, sing and make music, culture had a positive effect on IDP protection, but when IDPs had problems with traditional leaders and were not able to live up to Acholi standards this decreased protection. In the latter respect having chiefs line up for food, with food being distributed to women, making them the main breadwinners over men and not being able to access land, all decreased IDP's esteem. Not being able to access education, being discriminated and the non-persecution of LRA leaders also negatively affected layer four. Finally, lack of hygiene, war traumas and the fact that the families of the missing were often misunderstood also decreased the protective capacity of layer four.

For IDPs to become self-actualized they should know their rights, have access to education, be able to enjoy their culture, be able to live up to their own expectations, receive psycho-social support to become rehabilitated, and have access to land, according to TD actors in Uganda. Certain IDPs (especially women and orphans) do not have access to land decreasing the fulfilment of layer five. Other inhibitors for IDPs to reach their full potential are the trauma they experienced, the non-persecution of LRA rebels. Being discriminated both in the camps as well as upon return and the lack of autonomy over one's own life while being in the camps prevent IDPs from fulfilling layer five. Education, knowing one's rights and setting up HR and peace clubs, however, positively affect IDP self-actualisation.

What can be observed in the TD data is that certain activities (such as having a business) affect one layer strongly (layer two), while at the same time positively influencing both adjoining layers. This is contrary to Maslow's logic, which maintains that there is always an upwards movement in the pyramid. The analysis of the TD data in Uganda also shows how TD actors are of the opinion that most IDP needs are located in layer two. At the same time, it can be observed that layer four is strongly developed. The strength of culture and education increases IDPs self-esteem which positively affects lower levels of the pyramid. When these lower layers are strengthened, a positive upwards movement occurs again. Having observed this, and taking into account the fact that the fighting has ended in Uganda, it is interesting to note that layer five, self-actualisation has not been fulfilled. The strong esteem layer allows for the interaction between Maslow's Being and Growth needs. At the same time, some TD activities, like the movement into the camps, negatively affected both sets of needs.

5.3.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Three

Comparing the TD data collected in Colombia and Uganda and applied to PPA component three, show that TD actors, in both countries, believe IDPs' most urgent needs are located in layer two (safety needs). As a result, both TD actors developed most activities in relation to layer two. Another similarity between the two countries is the strongly developed fourth layer of Maslow's pyramid, esteem needs. TD actors, in both case study countries, recognised the importance and benefit

of strengthening Esteem needs, though they did this in slightly different ways. When esteem needs are well developed, they help strengthen the lower layers of the pyramid (the purple line in figure 5.3.1). When these lower layers are strengthened an upward movement (as predicted by Maslow) occurs (symbolised by the green arrow).

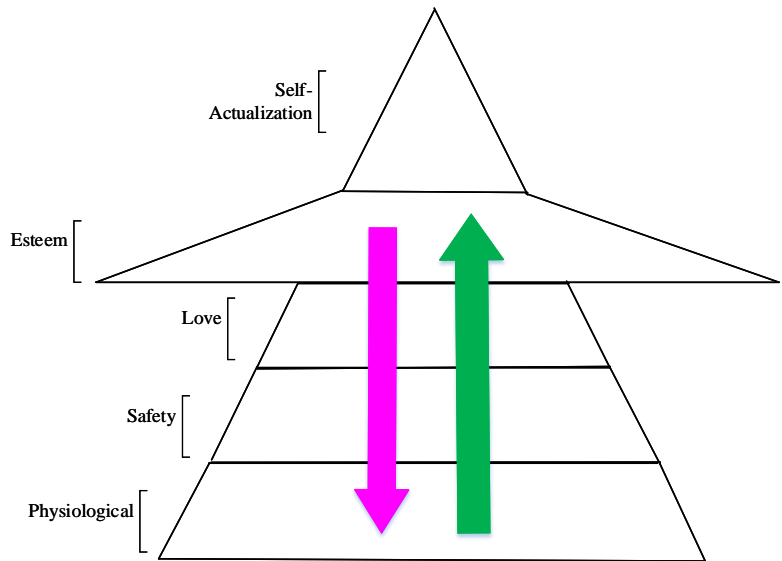


Figure 5.3.1: Well-developed Esteem Layer Positively Influencing IDP Protection

At the same time, in both countries, TD actors observed challenges to the fulfilment of layer five. One of these similarities, observed in both countries, relates to land. Land not only affects layer five, but also layer one. This means land fulfils both a basic survival needs as well as providing identity to BU actors. A final similarity between the countries are the challenges experienced within layer two. In both countries, TD actors kill, loot and forcibly recruit BU actors, threatening their fulfilment of layer two.

In addition to similarities differences were noted in the analysis of the TD data collected in Colombia and Uganda, in relation to layer two. In Colombia, the focus of layer two is not only on physical safety but also on other aspects (such as financial and legal security as well as to housing). The importance of the family and children is equal in both countries, while education and peace related activities dominate layers four and five. The ongoing conflict in Colombia makes harder for BU actors there to become self-actualized compared to BU actors in Uganda. Another difference between both case study countries in relation to the third component of PPA, is the lack of multi-layer activities in Uganda, compared to Colombia. There the Victim's Law and UAOs/DC influence different layers at the same time

and also encourage interaction between layers, similar initiatives have not been mentioned by the TD actors in Uganda.

This concludes the case study comparison regarding PPA component three. The comparison has shown which activities BU and TD actors in Colombia and Uganda have developed in the different layers of the pyramid. Close inspection of the collected data furthermore showed whether BU and TD actors experienced a discontinuation of rhetoric and reality, which would have negatively impacted the fulfilment of IDPs protection. The next section does the same for the fourth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach.

5.4 Component Four: Revised Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction

In component four of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the Revised Protection Definition is introduced. The definition consists of three elements: Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. As has been explained in chapter two, the Rights element forms the basis of the whole pyramid, but as Rights are rather abstract, the definition is augmented with the tangible and intangible elements of Livelihoods and Dignity. The Dignity element was considered the missing link for IDP protection (as explained in chapter two). The definition of the Revised Protection Definition reads: ‘people are protected when their Human Rights are acknowledged and respected as well as tangibly and intangibly implemented through Livelihoods and Dignity’. In this section the extent to which the three protection elements, according to TD actors, contribute to IDP protection is presented. This means that for each case study country, the positive and negative TD actors’ activities in relation to each protection element, as well as their interaction, is discussed in the first two subsections. The third subsection compares and contrasts the findings of the two countries.

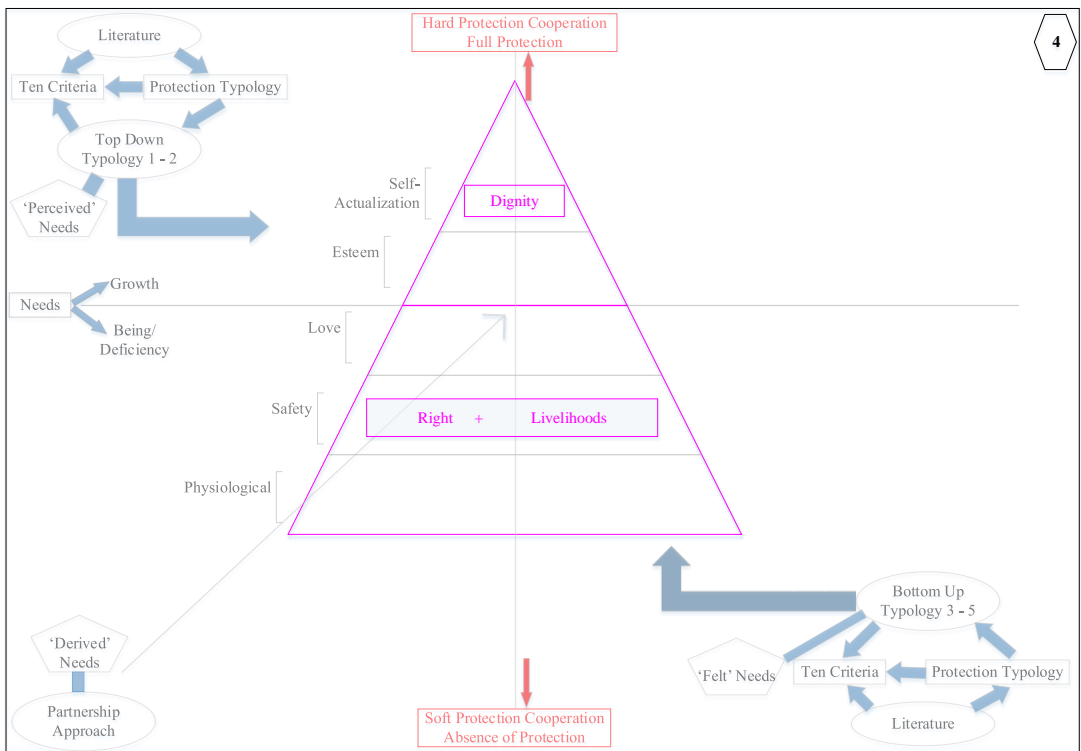


Figure 5.4: PPA Component Four – Revised Protection Definition

5.4.1 Colombia

TD actors in Colombia have developed activities which contribute both positively and negatively to all three elements of the revised protection definition. Starting with the analysis of the **Rights** element, an important positive contribution is the elaborate IDP legal framework (starting from the 1991 Constitution to the Victim's Law), and the efforts that are being made to implement it. The ambitious nature and the relatively short duration of Law, as well as the ongoing war, lack of money, political will and capacity, all challenge the fulfilment of the Rights element. Corruption, alleged linkages with illegal armed groups and the low access to justice for BU actors furthermore challenge the fulfilment of their rights. Nevertheless, the UAOs/DC which include different entities (such as a judicial advisor), as well as the fact that IDPs can make a declaration are positive contributions to this element of the revised definition. TD actors through advocacy and information activities have assisted IDPs to access their rights. Other Rights increasing TD activities are the protection working groups and making the suffering known to the outside world by sensitizing the national and international opinion on the issues of displacement. These activities put the RBA component of the Victim's Law into practice. The National Unit of Protection and the Prevention Observatory, though dependent on municipal budget and capacity, also have a rights' increasing effect.

Sentence T-025, determining an Unconstitutional State of Affairs, showing the lack of fulfilment of the rights element, is nevertheless an example that the Constitutional Court is fulfilling its responsibility to uphold rights. Analysing the Victim's Law for its contribution to the rights element of protection shows IDPs can make a declaration at any public Ministry or institutions and are given rights related information. Criticisms to the law focus on the fact that the law only recognises victims directly affected by the conflict, while putting IDPs in the same category as other victims. The law is also not suited for a mobile population like IDPs. Regardless of its positive effect on Rights and the acknowledgement of the presence of armed conflict in Colombia, the Victim's Law is seen as a political act of the Santos Government. In any case, according to some TD actors, the Law does not take into account, even discredits, some of the good work done by Law 387, and includes rights which IDPs should be able to access based on their citizenship. The Law's land restitution component is challenged too.

Land is also an important part of the second element of the revised protection definition, **Livelihoods**. TD actors try to positively contribute to IDP livelihoods through the Land restitution system, but the lack of land titles, clear boundaries and multiple legal owners, as well as the continuing fight over land being an asset in war, make this difficult. When displacing, IDPs do not only lose access to their land, but also to their animals and properties. This is why TD actors, within this element of protection, focus on providing IDPs with food, shelter, housing, health care, education and cash. The fact that IDPs can only stay in a shelter for 30 days while it can take about 60 days to get accepted into the Registry decreases the protective capacity of TD activities. Offering only enough money to rent a house instead of

buying one and presenting the housing subsidy in the form of a cheque instead of cash are additional problems. TD actors focus strongly on the HA element of the Victim's Law. The assistance IDPs get can be spent at special supermarkets but there are not many of them and they are far away. Alternatively, IDPs can eat at community restaurants. TD actors, within the DC, offer Nutrition, Family Support and Bank and Saving Programmes to IDPs. IDPs are also assisted with education, health care (including psycho-social and psychological support), clothing and life projects. TD actors teach IDPs how to prevent domestic and sexual violence and offer them training to adapt their rural skills to urban skills, prioritizing IDPs in job vacancies. The socio-economic stabilization working groups also positively contribute to the Livelihoods element, as does increasing Governmental institutional capacity in the return areas. The large number of IDPs are however a challenge to the UAOs/DC and therefore to TD actors' ability to positively contribute to the Livelihoods element of protection. The UAOs/DC are also said to have an Existentialist approach, while the Victim's Law creates dependency. IDPs' Livelihoods are also decreased when they have to wait long to be accepted into the registry and receive their assistance, which is also of low quality while taking up a large part of the Government budget. The bureaucratic system, corruption, ongoing war and the question whether Livelihood needs should be covered by normal Colombian law, all challenge the fulfilment of the Livelihoods element of the revised protection definition.

Many of the questions and struggles highlighted in relation to the livelihoods element are related to the third element of the protection definition, **Dignity**. IDP Dignity is negatively influenced by corruption, bureaucracies and lack of Governmental capacity. Additionally, ongoing war and related land loss, the Unconstitutional State of Affairs and the fact that IDPs have to use *tutellas* to fight for their Rights are Dignity decreasing activities. Even making a declaration is Dignity decreasing as it forces IDPs to relive the trauma of their displacement. The psycho-social assistance IDPs can access to deal with this trauma is only for a short period of time, focusing on psychological stabilization. This does not help take away IDPs' lack of trust or help them deal with the loss of territory and accompanying social networks. Nor does it help IDPs cope with the different cultures and habits they have to get used to in the places they displace to while they are struggling with local urban residents over scarce resources. When TD actors do not follow up on the needs IDPs identify this is also Dignity decreasing.

The fact that attention is being paid, under the Victim's Law and as part of the UAOs/DC to IDPs' needs, traumas, (mental) health care, education, nutritional requirements and dreams (within the Life Projects approach) is Dignity increasing. So are the activities in relation to land. The land restitution programme, as well as the fact that land owners, not IDPs should prove that they acquired the land legally positively contributes to the Dignity element of protection. Territory is very important for IDP Dignity, as it helps confirm their identity and rebuild their lives. TD actors also try to improve IDP Dignity by setting up cultural programmes, encouraging political participation, fulfilling rights and increasing cooperation with local communities. TD actors teach IDPs to talk about their problems, help IDPs to regain

confidence in themselves and society while learning to trust again. TD actors do so to help IDPs lose their victim condition, change the mentality of IDPs and making them more autonomous by increasing their capacity. The Family Dynamics programme, with its focus on preventing domestic and sexual violence, as well as the training of community leaders to provide psycho-social support to their own people and helping IDPs establish better relations with the poor residents in the urban areas they flee to, are all examples of TD activities to increase IDP Dignity. TD efforts to increase civil servant's capacity, providing assistance in a timely manner while adapting it to the Territorial and Integral Approach, are Dignity increasing. TD actor also contribute to Dignity through the Protection Cluster, National Working Group for IDPs, IDP families and organisations, being open to IDP input, the Guarantee of No Repetition, setting up of a Historic Memory Centre and peace negotiations.

Studying TD activities leads to two observations. Firstly, different activities influence all elements of the protection definition. Secondly, similar activities affect more than one element at the same time. When asked, some TD actors indicate that all three elements are important, some say certain elements are more important than others while others emphasise the need for sequential fulfilment of elements. For those TD actors emphasise one element this, in most cases, has been the Dignity element. The danger of prioritise one element over the others is the creation of an instable or stunted pyramid. These pyramids can also develop when TD actors only fulfil elements suboptimally, due to the implicit recognition of the protective capacity of elements (often the Rights element). The strong emphasise on the Dignity element however, has a positive effect on the protection pyramid. On the one hand the TD activities can create such a positive environment that the whole protection pyramid comes submerged in the Dignity element, positively affected all three elements. On the other hand, the strong focus on the Dignity element creates a Dignity-injection column. When TD actors engage in positive Dignity enhancing activities the column strengthens the Rights and Livelihoods elements creating a positive upwards dignity movement, in line with the protection formula ($R+L \rightarrow D$). Negative TD activities decrease the protective effect of the Dignity element, creating a negative Dignity-injection column decreasing IDP protection.

The added value of the revised protection definition for PPA is that the list of TD activities mentioned above can be schematically summarised in the protection pyramid by representing the relative importance of each element within the pyramid. In the case of Colombia, regardless of the often-mentioned Dignity element, the Rights element is most important and can be shown visibly larger than the Livelihoods element. The relative importance of the Rights element is however decreased by the lack of implementation of Rights. The relative size of the three protection elements in Uganda will be discussed in the second, and compared to Colombia, in the third subsection.

5.4.2 Uganda

Similarly, to Colombia, TD actors in Uganda contributed both positively and negatively to each of the three elements of the revised protection definition. TD activities in Uganda which positively contributed to the **Rights** element were the efforts to strengthen the Ugandan HR Committee as well as the rights related work of the Government and Court system. In addition to strengthening the HR architecture, TD actors also improved Rights by working on peace, freedom of movement and the Kampala Convention. TD actors have provided HR training to raise awareness, promote and teach about Rights, ensuring the dissemination and fulfilment of Rights. TD actors set up HR clubs and Committees, provided IDPs with free legal assistance, representing them in court as well as solving HR cases through both the transitional and traditional systems. TD actors engaged in these Rights enhancing activities because they believed that Rights empower BU actors. Using the RBA, TD actors positively contributed to this element of the protection definition by directly and indirectly strengthening Rights.

In general, the war negatively impact on IDP Rights, both directly, breaching several rights, as indirectly, causing IDPs fear to fight for and claim their Rights. BU actors in Uganda are not vocal about their Rights. Rights are also negatively affected by cultural practices, lack of funds, corruption, discrimination and a weak legislative environment. The Kampala Convention, for example, is set at the regional level, while, at the national level, Government policy on IDP protection is difficult to comprehend due to the large number of Acts all of which are not legally binding. The fact that the fulfilment of Rights is often not explicitly mentioned further decreases the protective capacity of this protection element. The formulation of Rights, applicable to the individual, while in Uganda BU actors experience Rights communally and the non-existing Right to Land, further hamper the contribution of the Rights element to IDP protection. The fact that, though the war is over, the LRA has not been arrested and prosecuted also diminishes the protective capacity of Rights.

Part of the problem with Rights are their lack of implementation, tangibly visualised in the **Livelihoods** element of protection. Food shortages, problems with land, poverty, lack of psycho-social support and difficulties accessing services (health care/education) relate to Rights but also prevent the fulfilment of Livelihoods. This occurs regardless of the fact that TD actors distributed food, provided sanitation and improved land access. Positive TD activities, such as NUSAF and the PRDP, felt to not be empowering, decrease their positive contribution to Livelihoods, which is further decreased by money stolen from the PRDP and corruption. TD actors' positive activities in relation to education, such as increasing access to education and number of teachers, as well as convincing parents to send their children to school, is decreased by cultural practices preventing girls from attending school or fear for abductions. Additional TD activities which help fulfil the Livelihoods element are providing BU actors with training, increasing their skills, while helping them set up small businesses and providing information on land. TD actors also provided medical treatment and psycho-

social support. The Livelihoods element is especially strengthened by Farmer Field Schools. TD actors also set up farmer, saving and peer support groups, some relating to the VSLs activities, but all positively contributed to the Livelihoods element of protection.

At the same time these latter activities also have a strong **Dignity** increasing effect. The Dignity element of the revised protection definition is strengthened by TD actors providing education to BU actors (both in the camps as well as upon return), strengthening life skills, and fulfilling Rights. TD actors also point out the Dignity increasing effect of peace, religion, families and empowering people. As a result, TD actors, have worked on creating equality between men and women. This process was started, and challenged, by the war when women took over the role of breadwinner from men, increasing their and decreasing men's Dignity, while male chauvinism further increased inequality between the sexes. TD actors mention that involving BU actors in projects, asking for their inputs, making sure they are heard, providing them with information and putting people first, increases cooperation between BU and TD actors, which is Dignity increasing. TD activities (during the war) aimed at coping with the situation they are in, while, post-war, rehabilitation and letting go of the past, allow IDPs to improve their self-confidence, decreasing dependency and increasing self-reliance, positively influencing Dignity. BU actors should be more aware of their own Dignity according to TD actors. This is increased by offering them psycho-social support, engaging in cultural revival, using community dialogue and increasing the respect they feel and receive. The war has a strong Dignity decreasing effect, leading to other Dignity decreasing activities such as sexual harassment, rape, alcoholism and decreasing cultural values (decreasing influence of elders). Not being able to live up to one's own expectations and not receiving psycho-social support, further decreases Dignity.

Regardless of the negative influences on the Dignity element, some TD actors believe Dignity should be the starting point for any protection activity. Focusing strongly on Dignity creates a submerged protection pyramid, which positively influences each element of the protection definition. A submerged protection pyramid develops when the war is over or because of the innate nature of the Dignity element. A strong Dignity element positively influences the other two elements, while at the same time, develops out of the interaction between rights and livelihoods. Dignity is both an outcome as well as a standalone element and therefore a unique element within the revised protection definition. Additionally, a Dignity injection column can, positively or negatively, influence IDP protection.

At the same time, explicit recognition of any of the three elements increases their positive contribution to the protection pyramid. While for some TD actors, each of the three elements is equally important, many TD actors mention the ideal protection element interaction ($R+L \rightarrow D$). Other examples of elements interaction, such as sequential fulfilment were also mentioned but all lead to sub-optimal protection. TD actors engaged in activities which affected an element positively, negatively or both ways. The Dignity increasing and decreasing effect of all land related activities was not sufficiently recognised by TD actors. At

the same time, TD actors did observe that BU actors were willing to sacrifice one protection element for the benefit of the other two, even though this created an instable or stunted protection pyramid. The different effect of war on the Dignity of men and women shows that, ideally, protection pyramids should be drawn up for each gender. If the relative importance of each of the three protection were indicated in the protection pyramid for Uganda, it would show that the Dignity element has a larger impact on IDP protection than the other two. In the next subsection, the protection pyramids showing the relative importance of each of the three protection elements in both countries will be compared and contrasted to each other.

5.4.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Four

Making country specific protection pyramids in which the relative importance of each of the protection elements is shown, does not only allow comparison between countries, but also within countries. This is because pyramids can be created for BU and TD actors. Additionally, the protection pyramids can be used for comparisons at regional, or continental level. Comparing the country-specific protection pyramids of Colombia and Uganda shows that in both cases the dignity element of the revised protection definition is big. This can be explained by the unique nature of this element, in which the dignity element is both the outcome of the two other protection elements (as suggested by the protection formula $(R+L \rightarrow D)$), as well as a standalone influence on protection. Additionally, analysis of both case study countries has shown the manifestations of the Dignity-injection column, which are visually depicted in figure 5.4.1. This column can be both positive (creating an upwards movement in the pyramid, as shown in the left pyramid), as well as negative (shown in the middle pyramid). The Dignity injection column therefore as the ability to positively and negative affect IDP protection.

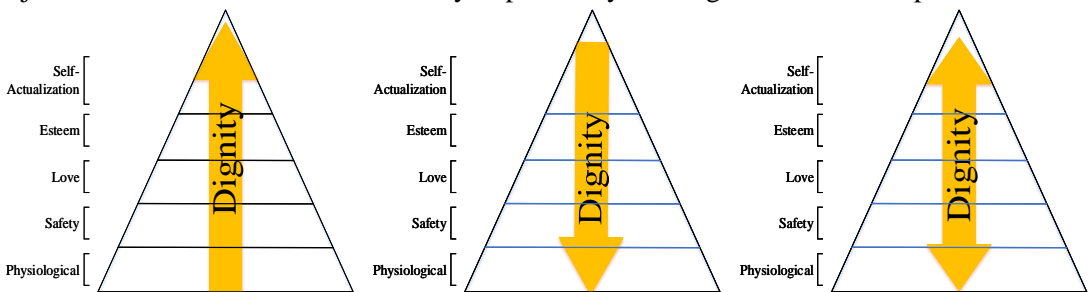


Figure 5.4.1: Two-way Injection Column in Protection Pyramid

In Colombia, contrary to Uganda, TD actors did not explicitly mention the ideal protection formula, but it was deduced from their activities and their effects on IDP protection. Colombian TD actors focused strongly on the dignity element, by emphasizing BU actor's contribution to their own protection, as well as on the rights element. The Rights element in Colombia was the most important element while in Uganda the most important element was the Dignity element. The important point to be made here is that, regardless of which

protection element has been prioritised by TD actors in a country, more interesting is whether or not protection elements are neglected. In both case study countries TD actors, have neglected protection elements. Depending on which protection element was neglected, instable protection pyramids, as shown in figure 5.4.2, developed. All of these pyramids only contributed to IDP protection in a suboptimal way.

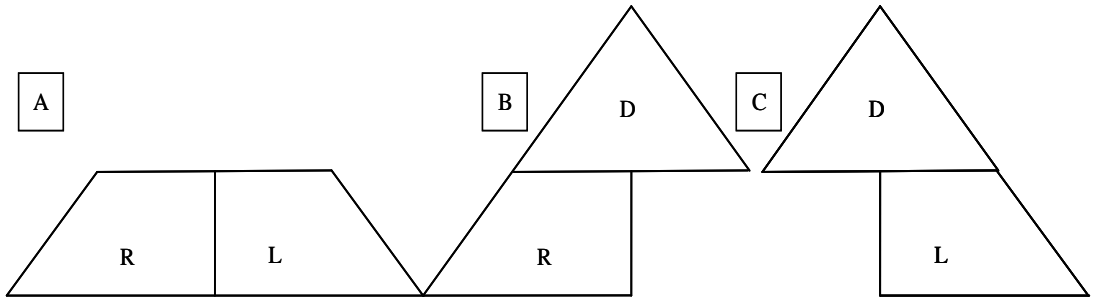


Figure 5.4.2: Instable Pyramids: A) D-element lacking B) L-element lacking C) R-element lacking

Differences between the case study countries exist in relation to the rights element. The impressive legal framework for IDP protection shows this element is strong in Colombia while Uganda has a weak legislative environment. However, the protective effect of rights in Colombia is low due to suboptimal Rights implementation. Taking this into account might lead to the conclusion that the net effect of the Rights element within both countries is the same, but it is not. The presence of IDP rights in Colombia means the rights element exists as part of the protection pyramid, while this is not the case in Uganda. Therefore, the Colombian protection pyramid would look like a normal pyramid but one in which the visualisation of the Rights element is shown by a dotted line (indicating its suboptimal fulfilment). The protection pyramid of Uganda however, would look like protection pyramid B in figure 5.4.2 above, the Rights element is weak and therefore does not have much influence on protection.

Other differences are firstly, the emphasis on gender equality in Uganda, which does not exist as such in Colombia. Secondly, Colombian TD actors teach IDPs that displacement will not last forever which is innate to Ugandan BU actors. Similarities between the countries are the strong negative effect of war and the dual effect land has on protection. A submerged pyramid (where Dignity is yellow in figure 5.4.3) exists in both countries. In Colombia, this pyramid develops from owning a house or having the titles to land, while in Uganda, Dignity was regarded an innate characteristic of BU actors. Regardless of the strong influence of Dignity, the revised protection definition maintains that Rights are the foundation of the protection pyramid (seen in Colombia). The protective effect of rights is further developed in the next PPA section.

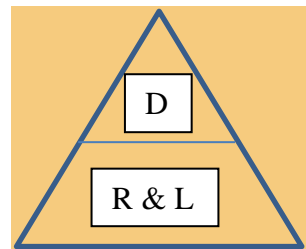


Figure 5.4.3: Submerged Pyramid

5.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law

In the fifth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), specific attention is paid to International Human Rights Law (IHRL). The reason for this is because rights are considered the foundation of IDP protection. By positioning the two IHRL Covenants along Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid, a Protection Pyramid is created improving BU and TD actor's communication and interaction. While in general the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR) is located along Maslow's Being/Deficiency need and the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR) is positioned along Maslow's Growth needs, sometimes exceptions are made. The extent to which these exceptions can also be observed within the two case study countries is discussed in the first two subsections, while the third compares and contrasts the country-specific findings.

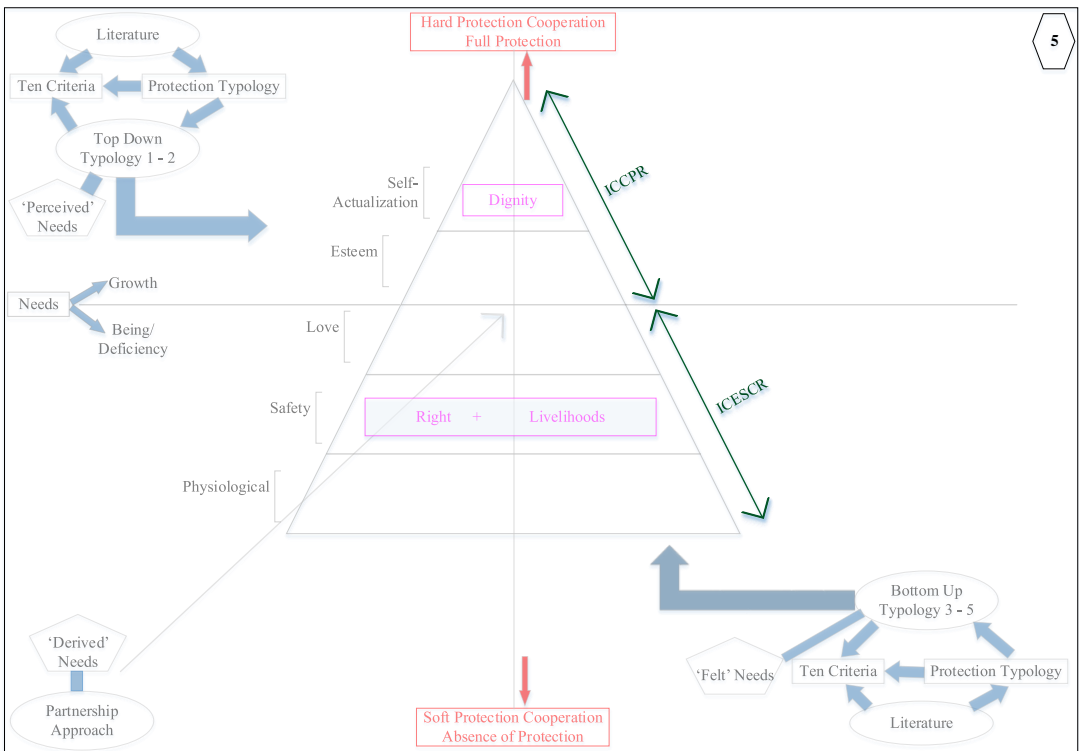


Figure 5.5: PPA Component Five – International Human Rights Law

5.5.1 Colombia

In this subsection, TD data is analysed to determine the extent to which TD actors contribute to the fulfilment of the rights of both Covenants, as well as whether the general division of the Covenants alongside Maslow's pyramid holds true for Colombia. Analysing the TD data shows that several rights belonging to the International Covenant for Civil and Political, as

well as the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural were positively adhered to in Colombia. These rights include the Right to Health, Education, Culture and Belonging to Minorities. Other rights, such as the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living, Work, Trade Unions, Freedom of Movement, Equality or the Right to Life were not only strengthened by TD activities, but also breached (for example due to the fighting between armed groups). The latter three rights are even the most breached rights. Though there is no Right to Land, TD actors engaged in many land related activities (both positive and negative). Of the TD actors present in Colombia, the Constitutional Court is specifically concerned about the breaches and fulfilment of both Covenants, thereby aiming to implement Colombia's IDP legal framework.

The legal framework for IDP protection in Colombia includes Law 387 and Law 1448 and incorporates the Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement. The development of this protection framework shows a move from a more Existentialist approach, under Law 387 with its corresponding Units of Attention, to a Rights-based approach in Law 1448's Dignifying Centres. The Victim's Law pays attention to both assistance and reparations as well as land restitution, thereby incorporating rights of both Covenants. The Law's broader approach to protection, including all victims, rather than only IDPs, takes away some of the protective capacities of Law 387, while at the same time narrowing the scope of who is an IDP by differentiating between causes of displacement. Problems relating to capacity, political will and lack of knowledge have hampered the implementation of all laws in Colombia.

As the Government's implementation of Law 387 was low, BU actors used their right to make a *tutella* to get the Constitutional Court, in landmark sentence T-025, to declare an Unconstitutional State of Affairs, forcing TD actors to fulfil their rights relating to both Covenants. The guidelines provided by the Court to ease the implementation of the Victim's Law are challenged by the overwhelming number of IDPs who made a declaration. TD actors have therefore prioritized the implementation of the Humanitarian Action Part of the Law. This means they prioritized rights relating to the ICESR over those within ICCPR, thereby following the logic suggested in the PPA. One of the problems experienced by the Victim's Law is that many BU actors were already poor pre-displacement, which means they were already challenged in their ICESCR rights. Bringing these people back to their pre-displacement level is not in accordance with the spirit of the Law. TD actors aim to pull them out of poverty, increasing the focus on ICESCR even more.

The Victim's Law and the resulting Dignifying Centres both pay attention to rights in each of the Covenants. ICCPR and ICESCR Article Five, Savings, are fulfilled by TD actors promoting a culture of saving amongst IDPs in the DC. ICCPR Article 12, Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence, is in theory, fulfilled by the Victim's Law's focus on all three phases of displacement, but in practice, severely hampered by the fighting between TD actors, which also breaches ICCPR Article Six, Right to Life.

IDP protection within the Victim's Law is however challenged by the fact that IDPs are dealt with together with all other victims of the conflict. Though this fulfils ICCPR Article Two (Non-Discrimination) and ICCPR Article 26 (Equality), with a given amount of assistance this means less attention to IDPs (visualised by figure 5.5.1).

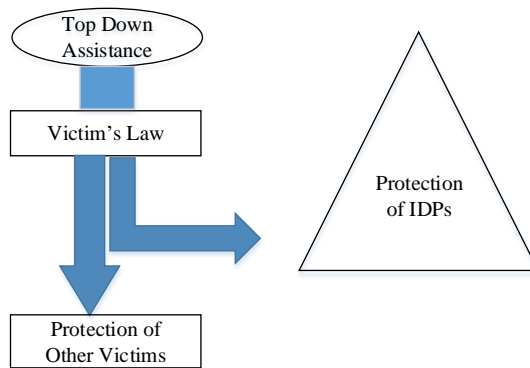


Figure 5.5.1: TD Assistance Divided Between IDPs and Other Victims

The 1991 Constitution

increased IDPs Legal Personality (ICCPR Article 16) as well as ensuring their Political Rights (ICCPR Article 25) enabling IDPs to use *tutellas* and involving them in developing and budgeting IDP policy. ICCPR Article 17, Recognition of Privacy, is important to safeguard the Governmental databases in which all IDP information is stored and which is accessible to relevant Governmental entities. Privacy is also an aspect of safe housing as the Victim Unit representatives say that dignified housing means have separate rooms for parents and children.

In relation to the ICCPR Article 19 (Freedom of Opinion, Expression and Information) TD actors mention the mistrust between IDPs and between IDPs and the Government. Another problem is observed by TD actors in relation to ICCPR Articles 21/ 22, and ICESCR Article 8 (Trade Unions). While BU actors are free to assemble and form trade unions, IDP leaders, HR defenders and leaders of trade unions are amongst the most threatened people. Within the UAOs/DC IDPs' ICESCR rights are largely fulfilled as attention is being paid to an adequate standard of living, health care, education, work and family related needs. At the same time, TD actors, under the land restitution activities of the Victim's Law, only strengthen both Covenants indirectly. The UAOs/DC contribute more directly to the fulfilment of the ICESCR. This means that, in general, the logic of rights fulfilment suggested in the theoretical component five in chapter two, holds true for Colombia. In the next subsection, a similar analysis will be conducted for the TD data collected in Uganda.

5.5.2 Uganda

In Uganda, the Human Rights regime is weak. Nevertheless, socio-economic rights are considered progressive rights. This means they should receive constant attention and can never be fulfilled. This enforced stream of attention explains why the rights of the ICESCR are better fulfilled than those of the ICCPR, even though most awareness raising activities are geared towards the ICCPR. This leads to the interesting observation that TD actors in Uganda prioritise ICCPR in their rhetoric, but in practice ICESCR is better fulfilled than ICCPR. The implicit fulfilment of ICESCR does however decrease the protective capacity of the Covenant

making the foundation of the pyramid less stable. This is because explicitly recognised rights increase rights’ awareness amongst BU actors, enabling them to fight for their rights. Still, TD actors in Uganda follow the logic suggested in chapter two, relating to component five.

The most fulfilled rights within ICESCR are the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living, Education and Culture, while ICCPR Articles relating to the Right to Life, Justice and the Child receive most attention. All rights are, however, challenged during the war, as a result of TD actors fighting, and after the war by land wrangling activities. Given the importance of land in Uganda, land influences the whole protection pyramid, but given the lack of a Right to Land, this is done indirectly. Another reason why the fulfilment of rights in Uganda follows the logic as depicted in figure 5.5 above, is because, in Uganda, rights are more communally experienced, which is more a characteristic of ICESCR than ICCPR. In chapter two, article one of both Covenants was shown as the article easing the transition from ICESCR to ICCPR. Given the strong emphasis on Gender Equality in Uganda, and the fact that Gender Equality is also mentioned in both Covenants, Article 3 ICESCR/ICCPR should be added to the transition, as is shown in figure 5.5.2.

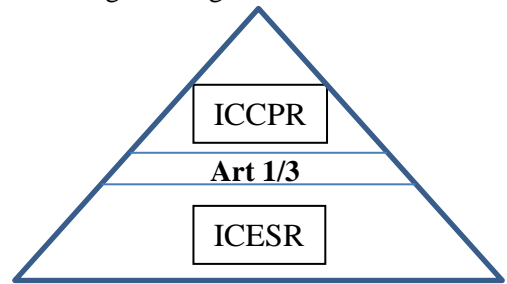


Figure 5.5.2: ICESR–ICCPR Transition

As a result of the weak general HR regime in Uganda, the protection of IDPs is weak too. Most Ugandan Acts for IDP protection are non-enforceable. The most mentioned Act is the 2004 IDP Policy (followed by the 2010 IDP Policy), both based on the Guiding Principles of International Displacement. Interestingly, the Guiding Principles themselves are not well known amongst Ugandan TD actors. Opposed to this, the African Union Kampala Convention is. This leads to the observation that, in Uganda, the Guiding Principles did not consolidate their protective effect on the national level (as most IDP policies are not legally binding) but on the regional level. The Kampala Convention, though applicable to the national level, is only enforceable at the regional level. Upon domestication, this shifts to the national level, but this has not occurred yet in Uganda. Analysing the TD data furthermore shows that the implementation of the Kampala Convention is left to the sub-national level, relying on the work of Community based organisations (CBOs). TD actors have suggested that, given that the domestication of the Convention does not occur on the national level but is left to the sub-national level, international attention for the Kampala Convention is needed. Once it is adopted in domestic legislation, the Kampala Convention will fulfil rights in both Covenants, with a slightly stronger emphasis on the ICESCR than ICCPR. This preference for ICESCR is already observed in the non-legally binding 2004 IDP Policy where chapter three focuses almost exclusively on economic, social and cultural rights.

In Uganda there is an interesting phenomena where, rhetorically, ICCPR is prioritised but in practice the normal PPA logic is applied, is visually depicted in figure 5.5.3. Prioritisation of ICCPR will invert the protection pyramid, making it very unstable, decreasing IDP protection. It should also be noted that, though TD actors in Uganda know the Kampala Convention, they do not use it often, taking

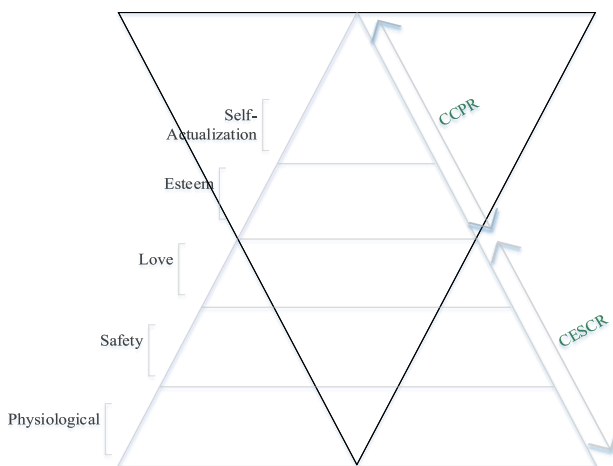


Figure 5.5.3: Effect on Protection Pyramid of TD ICCPR Preference

away the possibility of making the domestication of the Convention into national law easier. A possible reason for the lack of attention to IDP protection can be the end of the war, making the necessity for such legislation smaller. However, as is emphasised in the Guiding Principles, preventing displacement is a very important component of IDP protection. The lack of interest in Uganda in IDP protection is one difference with the situation in Colombia. Other differences, and similarities, are discussed in the next subsection.

5.5.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Five

Comparing the contribution of TD actors to the fulfilment of ICESCR and ICCPR in both case study countries, as well as the positioning of the Covenants in the protection pyramid, more similarities than differences can be observed. In both countries, TD actors prioritise the fulfilment of ICESCR, even though this is not explicitly recognised by TD actors in Uganda. There the fulfilment of ICESCR is related to the fact that the rights belonging to this Covenant are considered progressive rights, a legal term not recognised in Colombia. In Colombia, ICESCR is more directly fulfilled than ICCPR even though the Victim’s Law aims to fulfil BU actor’s rights in both Covenants. The direct fulfilment of ICESCR in Colombia is linked to the creation of UAOs/DC as part of Law 1448. The 1991 Constitution, giving BU actors the possibility to make a *tutella*, is an important first step in fulfilling the more political and civil rights of IDPs. The presence of legally enforceable laws accompanied by strong institutions is one of the reasons why the Colombian HR regime is strong while the HR regime in Uganda is weak. In Uganda, there are also many Acts dealing with IDP protection but most are not legally enforceable, and those which are, are located at the regional level. This shows another difference between the two case study countries. Colombia’s IDP Legislative Framework is located at the national level and is being rolled out to the lower hierarchical levels. In Uganda,

the only enforceable IDP Framework is located at the regional level and relies on the sub-national level for its implementation, the national level is bypassed. Additional similarities between the two countries, can be observed in the fulfilment and breaches within both Covenants. In both countries, the Right to an Adequate Standard of Living is both fulfilled and breached (by war). The war also breached the Right to Life in both countries. TD actors in both countries highlight the fulfilment of the Right to Education, Culture and Freedom of Movement. While Ugandan TD actors focused on Gender Equality, TD actors aimed at fulfilling the Right to Equality, equality is therefore considered important for IDP protection in both countries. A final similarity in both countries are the activities (both positive and negative in both countries) relating to land. Though no Right to Land exist the misappropriation of land in Colombia and land wrangling in Uganda, negatively influence rights within both Covenants. TD actors in Colombia have aimed to return misappropriated land to IDPs through the land restitution system while in Uganda this was done through Transitional and Traditional Dispute Settlement Mechanisms. Both activities have a similarly positive, though indirect, effect on rights in both Covenants and therefore on IDP Protection (shown in figure 5.5.4). The way TD actors' activities contribute to IDP protection when using Structuration Theory developed by Giddens' is presented in the next section.



Figure 5.5.4: TD Activities Relating to Land Indirectly Influencing IDP Protection

5.6 Component Six: Giddens' Structuration Theory

In the sixth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) Giddens' Structuration Theory (ST) is introduced. ST consists of Agency (A) and Structure (S), which are transcended in the Duality of Structure (DS). In chapter two it has been explained how Agency relates to Bottom Up (BU) actors while Structure resembles Top Down (TD) actors. The Duality of Structure can be equated with the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP), which moves along the protection continuum from soft protection cooperation where there is no protection to hard protection cooperation where IDPs are fully protected. The aim of introducing ST is to utilise Giddens' theoretical concepts to improve BU and TD actor's interaction and so contribute to IDP protection. In this section the TD data collected in both case study countries is analysed in the first two subsections, to identify the use of Giddens' concepts (A/S/DS as well as time-space and ontological security), together with BU coping and self-protection mechanisms. Similarities and differences between the way BU and TD actors use the elements of PPA component six, contains lessons learned that can contribute to improving IDP protection (presented in the third subsection). The different elements and their interactions of component six, including Giddens' theory, are visualised in figure 5.6.

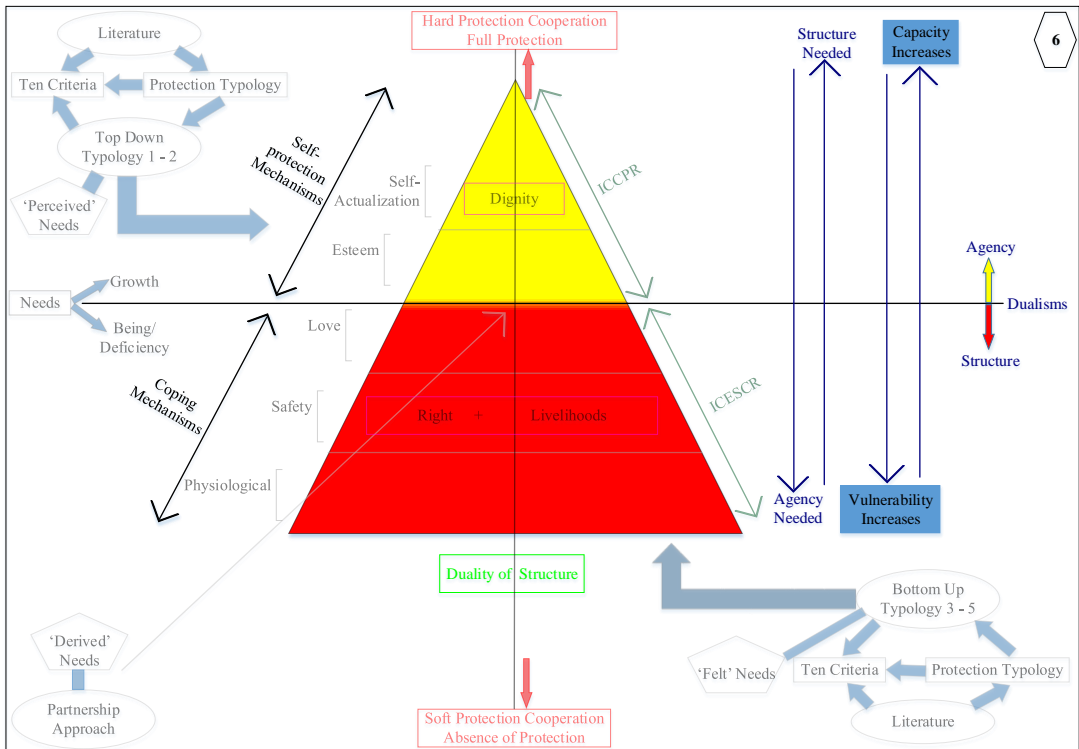


Figure 5.6: PPA Component Six – Giddens' Structuration Theory

5.6.1 Colombia

The TD data collected in Colombia has been analysed to determine the different elements of PPA component six. Starting with Giddens' theory, identifying Agency in the data helps TD actors better understand BU actors. Within the data more examples of positive than negative agency was seen. Examples of positive agency are; displacing, making a declaration or *tutella*, coming to the UAOs/DC for information, knowing one's rights, participating in Lifeprojects or any programmes offered by the DC. TD actors also observed Agency in IDPs setting up IDP organisations, taking charge of their own life, rebuilding social networks, overcoming lack of trust, dealing with trauma, taking any employment they can get and participating in working groups. IDPs becoming HR defenders, trade union leaders or leaders of IDP organisations are examples of positive agency. At the same time, BU agency is challenged by the war and its related negative effects. The problems women and orphans experience accessing land and the lack of land titles are also examples of negative agency.

In many cases the existence of positive or negative agency is related to enabling and constraining Structures set up by TD actors. Examples of constraining Structures are land problems relating to the ongoing fighting, the informal land ownership system with lack of clear boundaries in rural areas, land extortion by illegal armed actors and the slow implementation of the land restitution system. The decision to treat IDPs together with other victims and the way assistance is provided, within a bureaucratic, at times, corrupt system, are other examples of constraining structures created by TD actors. More examples of such Structures are hospitals which do not want to treat IDPs, providing housing subsidy in the form of a cheque and for an amount of money which is insufficient to buy a house, non-holistic assistance and declaration done at family level at times of mass displacements.

There are also Structures which are enabling and constraining at the same time. National Working Group for IDPs, an enabling structure, is at the same time also constraining as it is not accountable to its members and not all IDPs feel represented by it. Making a declaration or fighting for one's rights with a *tutella* are enabling Structures as they contribute to improved IDP protection but are also constraining as they traumatize IDPs. Though there are many problems with land, the good faith land owner system as well as the fact that people, living on land for ten years own the land, are enabling Structures providing protection, even though they also have a constraining influence.

Enabling Structures created by TD actors are the IDP legal protection framework which created the UAOs/DC, HA assistance and the land restitution system. Other enabling Structures set up by TD actors are a physical protection system and giving IDPs access to food, shelter, housing, health care, education, work, savings, productive projects, life projects, psychological assistance and family care. The family, and community, are also enabling Structures. Additionally, TD actors offer coordination, advocacy (making suffering known to the world) and legal support to IDPs and follow up on their activities, all of which could

however, also be improved. The Guarantee of Non Repetition and the Historic Memory Centre are enabling Structures too.

Analysing the TD data in Colombia shows that different Structures exist at different levels and that these Structures can interact with each other. Not only Structures interact with other Structures, they can also interact with Agency. This interaction brings Agency to Structure and Structure to Agency, as shown by the arrows in figure 5.6 above. Lack of TD actors' awareness of the interlinkage between both elements helps explain problems with IDP protection. Offering psychological assistance to IDPs (an enabling structure) to help them overcome their trauma (increasing agency), shows TD actors the benefit of creating such enabling structures. When TD actors also become more aware of the benefit of the recursive replication of these enabling Structures, they have found a way to ensure the continuous improvement of IDP protection (through the Duality of Structure).

Examples of Duality of Structure having a positive effect on IDP protection are IDPs making a declaration (positive Agency), which gives them access to assistance (positive Structure), which allows them to take care of their families (positive Structure). IDPs who come to the UAOs/D to get information on HRs, and because of that are able to access health care and education or IDPs who utilise the life projects approach to create a small business which creates employment for other IDPs are other examples of positive Duality of Structure. When IDPs decide to join illegal armed groups, this will continue the fighting, creating many other constraining Structures such as insecurity, challenges to education, health care and the family, thereby constituting a negative Duality of Structure.

The ongoing armed conflict and lack of peace can also be described in another way, as a negative constraining time-space. War therefore is a constraining Structure, but also negative constraining time-space, negatively influences the whole protection pyramid, preventing it from reaching full potential. Initiatives such as the Victim's Law, but also advocacy activities making the displacement situation known to the world and strengthening culture, push the negative constraining time-space outwards enabling the protection pyramid can function as intended thereby contributing to IDP protection. The negative and positive influences on time-space simultaneously influence BU actor's ontological security. At the same time, certain activities also affect ontological security directly such as forced recruitment, land extortion, threats and killing (having a negatively effect) while physical protection activities of the Ministry of Interior, education, making a declaration, owning a house and having titles to one's land have a positive effect.

Whenever BU actors are confronted with ontological insecurity, a negative time-space or constraining Structures, they revert to their coping mechanisms. Awareness for these mechanisms allows TD actors to support and build upon them. Unfortunately, analysing the TD data shows that TD actors are not aware of BU activities being coping mechanisms, even though they mention the activities. This is why the positive effect of IDP coping mechanisms is lost. Positive coping mechanism which TD actors did not identify as such but mentioned

were; making a *tutella*/declaration, setting up IDP organisations, going to the UAOs/DC, fleeing as a group and displacing. The latter activity can also be seen as a negative coping mechanism, just as selling plastic bags at traffic lights, begging for food and sleeping on the streets. Similarly, to coping mechanisms TD actors also did not recognise the protective capacity of BU self-protection mechanisms. Still, TD actors noticed the importance of culture, land, territory, education, return and solidarity. Analysing the coping and self-protection mechanisms shows that coping mechanisms are geared towards preventing a downwards movement, while self-protection mechanisms aim for an upward movement in the pyramid.

Though TD actors do not capitalize on the protective capacity of coping and self-protection mechanisms, the logic inherent in Giddens' Structuration Theory ensures that negative or constraining influences of one element of the theory are compensated by positive or enabling influences of another element. This is also what can be observed in the Colombian TD data. The more TD actors are aware of this protection increasing interaction, the more they can actively utilise it for IDP protection. The extent to which TD actors in Uganda are aware of the different elements, and their interactions is discussed in subsection two.

5.6.2 Uganda

Examples of positive agency which can be identified within the TD data in Uganda and which increase TD actors' understanding of BU actors are; BU actors demanding their rights, using alternative dispute settlement mechanisms (ADSM) and truth telling activities. The extent to which BU actors take care of themselves, are in control, happy, with hope and able to trust are also examples of positive agency identified by TD actors. The decision to leave family members behind in the camps to access health care and education, participating in farmer and peer support groups, setting up small businesses and engaging in kitchen and organic farming in the camps are other examples of positive agency. TD actors are also aware of negative agency. Issues they mention are lack of trust, challenges of the war, selling food rations for soap, alcoholism and return related problems.

Some of the examples of positive Agency are only possible because of enabling Structures set up by TD actors. Examples of such Structures are setting up a HR regime, though this Structure is at the same time constraining as it is weak. Other enabling Structures are TD actors providing technical expertise, giving free legal assistance, representing clients in court, setting up ADSM, disseminating information on rights, creating rights awareness, promoting, implementing and fulfilling rights. Food distributions, providing equipment, seeds, tools, inputs for organic farming, setting up health and educational facilities (both in the camps and in the return areas), drilling boreholes, offering psycho-social assistance, setting up school and water committees as well as VLS, are all enabling Structures too. The lack of food due to late, or non-arrival of food distributions, not offering enough psycho-social support, lacking field presence, capacity and funding due to Uganda being a 'forgotten crisis', however, shows

the constraining nature of the enabling Structures. In the same way, the empowerment of the Government and solving land problems (enabling Structures) is decreased by corruption, discrimination, lack of rule of law and land wrangling. The other way around occurs too. The war and related insecurity, rape, defilement and inability to return (all constraining Structures) have been offset by the end of the conflict, peace initiatives and improved security enabling return (enabling Structures). A Structure can also be enabling and constraining at the same time, such as culture and the stay in the camps.

An important aspect of Giddens' theory is the interaction between Agency and Structure because it paves the way for the Duality of Structure to develop. Instances of this interaction, both positive and negative, can be observed in the TD data collected in Uganda. When women take on the role of breadwinner during the war, this positively affected their Agency but disrupted the functioning of the family (negative Structure (S-)). Increased rights awareness in IDPs (positive Agency (A+)) made it easier for them to access and fulfil their rights (positive Structure (S+)). These are examples of Agency in Structure but the opposite occurs too. When TD actors offer education (S+) this allows IDPs to develop themselves (A+). Another example are water committees which develop regulations (S+), which allow individuals to access the water they need (A+). At the same time examples of negative interaction also exist. The individualism which developed after the war (A-) negatively affects the functioning of the family (S-) while discrimination (S-) prevented certain IDPs from accessing food during the war (A-).

When the interaction between Agency and Structure is initiated by Agents and results in a recursive Structure, the Duality of Structure develops. DS can also be positive and negative as well as more, or less, local. To start with the latter, family and community are local Structures as they are closely related to the individual. Interaction between A&S which involve the family or community can therefore be described as local DS. An example of a local DS is the Alternative Dispute Settlement Mechanisms. These mechanisms are set up by IDPs (A+) to solve disputes (S+) allowing people to live in peace (S+). ADSM continue to function until all disputes are settled. This means that in addition to being positive DS they are either DS or non-existent (being dismantled as soon as all disputes are solved). The example of the water committees becomes an example of DS when the rules and regulations which are created continuously allow people to access the water they need. Examples of negative DS can be observed during the war and in relation to land wrangling. To start with the latter, when land wrangling occurs, the people who do this (A-), negatively affect the ability for IDPs to return (S-), which inhibits them from taking care of their families (S-). In relation to the former, during the war soldiers were tasked to protect IDPs (A+), however, they forced people into camps (S-) and then were not able to protect them (S-).

The war did not only negatively affect the interaction between Agency and Structure but negatively affected all aspects of IDP protection. Therefore, the war should be seen as a negative constraining time-space. The Cessation of Hostilities Agreement and peace

initiatives in Uganda however, helped push this negative constraining time-space back towards its original position, at the edge of the protection pyramid. Nevertheless, the effect of war, even after its conclusion, is still felt in Uganda. Due to these negative effects, war negatively affects BU actor's ontological security, while all peace related efforts do exactly the opposite. Land wrangling also has a negative effect on ontological security, while the family, regaining trust and the Kampala Convention have a positive effect.

The importance of trust in improving ontological security is an example of an immaterial improvement to IDP capacity. Other immaterial improvements are information, education, skills and capacity building. Material improvements to IDP capacity are provided by the entitlement of rights, such as seeds and tools, but also land and VLSL. The lack of these material and immaterial assets increase IDP vulnerability and force IDPs to rely on their coping mechanisms. Coping mechanisms however, are not well known by TD actors and therefore also not build upon by them. Unknowingly TD actors come across and mention IDP coping mechanisms, but do not recognise them as such. These unrecognised coping mechanisms can be categorized into; active coping mechanisms (singing, dancing, going to church), traditional ones (relying on the chiefs, elders and family) and practical coping mechanisms (farming around the camps, setting up small businesses upon return and using VLSL). Some coping mechanisms are positive, such as BU actors using psycho-social support and relying on social networks and the family. Other coping mechanisms are negative (alcoholism, prostitution, farming on their own land during the war and being selfish and greedy upon return). Accessing education, training, skills and developing home areas are examples of self-protection mechanisms. TD actors are not aware of these mechanisms, which are also relatively few in number given that the war has ended. This shows how the legacy of the war still creates a stronger focus on the lower levels of the protection pyramid.

The unawareness, by TD actors, of IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms is a lost opportunity for optimizing their contribution to IDP protection. Awareness of these (Agency related) mechanisms would allow TD actors to adapt their Structure related activities to these mechanisms, improving the interaction between Agency and Structure, possibly leading to the Duality of Structure. Awareness of coping and self-protection mechanisms would have shown TD actors the continuing, negative constraining, influence of war (a TD activity) and have given them the opportunity to deal with its negative effects. TD actors do have the possibility to focus on improving other negative TD influences, such as discrimination. Ending discrimination has a strong protection enhancing effect as it would strengthen both Agency and Structure, and hence their interaction in the Duality of Structure. Addressing issues of domestic violence in the family will improve IDP protection, not only because it improves the functioning of the family, a local Structure, but also the interaction between the individual family members, creating a positive (local) Duality of Structure.

Utilising Giddens' Structuration Theory TD actors can learn that they should not only focus on improving their own input to IDP protection (relating to Structure), but also increase

their awareness of the input provided by IDPs (relating to Agency). Awareness of both sides of the Dualism, improves the interaction between both elements, creating the Duality of Structure which positively contributes to IDP protection as it allows an upward movement in the protection pyramid towards full protection. In the next subsection, the similarities and differences between TD actor's awareness of their own and BU actors' contributions to IDP protection as well as the interaction between ST's elements, in both countries, is discussed.

5.6.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Six

In both case study countries, TD actors have not been aware of BU actor's coping and self-protection mechanisms. This means that TD actors did not recognise the extent to which BU actors contributed to their own protection. Additionally, TD actors were not aware of the constraining influence of Structure and how BU actors, by using their coping and self-protection mechanisms, compensated for these shortcomings in TD actor's activities. Translating this to Giddens' terminology means that TD actors, in both countries, were not aware of the fact that by utilising their coping mechanisms BU actors ensured Agency was brought to the Structure dominated bottom half of the protection pyramid. This BU activity enabled the interaction between both elements, which, when leading to Duality of Structure, caused an upward movement towards full IDP protection. TD actors, in both case study countries, are neither aware of BU actors' contribution to IDP protection nor of their own constraining influence. As such TD actors lose opportunities to contribute to IDP protection.

Another observation relating to both countries can be made about the effect of war. In both countries, the war is seen as a negative constraining time-space, preventing the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential. An important difference occurs between the two countries. In Uganda, contrary to Colombia, the war has ended, this would mean that in Uganda there should not be a negative constraining time-space, but it still exists. This means that, though peace initiatives have tried to push the negative constraining time-space back towards its original position, it has not succeeded in doing so.

A similarity between both case study countries can be observed in relation to discrimination. Both countries experience discrimination and in both countries, this negatively affects IDP protection. In this figure, it can be observed how discrimination has a negative effect on both Agency and Structure, causing the Duality of Structure to also be negative. Given the link between the Duality of Structure and the Partnership Approach to Protection (as explained in PPA component two), a negative DS equates to a negative PAP. The PAP moves along the protection continuum. At the one end of the continuum, at the bottom of the protection pyramid, the interaction between BU/A and TD/S is characterised by soft protection cooperation and the absence of protection. At the other end of the continuum, at the top of the protection pyramid, BU/A and TD/S work together in hard protection cooperation and as a result IDPs are protected. Given that BU/A and TD/S are negatively impacted by

discrimination and the resulting DS is negative, a downwards movement occurs along the protection continuum, away from full protection, as is visualised in figure 5.6.1 below.

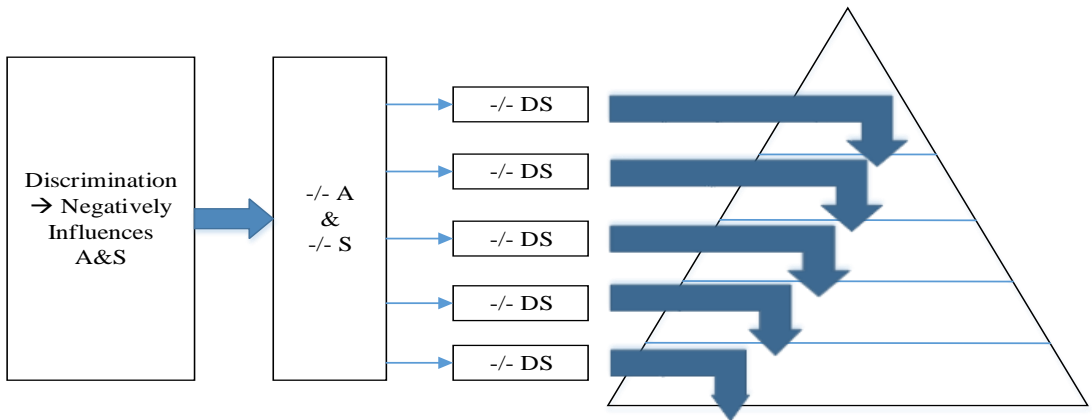


Figure 5.6.1: Negative Influence of Discrimination on A/S/DS and Movement in the Protection Pyramid

Other similarities between the case study countries can be seen in the predominant positive examples of Agency by both TD actors and the importance of the family, a local Structure leading to local Duality of Structure. A slight difference exists between both countries in relation to Structure. In Colombia, more examples of enabling Structures were identified than in Uganda. This difference equally affected DS, with more examples of positive DS in Colombia than Uganda. This is interesting given the ongoing conflict in Colombia, but at the same time shows how, the negative constraining time-space of war still lingers in Uganda, even though the conflict has ended.

Concluding it can be stated that TD actors in Colombia, regardless of the ongoing war, are still able to develop more enabling Structures, positively contributing to IDP protection, than in Uganda. Both TD actors however, only provide suboptimal IDP protection because they fail to notice the positive contributions made by BU actors to their own protection, through their coping and self-protection mechanisms. The next section will analyse how TD activities influence IDP protection in the different phases of displacement.

5.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement

In component seven of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) attention is paid to the phases of displacement. There are three phases; Protection from, during and after Displacement. The positioning of the three phases of displacement, as well as the effect of the number of times an IDP displaces and the duration of displacement, is shown in figure 5.7. In this section, the activities, or lack thereof, provided by TD actors in each phase in both case study countries and their effects (or lack thereof) on IDP protection, is discussed in the first two subsections. Similarities and differences between the two case study countries are presented in the third subsection. At the end of this section all building blocks of the Protection Pyramid Approach have been presented and analysed, for both case study countries, and the final analysis of the interaction between all components of PPA can commence. First the analysis of displacement and the role of TD actors in this, is presented below, starting with the Colombian case study.

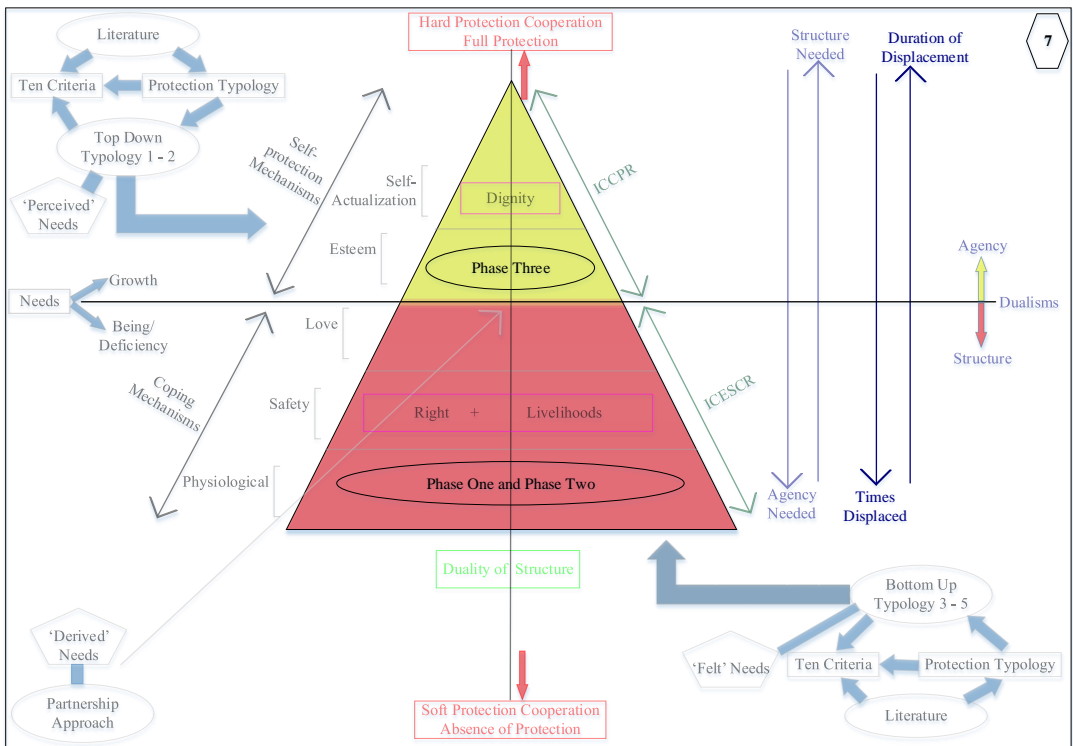


Figure 5.7: PPA Component Seven – Phases of IDP Displacement

5.7.1 Colombia

Analysing the role of TD actors in displacement and IDP protection in Colombia shows that some TD actors positively contribute to IDP protection during displacement, others have a negative influence and some TD actors have both a positive and negative influence. Overall,

illegal armed groups have been responsible for breaches to IDP protection, while the Government, International Organisations and (I)NGOs have positively contributed to IDP protection, for example through the IDP Legal Framework existing in Colombia. In phase one of displacement, any assistance needed by IDPs has often been provided to them by local TD actors, while assistance in phase two was mostly provided by regional and national level TD actors. TD actors in Colombia have emphasised that the focus of providing assistance should be on the Regions as they are most aware of specific IDP needs. The Regions should be given the economic, political, institutional and social capacity, as well as autonomy to react to IDP needs and implement existing IDP legislation. However, this focus on the Regions, and the attempt to keep people in the regions, has also led to multiple displacements due to the expanding conflict. As the arrow in figure 5.7 indicates, multiple displacements mean that IDPs alternate between phase one and two, leading to a decrease in IDP protection.

Additional characteristics of phase one and its effect on IDP protection are that due to the fighting, TD actors caused displacement. On the one hand the act of displacing decreases IDP protection as it means loss of land, property and animals. On the other hand, displacing saved people's lives. It is important to point out that, pre-displacement, those BU actors who are now displaced, were not poor. They were peasants, depending on their land. However, losing their land causes them to lack money and food. This is because their rural skill sets are not transferable to the urban places they displace to. TD actors have tried to compensate for this decrease in protection by offering assistance as well as education and training to BU actors to make their skill sets more appropriate for their current places of residence.

Other TD activities to improve IDP protection included working on an elaborate IDP Legal framework, which already commenced during the highest peak in IDP displacement (from 1997-2002). Problems with IDP declarations resulting in IDPs not receiving assistance or not getting accepted in the Registry have a negative effect on IDP protection. Not being in the Registry means IDPs cannot access assistance, which in some cases caused IDPs to return, regardless of the continuing fighting which endangered their physical safety and put them at risk for additional displacements. An additional problem with the IDP Legal Framework is that some TD actors are of the opinion that it is not suited for a mobile population. In any case, the financial and institutional capacity of the Government is insufficient to meet the overwhelming number of declarations. Adding to this problem is the fact that most of the budget is spent on emergency food and shelter. This makes the problems with registering IDPs even more poignant because mistakes in registration causing multiple displacement means the Government continues to spend money on emergency assistance because people are not able to move out of the emergency phase. In conclusion, TD actors in phase one positively and negatively contribute to IDP protection. On the one hand, they are to blame for IDP displacement, but on the other hand TD actors also contribute to IDP protection through the elaborate IDP legal framework and related assistance. In relation to the latter TD actors can

optimise their activities. TD actors should also be aware of the input of BU actors to their own protection in phase one, which (through the act of displacing) is partly positive.

In phase two more positive influences on IDP protection can be observed in the TD data. This because IDPs enjoy the benefits of the legislative framework developed by TD actors. After having made a declaration IDPs, at the UAOs/DC, can get access to food, shelter, health, education, work, psycho-social and legal assistance. In this phase input from BU actors requires them to make a declaration, ensuring involvement of both BU and TD actors in IDP protection in phase two. However, IDP protection in this phase decreases because assistance can take long to arrive, the fighting is ongoing, IDPs suffer from the negative stigma attached to their status and alleged links between the Government and the illegal armed groups further endanger their protection in phase two.

Land has the ability to, positively and negatively, influence all three phases of displacement. It is often the reason for displacement, as TD actors fight over control over land. Having land titles influences whether or not an IDP can make a claim as part of the Land Restitution system, in phase two. The loss of land has a strong effect on BU actors as, in phase two, it means they become dependent upon TD actors. Additionally, the loss of land has a negative emotional impact on IDPs sometimes necessitating psychological support. Finally, land enables or prevents return, depending on land restitution and the Guarantee of No Repetition, both dependent on TD actors. Land therefore also influences phase three, return.

According to the theory presented in chapter two, phase three only occurs when phase one and two are concluded. However, in Colombia, the Land Restitution process (relating to phase three) is already initiated by TD actors, even though phase one and two are still ongoing. People are still displacing or living in the places they displaced to, yet TD actors offer IDPs access to land restitution. By doing so TD actors start phase three, regardless of the impossibility of return due to continued fighting between TD actors. The fighting and premature initiation of phase three means that phase three either does not occur at all, or occurs at the same time as phase one and two. In both cases IDP protection is suboptimal. Currently, the majority of IDPs has not returned yet, though they want to. The ongoing fighting, area fumigation to stop the drugs trade, the lack of the Guarantee of Non Repetition but also the trauma which IDPs suffer from, inhibits return. Setting up a Historic Memory Centre will help deal with the trauma. Whether or not IDPs return depends on the area they want to return to. The Victim's Unit interviews those IDPs who want to return or relocate. For some areas, the Government encourages return. In these areas, the three criteria for return (voluntariness, dignity and safety) are met. For other areas return is not possible and relocation remains the only option (an easier option for the Government according to some TD actors). If return is deemed possible TD actors offer money and transport assistance to IDPs. TD actors are very active in phase three of displacement, but the effect on IDP protection is extremely low. Either TD actors decrease IDP protection by continuing fighting, or they suboptimally contribute to

protection by offering land restitution amidst conflict. The role of TD actors in the phases of displacement in Uganda is discussed in the next subsection.

5.7.2 Uganda

In Uganda, the actual moment of displacement is singled out as being important in the discussion on IDP displacement phases. In each phase, certain needs arise, for which TD actors develop (or not) the necessary activities for IDP protection. Some TD activities apply to a single phase, such as camp management (phase two), while other issues like land, influence all three phases. In other cases, a new phase leads to a new set of TD activities which are either inspired by, or built upon, needs and activities of a previous phase. For example, TD actors in Uganda focused strongly on education and health care in phase three, as IDPs had grown accustomed to accessing them in the camps in phase two.

In relation to the two arrows at the right of figure 5.7 above, TD actors in Uganda were not (consciously) aware of the changes to IDP protection as a result of the number and duration of displacement. During the almost twenty years of conflict BU actors ended up staying in the camps for extended periods of time. Though many criticisms can be made about the camps, over the years, and especially after Jan Egeland's visit to Uganda in 2004, the level of services in the camps improved. They improved to such an extent that after the war some people did not want to return. Return, which should be seen as another displacement, would decrease their protection due to the low level of services in the return areas. The lack of TD actors' awareness of the effect of number and duration of displacement made TD actors force BU actors to return, even against their wishes.

Analysing TD activities and the level of IDP protection in each phase of displacement, phase one shows how BU actors were just living their lives until fighting between TD actors forced them to flee. Initially IDPs fled to the bush and remained close to their homes. However, continuous fighting (between TD actors) forced IDPs to displace multiple times until TD actors ordered BU actors into camps. The move into the camps characterises the move from phase one to phase two. It created a loss of land and livelihoods, but ensured IDP physical safety. Within phase two BU actors were not able to access their land due to the negative activities of TD actors. At the same time, TD actors positively contributed to IDP protection by setting up services in the camps. These services included food distributions, access to shelter, education and health care. Though TD activities increased IDP protection during phase two, TD actors also decreased protection due to problems with food distributions, limited capacity of camps, building army barracks in the middle of the camps using the IDPs as human shield, rape, defilement, discrimination and the non-fulfilment of rights. The limited capacity of the camps forced families to share huts increasing domestic violence while decreasing cultural values. The, till Jan Egeland's visit in 2004, rather successful attempts by some TD actors to 'hide' the conflict decreased IDP protection.

An important TD activity leading to phase three, return, was the end of fighting between TD actors. The return process happened much faster than TD actors anticipated, to the extent that services in the return areas were not yet up to standards but people were forced to leave the camps. Rebuilding facilities in return areas then became a top priority for TD actors, but many TD actors (mostly IOs and INGOs) left early on in phase three. BU actors coped with these challenges by leaving family members behind in the camps to access education and health care. The majority however, were forced to return. The fast return, together with the lack of services in the return areas created a situation in which phase two and three happened simultaneously. If the three phases of IDP displacement are depicted in sequential order the merging of phases two and three created a smaller protection pyramid (negatively affecting IDP protection) than if the phases had occurred in line with PPA logic. Other TD activities taking place in phase three negatively affecting IDP protection, were land wrangling and discrimination. Land wrangling prevented some BU actors from accessing their land, necessitating livelihood support provided by TD actors in phase three (even though some BU actors were able to farm upon return). Positive TD activities in this phase consisted of TD actors setting up VSLS, providing materials to build shelters, chiefs and elders taking reinstating some traditional Acholi values, increased importance of the family and rights awareness and fulfilment. In conclusion, phase three is characterised by the end of fighting, as well as by food shortages, increased individualism, selfishness, greediness and a TD actor (the LRA) not being arrested or prosecuted. The differences and similarities between the different phases and TD activities in the two countries are discussed in the next subsection.

5.7.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven

Starting from phase one, a difference between both case study countries exists as, in Uganda, the moment of displacement was considered very important, while this was emphasised less in Colombia. A similarity between both countries is the role TD actors played in relation to displacement, TD actors being the reason for BU actors to displace which decreased IDP protection. In Uganda, TD actors continued to negatively influence IDP protection (forced movement into and out of the camps, using IDPs as a human shield, making the crisis in the North a ‘forgotten crisis’ and offering suboptimal humanitarian assistance). TD actors in Colombia also continued to negatively affect IDP protection by continuing fighting, but they also developed a large number of protection increasing activities (IDP Legal Framework, UAOs/DC). Concluding, TD actors in both countries breached and protected IDPs but all in all, TD actors in Uganda provided less protection to IDPs than TD actors in Colombia.

TD actors, in both countries, demanded a different level of involvement of BU actors in the different phases of displacement. In Uganda, TD actors treated BU actors as helpless victims, who should do as they are told by the TD actors (as could be observed in the encampment strategy employed by TD actors). Contrary to this, TD actors in Colombia

required more positive and proactive input from BU actors. BU actors were required to make a declaration in order to access assistance. In Colombia IDP protection therefore relied more on the interaction between BU and TD actors than was the case in Uganda, where IDP protection was more a TD activity. This observation is even more interesting taking into account the characteristics of the BU populations in both countries. In both Uganda and Colombia BU actors were not poor pre-displacement. Upon displacement, a difference occurred between the BU populations in both countries, which was influenced by TD actors' actions (or lack thereof). In Colombia, BU actors fled from rural areas to the cities. As a result, their skill sets were not compatible with the requirements of their new locations. TD actors acknowledged this problem and tried to solve it by offering education and training. Contrary to this, BU actors in Uganda moved from rural areas to camps, which they were not allowed to leave the camps. Though they were allowed to develop some initiatives (farming in the camps and setting up small business), TD actors did not undertake many activities to help BU actors contribute to their own protection. On the contrary, TD actors undertook activities decreasing protection such as; preventing or restricting movement out of the camps, and not offering alternative skill sets.

Similarities between the two case study countries can also be observed the third phase of displacement. In both countries, displacement phases two and three merged, even though phase three did not even really occur in Colombia. Still, TD actors in Colombia offered land restitution to IDPs, amidst ongoing conflict. TD actors in Colombia initiated phase three even though phases one and two were still ongoing. In Uganda, the merging of the two phases can be observed in TD actors ordering BU actors out of the camps, while the return areas were not yet ready to receive the returnees. In both cases the merging of displacement phase two and three decreased IDP protection.

This can be seen in figure 5.7.1 because the protection pyramid which develops as a result of the merged phases of displacement is lower than the ideal protection pyramid (shown by the dotted pyramid). This suboptimal protection develops regardless if TD

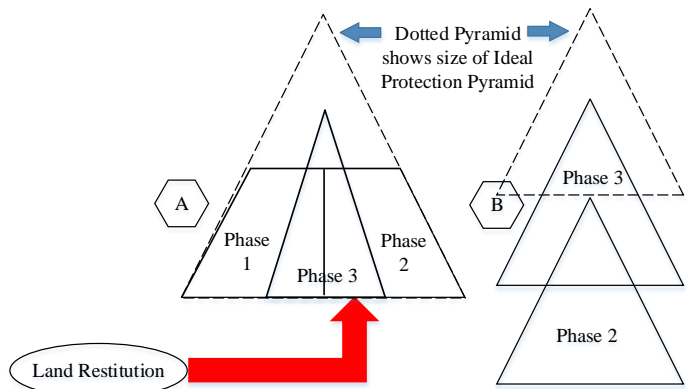


Figure 5.7.1: Merging of Displacement Phases 2 and 3 in Colombia (A) and Uganda (B)

actors are active (Colombia) or negligent (Uganda). The problem highlighted in figure 5.7.1 is even more interesting taking into account that the majority of IDPs in Colombia have not returned yet, while IDPs in Uganda did. In both countries IDPs want(ed) to return.

In this section the effect of TD actor's activities on IDP protection in the different phases of displacement have been discussed. This discussion has taken place at a practical level. In the next section the effect of TD activities is discussed on a more theoretical level, by showing how these activities (in both countries) affect the different component of the Protection Pyramid Approach and their interaction. The way the different components, and their elements, interact within the PPA will, in the end, determine the extent TD actor's activities contribute to IDP protection.

5.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD

In the final component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the findings of all the components are brought together and their interaction is analysed. The outcome of this interaction is fed back to the BU and TD actors. Component eight is visually represented by figure 5.8 below. Given that this chapter is based on the data collected from TD actors, most feedback, based on lessons obtained from the analysis of the TD data in the different PPA components, applies to TD actors but there are also recommendations to BU actors. In the first two subsections, the contributions of each PPA component to IDP protection is presented for each case study country. This means that figure 5.8 is adapted to show the effects on IDP protection for both Colombia and Uganda. When contributions are ideal, then the component resembles figure 5.8, showing PPA in its ideal theoretical format. When a TD actor negatively influences a PPA component a cross is added to that component (or its element), while a dotted cross is used when TD actors' influence was positive and negative. After the contribution of TD actors to each PPA protection component has been presented, the interaction between the protection components and their elements is discussed for each case study country. In the third subsection, the inter and intra component (element) interactions across the two case study countries is analysed.

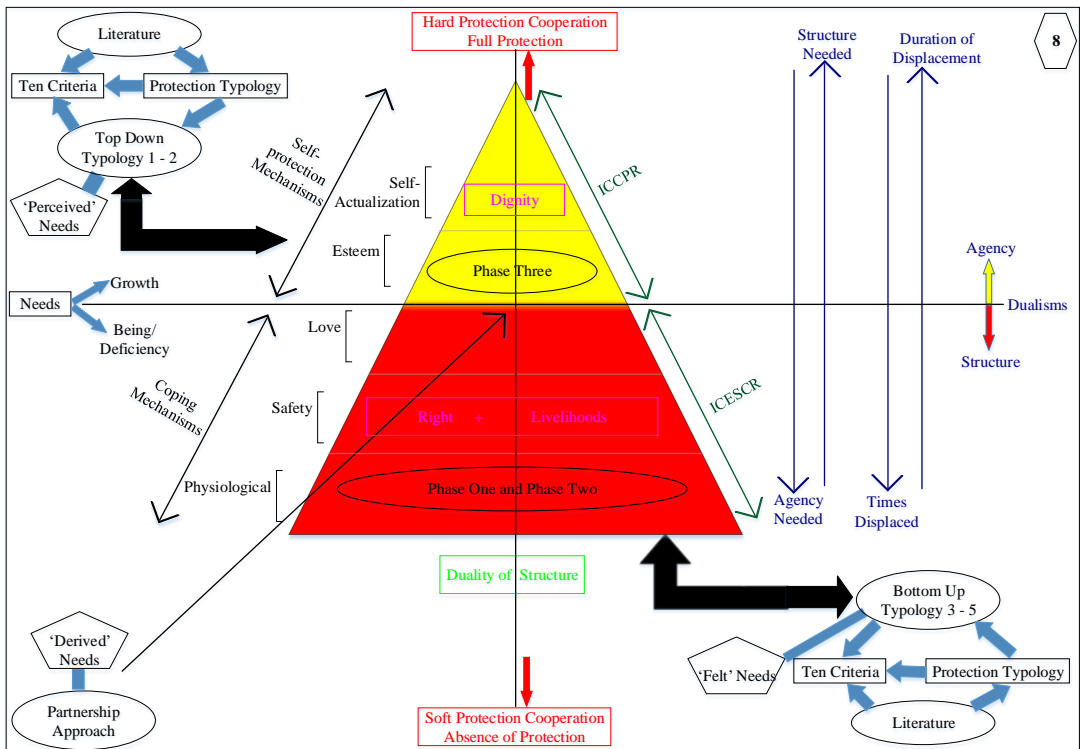


Figure 5.8: PPA Component Eight – Combined Protection Pyramid with Feedback Mechanism

5.8.1 Colombia

The analysis of the TD data to the PPA protection components show how TD actors have, positively and negatively, contributed to IDP protection. In this subsection, a short summary of this contribution is provided for each PPA component, after which the combined contributions are visualised in figure 5.8.1. Figure 5.8.1 forms the basis upon which intra and inter-component (element) interactions occurs. After the analysis of the interaction, feedback is provided to BU and TD actors. Starting with component one, it is determined that IDPs are considerably protected as most, though not all, IDP criteria are fulfilled. TD actors used both TD typologies (Responsibility and Categorisation) and one BU Typology (Accountability). ‘Felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs overlap within the TD data in component two. However, this overlap did not result in optimal ‘derived’ needs because of TD actor’s misunderstanding of the exact meaning of BU actor’s ‘felt’ needs. These misunderstandings (for example relating to housing) inhibited the cooperation between BU and TD actors, diminishing the development of PAP as well as hard protection cooperation and full protection.

Due to TD actors’ negative activities (in component three) to IDPs’ physiological and safety needs (fighting between TD actors over land), and suboptimal protection provided within love needs, TD actor’s overall contribution to Maslow’s Being/Deficiency Needs is negative. Therefore, according to the hierarchical logic inherent in Maslow’s theory, Growth Needs should not have materialised. However, positive contributions of TD actors to esteem needs (such as offering education), which developed even before the Being/Deficiency Needs were fully met, have led to the Growth Needs being suboptimally represented. Self-actualisation is negative as IDPs have not been able to return yet.

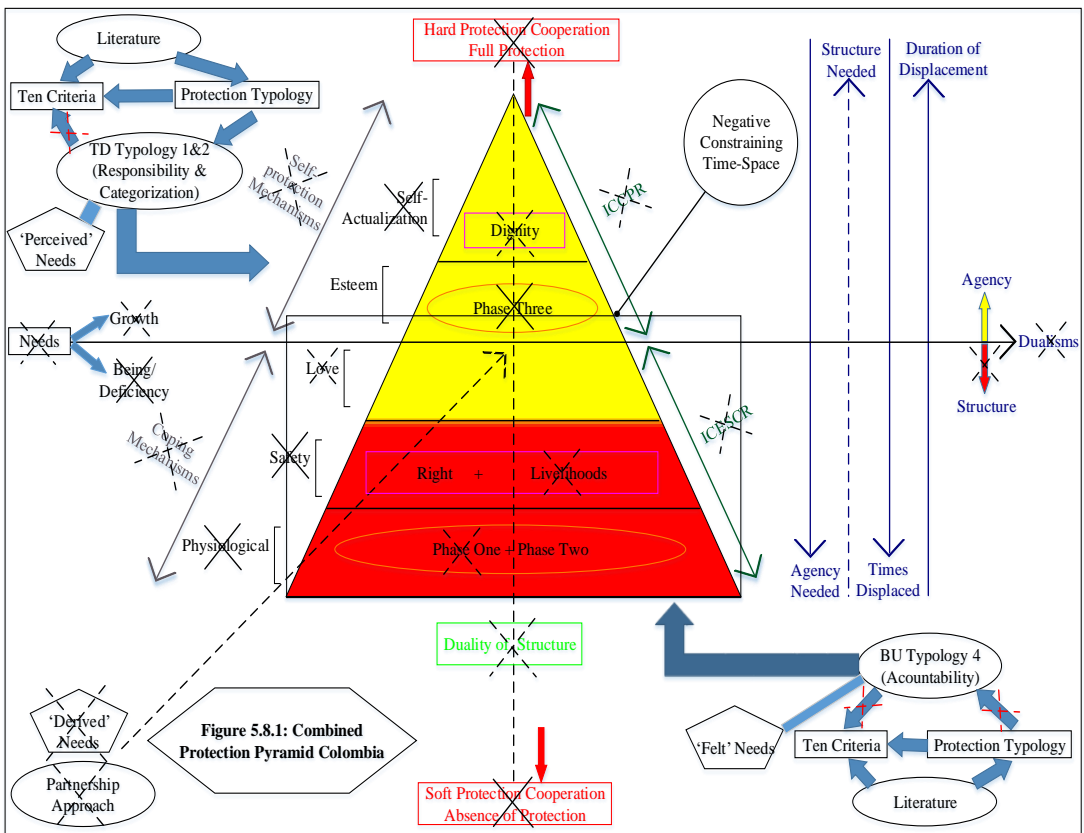
In PPA component four, the possibility to make a *tutella* or declaration is due to the elaborate IDP Legal Framework set up by TD actors, which positively contributes to the Rights element. The tangible and intangible fulfilment of these Rights are, however, challenged by the continued fighting, bureaucracy and corruption. Nevertheless, TD actors have also positively contributed to both Livelihoods and Dignity (through food distributions and psychosocial support programmes), which is why both are shown in suboptimal form.

The elaborate IDP Legal Framework can also be seen as a positive TD contribution to the fulfilment of the two IHRL Covenants in component five. At the same time, TD actors challenged the fulfilment of both Covenants, by continued fighting, which is why they too are visualised in suboptimal form.

Fighting between several TD actors (such as the national army and illegal armed groups) creates a negative constraining time-space (in component six). The fighting, land extortions and other negative TD activities also creates a constraining Structure. However, examples of enabling Structures, such as the Victim’s Law and related UAOs/DC, led to Structure being shown as suboptimal. TD actors mostly emphasise positive Agency, such as the decision to make a Declaration. Though Agency is positive, Structure is only suboptimal

and therefore the Duality of Structure is also suboptimal. The positive Agency observed by TD actors, bring positive Agency to Structure, while suboptimal Structure, bring suboptimal Structure to Agency. Given that TD actors are not aware of the protective capacity of coping and self-protection mechanisms, even though they mention BU actors utilising these mechanisms, means that the protective potential of both sets of mechanisms is suboptimal.

In PPA component seven the ongoing fighting causes TD actors' contribution to phase one and three to be negative. Due to the fighting BU actors are either in phase one or two, while phase three should not have materialised. However, given that TD actors have developed activities in phase three (land restitution) the phase is still shown but with a cross through it, due to its negative contribution to IDP protection. As TD actors developed many positive activities in phase two, such as the UAOs/DC, this phase is shown without a cross, regardless of the fact that displacement is still ongoing. The continued displacement, though lower than its peak between 1997-2001, also explains the dotted cross in figure 5.8.1. The times and duration of displacement arrows contribute to IDP protection as dictated by the ideal protection pyramid presented in chapter two, due to the extended time spend in phase two and the continuation of fighting between some TD actors.



Having presented how TD actors' activities affect the different PPA components and their elements, the remainder of this subsection analyses inter-component (element) interactions. One TD actors' activity which leads to this kind of interaction is TD actors fighting over IDP land. As the reason for displacement, land endangers IDPs' safety needs, while preventing the fulfilment of their physiological needs. The destabilizing effect of the challenges to PPA component three are aggravated by the constraining Structure (component six) which also is a result of the fight over land. Not having access to their land means not being able to grow food, which prevents IDPs from fulfilling their Livelihoods and Rights, especially ICESCR Article 11, but also to take care of their family (love needs and ICESCR Article 10). This makes IDPs feel bad about themselves, decreasing their esteem and Dignity. However, IDPs can use their coping mechanisms and Agency to find employment allowing them to care for their family, reversing some negative impacts of losing their land. Additionally, the enabling Structure provided by TD actors to make a declaration and apply for land restitution, also positively contributes to their protection, even though the negative constraining time-space and delays in land restitution, delay their access to land and return. The TD activity of land extortion negatively influences protection, but PPA interaction ensures some positive contributes to IDP protection.

The positive effect of PPA interaction also occur when TD actors engage in positive activities, such as offering education. Education, an enabling structure, fulfils IDPs' Rights, such as ICESCR Articles 13/14, increasing IDP Agency and improving their Dignity, causing a positive Dignity injection column. Education can help IDPs to find a job (safety needs) which increases their ability to take care of their family (love needs), which makes them feel good about themselves (esteem needs). When IDPs access education they make use of their self-protection mechanisms. The knowledge IDPs acquire through education can even be used to push the negative constraining time-space back to its normal position.

These two examples of positive and negative TD activities show how the interaction between component (elements) influence on IDP protection. Activities (positively or negatively) influencing one component (or its elements) can therefore be countered by elements within the same or other components. The latter is called inter-component interaction while the former is called intra-component interaction. Additionally, to inter and intra component interactions, inter-actor interactions can also take place. This occurs when (positive or negative) TD activities are countered by BU activities. In Colombia BU actors, play an important role in ensuring their own protection, allowing for the Partnership Approach to Protection and Duality of Structure to develop. PAP and DS create an upward movement on the protection continuum, improving IDP protection. For example, TD actors fighting one another creates a negative constraining time-space and constraining structure, while the Being and Deficiency Needs and the fulfilment of both Covenants are being challenged. These negative tendencies can however be countered by BU activities which, mostly, take place in the top of the protection pyramid. IDPs can make a *tutella* or Declaration, which means they

use their Agency to improve their Dignity and Esteem needs, ultimately leading to their self-actualisation. The increase in Dignity causes a Dignity injection column which helps counter challenges to the bottom half of the pyramid. The interaction between BU and TD actors creates the possibility for improved protection.

The elaborate IDP Legal Framework enabling IDPs to make a declaration, is a development which runs contrary to the logic inherent in Maslow's theory (component three). According to Maslow's theory, Growth Needs develop once Being/Deficiency Needs are fulfilled. The Colombian reality shows that this happens more simultaneously, though this does not always have a protection increasing effect as can be seen when TD actors engage in land restitution amidst conflict. At the same time, strengthening the Growth Needs, by giving IDPs access to education, psychological and psycho-social support and setting up a Historic Memory Centre, increases IDPs' esteem, giving them Agency and Dignity, which, through the Dignity-injection column, positively influences IDP protection.

The IDP legal framework therefore has a positive and negative effect on IDP protection. When the framework encourages BU and TD actors to work together, this leads to the Partnership Approach to Protection and, through the interaction between Agency and Structure, to the Duality of Structure. PAP/DS creates an upward movement in the protection continuum towards hard protection cooperation and full protection. A drawback of the Framework however, is the power it gives to TD actors. It are the TD actors who decide whether BU actors will be accepted into the Registry, determining the tangible and intangible fulfilment of IDP Rights.

The feedback TD actors give to BU actors, however, emphasises the importance of BU actors utilising the benefits offered to them, most of which are located in the top half of the pyramid. TD actors encourage BU actors to accept psychological and psycho-social assistance and access education. These activities not only strengthen the top, but through the positive Dignity injection column, also positively affect the bottom half of the pyramid. TD actors also make recommendations to themselves. Some TD actors have questioned the protection enhancing effect of starting land restitution during ongoing conflict, and emphasise the importance of BU activities in the provision of IDP protection to counter the power imbalance which is now more in favour of TD actors. TD actors are also aware of the decrease in BU power due to the decision to treat IDPs together with other Victims. Practical recommendations to TD actors include increasing institutional and financial capacity, stop discrimination, fight corruption, address the informal land registration system and be more diligent in determining IDP needs (to prevent misunderstanding between 'felt' and 'perceived' needs). On a more theoretical level, TD actors are recommended to develop activities in more than one component (element) to create optimal protection. Strengthening the top of the protection pyramid to allow for a positive Dignity injection column and increased BU/A and TD/S interaction, is also beneficial for IDP protection. All of this however, stands or falls with TD actor's ability to stop the war and lift the negative constraining time-space which is

preventing the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential. The extent to which the latter activity positively influenced IDP protection in Uganda, as well as component interaction, is analysed in the next subsection.

5.8.2 Uganda

In Uganda, the war is indeed over. However, whether this translated into full protection will be determined in this subsection by analysing TD actor's activities, both during and after the war, in all components of the Protection Pyramid Approach. The brief overview of TD actor's contributions to IDP protection in each PPA component is visualised by figure 5.8.2. The extent to which TD activities positively or negatively influenced protection component (elements) is once again shown by (dotted) crosses and arrows or by leaving out component elements if appropriate. Starting with component one, the activities engaged in by TD actors provided suboptimal protection to BU actors, as some but not all protection criteria were fulfilled. TD actors only utilised the TD typology of Responsibility while recognizing the BU typology of Accountability. In relation to component two TD actors identified overlapping 'felt' and 'perceived' needs, positively contributing to IDP protection. However, as TD actors identified more 'perceived' than 'felt' needs, they divided their attention over more topics than were important to BU actors, creating suboptimal PAP and 'derived' needs. This hampered the upwards movement on the protection continuum, preventing full protection.

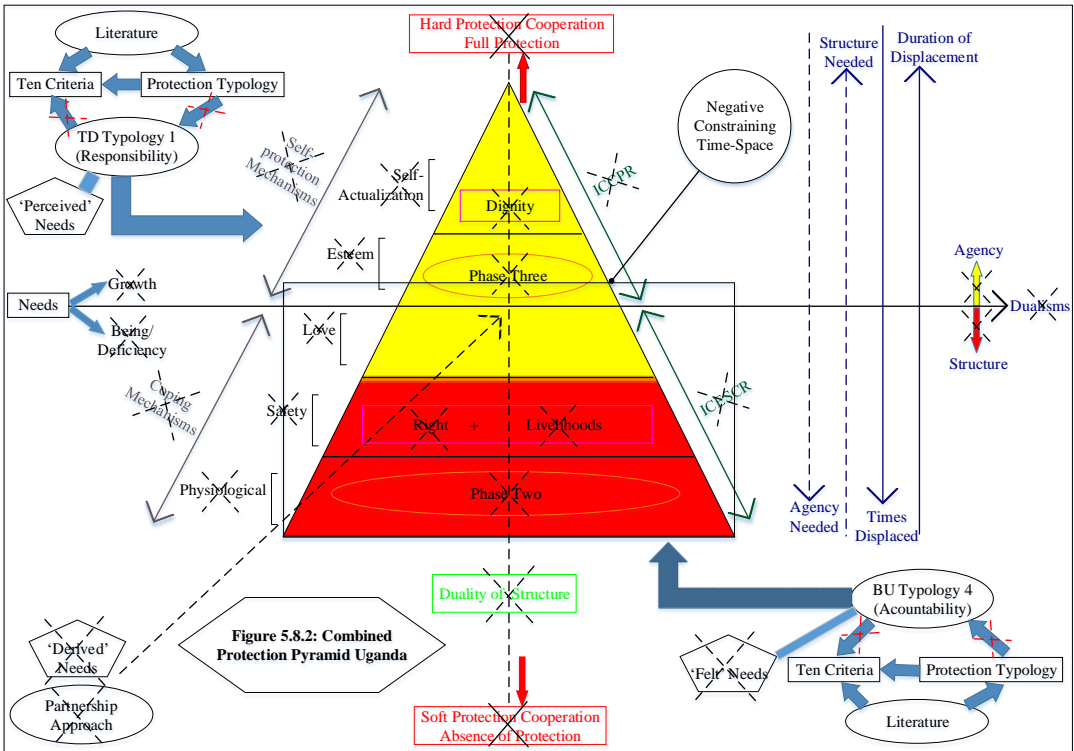
In component three, TD activities positively and negatively influenced all layers of Maslow's pyramid, meaning all layers provide a sub optimal contribution to IDP protection which is why they are shown with dotted crosses. The end of the war had the greatest effect on layer two (safety needs) however, safety needs are still not optimal because TD actors neglected other aspects of this layer, such as providing health facilities in return areas. When the war was ongoing the fighting between TD actors not only challenged IDP safety but also prevented them from ensuring their own food and being able to take care of their family (negatively influencing physiological and love needs). Setting up food distributions allowed TD actors to provide a positive contribution to these needs. Being able to fulfil Being/Deficiency Needs made IDPs feel good about themselves, strengthening their esteem needs. The end of the war also positively affected the need for self-actualisation. This fifth layer of Maslow's pyramid is partially fulfilled because many (though not all) IDPs have returned but challenged by the fact that the LRA has not been arrested and prosecuted.

Similarly, to component three, all elements in component four are also only partially fulfilled, due to positive and negative TD actors' activities. For the Rights element, this consisted of developing the Kampala Convention, but having a weak national HR regime, while Livelihoods are positively affected by food distributions but challenged by families having to share huts while being in the camps. The latter issue is also Dignity decreasing, while accessing education has been Dignity increasing. Due to the presence of both positive

and negative TD activities in the Rights element of component four, it is not surprising that component five is also partially fulfilled and only provides a suboptimal contribution to IDP protection. For example, ending the fighting positively contributed to IDP protection by fulfilling the Right to Life (ICCPR Article 6), but challenges to many other articles within the Civil and Political Covenant (such as the lack of Freedom of Movement due to the TD actor initiated encampment strategy), explains why the Covenants are shown in suboptimal form.

The presence of the war created a negative constraining time-space, however, the end of TD fighting did not stop the protection decreasing effect of this element of component six. The negative constraining effect of war lingered on after the war, which is why it is still shown in figure 5.8.2. All other elements within component six are shown in their suboptimal form. One of the reasons for this are the strong intra element interactions within component six. For example, Structure is shown in its suboptimal manifestation because TD actors decided to force people into camps (creating a negative Structure) but provided them with food distributions (a positive Structure). For Agency TD actors offer BU actors access to education, while, at the same time, being discriminatory and corrupt. As Agency and Structure are both suboptimal, the Duality of Structure is too. TD actors mention and contribute to coping and self-protection mechanisms but do not recognise them for their positive contributions to IDP protection which is why they are shown suboptimally.

In component seven, TD actors influenced all three phases of displacement. TD fighting caused IDPs to flee, but given that TD actors did not develop any positive activities within this phase and this phase has ceased to exist in Uganda, it is not shown in figure 5.8.2. TD actors' encampment strategy both positively and negatively influenced IDP protection in phases two and three. Though the fighting is over and no conflict related displacements occur anymore, not all people have returned and are living in the camps to access health care and education (which is better in the camps than in the return areas). This is why phases two and three are still shown in dotted representation. Return is considered an additional displacement, threatening IDP protection because TD actors did not prepare the return areas sufficiently before ending the encampment strategy, thereby negatively influencing IDP protection. This explains why the duration of displacement arrow, as well as the times displaced arrow are depicted in their original format. Figure 5.8.3 visualises the extent to which TD actor's activities influenced the different PPA components and therefore IDP protection.



However, in addition to TD activities influencing components and their elements, IDP protection is also affected by the interaction between components (and their elements). This means that challenges in one component can decrease the protective capacity of other components. At the same time these challenges can be solved by other components or their elements. Similarly, to Colombia, land in Uganda influences many component (elements) and leads to inter component (element) interactions. Land, is not so much the reason for displacement in phase one, but it becomes increasingly important in phases two and three due to land wrangling. However, not having access to their land means BU actors cannot grow their own food and therefore fulfil their physiological needs as well as Rights (especially ICESCR Article 11) and Livelihoods. BU actors counter this negative influence of TD actors by relying on their coping mechanisms and utilising their Agency. This can entail taking on manual labour or farming around the camp, which strengthens the aforementioned challenged component elements. TD actors also positively contribute to the challenged component elements by providing food distributions, however, the late, insufficient or non-arrival of these distributions decreases their positive contribution to IDP protection. The problems with land wrangling is Dignity decreasing, which, through a negative Dignity injection column negatively influences the fulfilment of Maslow's Being/Deficiency Needs. TD actors tried to counter these negative influences by developing enabling Structures, such as providing soldiers to accompany IDPs wanting to farm. This means that the net effect of TD actors'

activities on IDP protection are changed (both for the positive and negative) due to inter and intra component interactions within PPA.

Another TD activities which influences many PPA component (elements) and creates intra and inter component interactions, is education. Education was offered by TD actors in displacement phases two and three, strengthening BU Agency and Dignity while creating a positive Dignity injection column. This column strengthens the Being/Deficiency needs while increased Dignity enables BU actors to demand their Rights (ICESCR Articles 13/14) and Livelihoods. The fact that, within some families (local TD actors) girls are not allowed to go to school, TD actors negative affect gender equality (ICESCR/ICCPR Article 3). While education itself is an enabling Structure, education also increases IDP Agency and further strengthens Structure by bringing Agency to Structure. Education is however challenged in phase three, as TD actors initiate the return movement without having educational facilities ready in the return areas. BU actors counter this negative TD activity by utilising their coping mechanisms and leaving family members in the camps to access education, which strengthens their self-protection mechanisms, esteem and leads to self-actualisation.

For BU actors to access education, input from both sets of actors is needed. TD actors should provide the facilities (buildings, teachers housing etc.), but the teachers are BU actors. This cooperation between BU and TD actors leads to the Partnership Approach to Protection, increasing IDP protection. An even stronger example of how BU and TD actor interaction improves IDP protection is the TD activity of Training of Trainers. TD actors train BU actors to pass on information to other BU actors. Not only is this an example of PAP, it is also an example of the Duality of Structure. The enabling structure created by TD actors as they train BU actors is recursively replicated when BU actors train other BU actors. Due to BU and TD interaction within PAP/DS, hard protection cooperation develops, leading to an upwards movement along the protection continuum towards full protection.

Analysing TD actors' contributions from a single PPA component, gives an incomplete picture of the TD actor's influence on IDP protection, necessitating multi component (elements) interaction. TD actor's land activities show that Structure, in addition to being enabling or constraining, also can be high or low intensity. This refers to the Agency element inherent in Structure. Those Structures that require a larger Agency input are high intensity Structures, while a lower Agency input makes a Structure low intensity. TD actors offering seeds and tools to IDPs in the camps so they could engage in kitchen and organic farming, did not only create an enabling Structure but also a high intensity one. This is because seeds and tools required a larger BU actor input than, for example, food distributions. High intensity Structure relies on interactions between Agency and Structure (represented by BU and TD actors) leading to the DS/PAP, which increases IDP protection.

The premise of PPA, that IDP protection is increased when BU and TD actors work together in PAP, is shown by the protection decreasing effect of only emphasizing one side. Few IDPs were aware of their Rights prior to displacement. The omission on the part of TD

actors to provide this information to BU actors negatively influenced IDP protection in all three phases of displacement, because it decreases BU actor's ability to positively contribute to their own protection. TD actors have also neglected to capitalize on the protection increasing contributions of BU actors, by being unaware of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms. This prevented BU/TD interaction in PAP and A/S interaction in DS. Instable protection pyramids also develop due to shortcomings in other PPA elements such as food or discrimination (relating to the bottom and top half of the protection pyramid). Furthermore, an instable protection pyramid is created due to a negative constraining time-space. The decision, by TD actors, to develop activities in both halves of the protection pyramid simultaneously has both positive and negative effects on IDP protection. By dividing their attention between both halves of the pyramid, TD actors diminished the attention they could pay to each half which diminished IDP protection, but the attention did however enable the two halves of the pyramid to mutually enforce each other which increased IDP protection.

In line with PPA logic (BU and TD actors working together in PAP), means that, feedback is provided to both actors. TD feedback to BU actors revolved around BU actor's needs. According to TD actors, BU actors should be clear on what they want, what their needs are and then vocalize these needs. Additionally, BU actors should be more aware of their own capacities and the necessity that they too contribute to their own protection, which includes living up to their own expectations, allowing them to become self-actualized. Taking better care of themselves and developing their Agency, for example by increasing their knowledge and familiarity with Rights while demanding their Rights, will increase their protection. BU actors should refrain from utilising negative coping mechanisms, instead focusing on how they can make a positive difference to their protection.

At the same time, TD actors also expect TD actors to see BU actors as equal partners in providing protection to IDPs. This includes increasing awareness for BU coping and self-protection mechanisms, working with BU actors to create PAP/DS, but also increasing BU actor's knowledge on Rights. TD actors should clarify their approaches to protection and be clear on the impact of their activities on IDP protection. TD actors should be more aware of intra and inter component interaction within PPA components and capitalize on inherent PPA logic such as the Dignity injection column. Additionally, TD actors should be more perceptive to how their activities affect men and women, ensuring that they only contribute not diminish Gender Equality. Other practical feedback relates to ending corruption, discrimination, respecting ICCPR Article 12 (Freedom of Movement), ensuring implementation of laws, offering only enabling structures and contributing to ending the negative constraining time-space. This concludes the analysis of TD actor's activities in Uganda and how they, through intra and inter PPA component interaction influenced IDP protection. In the next subsection, the findings for Uganda and Colombia are compared and contrasted.

5.8.3 TD Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight

Similarities and differences between the two countries can be observed at the component and component element level, and in the intra or inter-component interactions, all of which will be presented in this subsection. At the component level, the protection context and culture in both case study countries is different. In Colombia, more protection criteria are fulfilled and more typologies are used, creating a better starting position for IDP protection than in Uganda. However, in both countries TD typologies are better recognised than BU ones. Another similarity between both countries can be observed in relation to component two. In both countries, the Partnership Approach to Protection and corresponding ‘derived’ needs were suboptimal. This means that the movement along the protection continuum was also suboptimal, neither reaching hard protection cooperation and full protection but also not suffering from soft protection cooperation and the absence of protection.

In component three it became apparent that the end of the war in Uganda was a positive TD activity, positively influencing IDP protection in the different layers of Maslow’s pyramid compared to the fulfilment of those layers by TD activities in Colombia. However, the negative constraining time-space (related to component six) still remained and negatively influenced the whole protection pyramid in both countries. Regardless if TD actors stopped fighting the negative constraining time-space remained, negatively influencing IDP protection in both countries. This shows that, in addition to the negative constraining time-space of war, IDP protection is also negatively influenced by other component (elements) and their interactions. Continuing at component six level, TD actors in both case study countries did not recognise the protection enhancing effects of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms. In addition to this, TD actors in Uganda did not capitalize sufficiently on IDP Agency, while this is done by TD actors in Colombia (making a *tutella* and Declaration). Another difference between both countries in this component, is the identification of high and low intensity structure in the TD activities in Uganda, while this was not detected in Colombia.

A clear difference between both countries can be observed in relation to component four, where TD actors in Colombia have created an IDP Legal Framework which positively contributed to IDP protection, while the weak HR regime in Uganda, challenged IDP protection. This difference does not only apply to component four, but significantly influenced the intra and inter-component interaction in both pyramids. The lack of Rights knowledge in Uganda prior to displacement put BU actors in that country at a disadvantage from the moment they displaced, compared to BU actors in Colombia. This is because their protection pyramid lacked a stable foundation and it prevented BU actors to contribute to their own protection which prevented PAP/DS from materializing, negatively affecting protection. In addition to Rights, land also had a strong intra and inter-component effect on the protection of IDPs in both countries. The difference being that in Colombia land was a reason for displacement, while this was less the case in Uganda. This changed in Uganda during the war, resulting in

Ugandan TD actor increasing their negative activities in relation to land, negatively influencing protection. In both countries land inhibited or inhibits return.

Other similarities can be observed between the activities of TD actors in both countries in relation to phase two and three of displacement. In phase two TD actors in both countries worked simultaneously on the bottom and top half of the protection pyramid. This positively contributed to IDP protection as the two halves of the pyramid mutually enforced each other (as was observed in the components, two, four and six). At the same time, however, dividing their attention between the two halves of the pyramid resulted in TD actors, in both countries, introducing phase three, prior to the completion of phase two. In Colombia, TD actors initiated phase three through the land restitution process, while in Uganda this was done through the forced departure from the camps. In both countries, the premature initiation of phase three created a negative Dignity-injection column, which negatively affected IDP protection. The TD activities in both countries furthermore also breached the fulfilment of ICCPR Article 12.

In both case study countries, an imbalanced power equilibrium between BU and TD actors was observed. In Uganda, this became apparent in the encampment strategy, where TD actors forced IDPs into and out of the camps. In Colombia, TD actor's stronger power position became clear by TD actor's power to decide whether IDPs were accepted into the Registry. In both case study countries, this power imbalance affected the fulfilment of the Livelihoods and Dignity element of the revised protection definition, as well as many other component (elements) within the protection pyramid. Opposed to this, TD actors in Colombia, contrary to those in Uganda, were better able to ensure Gender Equality. The activities of TD actors in Uganda affected the fulfilment and intra and inter-component interactions between the genders in different ways. This happened to the extent that it would be better to draw up separate protection pyramids for each gender. Though TD activities in Colombia did not result in such gender inequality it would still be good to differentiate the effects of TD activities on the two genders, as this has a protection increasing effect.

Analysing component eight for both case study countries shows that TD actor's activities should be approached from all the different components of the Protection Pyramid Approach to be able to truly determine the influence of TD activities on IDP protection. This is what has been done in this section. The extent to which the increased understanding of TD actor's contribution to IDP protection led to the actual improvement of protection for IDPs is discussed in the conclusion of this chapter.

5.9 Conclusion

In this chapter the Top Down Data collected in the two case study countries have been analysed, utilising the Protection Pyramid Approach. By doing so the added value of PPA has been shown, as theory and practice were used in a mutually re-enforcing way for the protection of IDPs. In addition to answering the second specific objective the conducted analysis fulfilled the goals listed in the introduction. These goals were, firstly, to use the Protection Pyramid Approach to analyse Top Down data and secondly, to determine whether IDPs are protected in the case study countries. The extent to which these goals are met is presented here.

Starting with the first, using the PPA to analyse TD data revealed that the PPA is not only useful but indeed necessary to correctly analyse data collected from Top Down actors. As can be seen from the presentation of the analysis of TD data in the first seven components, focusing only on one component would have misrepresented TD actors' contribution to IDP protection. For example, utilising only a human rights regime perspective (PPA component four), one could conclude that there is only suboptimal protection for IDPs in Uganda. This conclusion would be based on the weak Human Right's Regime created by TD actors and their neglect to ensure that BU actors had sufficient Rights knowledge prior to displacement. However, including TD actors' contributions to PPA component three (Maslow) shows that TD actors developed many activities which positively contribute to IDP protection (such as setting up food distribution, and providing health and educational facilities in the camps). This example shows how negative TD actor's activities in one component were compensated by positive TD activities in another PPA component. When only a single component analysis would have been used a skewed conclusion about the contribution of TD actors to the level of IDP protection in Uganda would have been drawn, not doing justice to reality.

The latter comments lead to the answer to the second goal of this chapter, whether or not (due to TD actors' activities) IDPs are protected. The answer is that TD actors contributed both positively and negatively to IDP protection, depending on the protection component and how activities were countered or strengthened by intra and inter component (element) interactions. Activities of TD actors in both case study countries led to suboptimal IDP protection in both Colombia and Uganda. Interesting observations pertaining to the intra and inter-component (element) interactions within and between case study countries can be read in component eight. Highlighting the most important findings shows that the protection context and culture created a different starting position for IDP protection in both countries. This is partly explained by the weak HR regime in Uganda and the elaborate IDP Legal Framework in Colombia. Furthermore, it could have been expected that the end of the conflict in Uganda resulted in better IDP protection in that country compared to Colombia. This was, however, not the case as the legacy of the war lingered on in Uganda. Therefore, a negative constraining time-space was observed in both countries, being partially accountable for the suboptimal IDP protection as the protection pyramid could not reach its optimal form.

Suboptimal IDP protection, in both countries, could also be attributed to TD actors prioritising IDP displacement phase three before the fulfilment of phases one and two. According to the logic inherent in Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory, Growth Needs, located in the top of the protection pyramid, should only materialise once Being/Deficiency needs are met. The negative effect of prioritising phase three (in the top of the pyramid) before phases one and two (bottom of the pyramid) is in line with Maslow's theory. However, the manifestation of the top half of the protection pyramid in protection components two, four, five and six had a positive effect on IDP protection. This was because the materialisation of the top half of the protection pyramid enabled interaction between both halves of the protection pyramid increasing IDP protection as a result.

Explaining the positive effect of both halves of the protection pyramid developing simultaneously from a PPA component two perspective, means that, due to both halves being present, cooperation between BU actors (more focused on the top of the pyramid) and TD actors (emphasizing the bottom of the pyramid) leads to the Partnership Approach to Protection. Explaining the phenomena from PPA component four shows how the materialisation of the bottom half of the protection pyramid, in which Rights and Livelihoods are located, leads to Dignity (located in the top of the pyramid) while, at the same time, Rights and Livelihoods are strengthened by the Dignity-injection column. In component five, International Human Rights Law, comprehensive protection depends on the fulfilment of both Covenants. Also in PPA component six the added benefit of having the two halves of the protection pyramid interacting is clear when keeping in mind Giddens' premise that Agency and Structure should be transcended in the Duality of Structure.

Both goals of this chapter were captured in the second specific objective of this research which is *'to identify and analyse, in general, and specifically, the approaches and strategies protection providers, mandated to protect IDPs, adopt towards IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms'*. The analysis of the TD data collected in both case study countries has provided insights into the approaches and strategies TD actors used to contribute to IDP protection, and the extent to which they were successful in doing so. Most importantly however, the analysis in this chapter has shown how TD actors, on their own, are not able to provide optimal protection to IDPs. Instead TD actors need the contribution of BU actors to ensure optimal IDP protection. This realisation goes a long way towards answering the main research question of this PhD, which reads *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'*. The manner in which the interaction between BU and TD actors, based on the data collected in both case study countries, can lead to the Partnership Approach to Protection and therefore contributes to IDP protection is presented in the next chapter.

Chapter Six: Partnership Approach - Colombia & Uganda

Within the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) it is argued that the protection of Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) is improved when Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) actors work together in a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). In preparation for the analysis of this added benefit of the PAP, chapters four and five have presented and analysed the BU and TD data collected in Colombia and Uganda. In each of these two chapters an actor's perspective was used (BU or TD). In the present chapter, a bird's eye view is taken to determine if and how BU and TD actor's work together to contribute to IDP protection in both countries. The goal of this chapter is: *'To critically analyse both the effect and impact of the Bottom Up and Top Down protection strategies, used by IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors, when connected in an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection, to contribute to IDP protection'*.

To reach this goal, each section in this chapter will focus on a component of PPA. Within the sections (based on the BU and TD data presented in chapters four and five), occurrences of the Partnership Approach to Protection in each case study country will be highlighted. At the end of each section the manner in which PAP, at component level, shows similarities and differences between the two case study countries is discussed. Utilising an intra-component, inter-country analysis of the Partnership Approach to Protection, will show whether BU and TD actors cooperation, at the PPA component level, contributes to improved IDP protection. As such, at the end of this chapter, another piece of the puzzle has been added to answering the main research question of this PhD, which reads: *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'*

6.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology

The first component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) focuses on protection criteria and typologies. In the previous two chapters, the protection culture and context, seen from a BU and TD perspective, have been presented for each case study country. In this chapter, the extent to which the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) can be observed within both countries, in relation to the protection culture and context, is discussed. Therefore, subsections one and two analyse the presence of PAP in, respectively, Colombia and Uganda. In the third subsection similarities and differences in PAP, within to component one, between both countries is analysed. The protection criteria and typologies are summarised in figure 6.1.

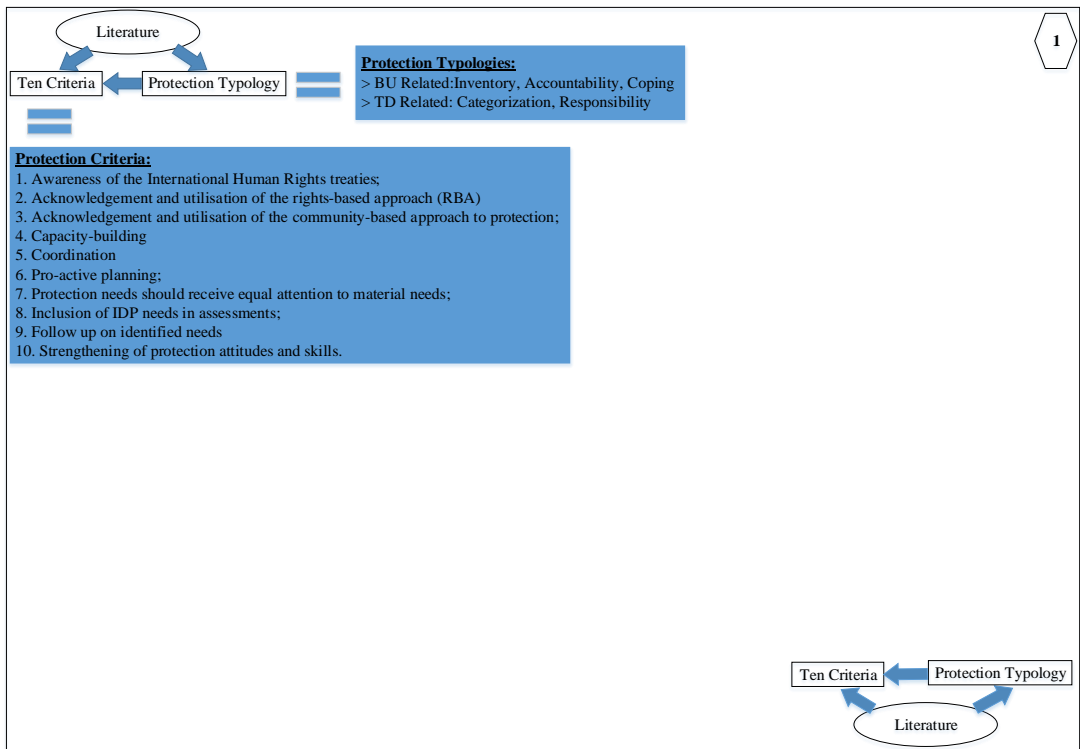


Figure 6.1: PPA Component One - Protection Criteria and Typologies

6.1.1 Colombia

Assessing the fulfilment of the protection criteria in Colombia from a BU and TD perspective shows that TD actors are slightly more positive about protection than BU actors. This means TD actors are of the opinion that a higher degree of IDP protection is reached than observed by BU actors. Comparing the fulfilment of the ten protection criteria leads to table one. From the table, it can be concluded that both actors are more positive about the rights related protection criteria than the other criteria. Especially pro-active planning is something, both

actors believe is not being done in Colombia. In addition to this BU actors are more negative than TD actors about the extent to which their needs are heard and fulfilled. These observations directly affect the extent to which the Partnership Approach to Protection materialises. When one of the actors does not believe a protection, criteria is fulfilled, PAP does not take place. When one actor believes, a criterion is partially fulfilled, PAP will be suboptimal. The PAP which materialises from the interaction between BU and TD actors can be seen in the third row of table one. From this third row, it can be concluded that only one instance of positive PAP takes place in Colombia, while all other cases of PAP are either suboptimal or negative. A differentiation could be made in the extent to which PAP is suboptimal as, for example, the PAP relating to criteria three is less suboptimal than that of criteria two, but more suboptimal than the PAP in criteria four. By including the table (6.1.1), it is possible to see where, along the protection continuum running from full to the absence of protection, the PAP of a certain criteria is located.

Criteria	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
BU	+	+/-	+	+/-	-	-	+/-	-	+/-	-
TD	++	+/-	+/-	++	+/-	-	+/-	+	+	+
PAP	+	+/-	+/-	+/-	-	-	+/-	-	+/-	-

Table 6.1.1: Fulfilment of Protection Criteria from BU and TD Perspective and Resulting PAP in Colombia

Table 6.1.2 shows BU and TD perspectives on protection typologies. Once again, when one actor values a typology negatively, this negatively affects PAP, as can be seen in relation to the BU typology of Coping. Interestingly, both BU and TD actors were very aware of the BU typology of Accountability. This can be explained by the fact that this BU typology requires a large TD input, which explains TD actors' familiarity with it. Also, TD actors experience the result of BU actors making use of this typology, which in the case of Colombia is when BU actors make a *tutella*. The necessity, according to BU actors, to make use of this protection typology can be explained by the suboptimal fulfilment (according to BU actors) of the TD typologies of Responsibility and Categorisation. Contrary to TD actors, BU actors are of the opinion that TD actors are not fully utilising these protection typologies. This becomes most obvious in the imperfect fulfilment of IDP rights. TD actors are more positive about their own contribution to IDP protection in the legal sphere. The extent to which, based on the analysis of BU and TD data, the typologies are fulfilled and how this affects PAP is shown in table two. The degree to which PAP exists in Uganda, will be researched in the next subsection.

Typology	TD Responsibility	TD Categorisation	BU Inventory	BU Accountability	BU Coping
BU	+/-	+/-	-	++	+
TD	+	+	-	++	-
PAP	+/-	+/-	-	++	-

Table 6.1.2: Fulfilment of Protection Typologies from BU and TD Perspective and Resulting PAP in Colombia

6.1.2 Uganda

The extent to which the protection criteria are fulfilled in Uganda, differs largely between BU and TD actors. BU actors are very negative about the extent to which the ten protection criteria are fulfilled, as can be seen in the first row of table three. This means they feel IDPs are not protected. TD actors are slightly more positive, especially relating to the protection criteria dealing with human rights. Still, TD actors are also negative about the inclusion and follow up of IDP needs and the presence of a protection culture. Protection criteria four and five should be mentioned separately as BU and TD actor's appreciation of the fulfilment of the criteria stands out. Criteria four is unique because both BU and TD actors mention a positive fulfilment of this criteria (capacity-building). Contrary to this, criteria five is interesting because the appreciation of this criteria is as different as possible. BU actors are not aware of the coordination activities engaged in by TD actors, which highly value coordination. For most protection criteria, at least one actor feels they are not fulfilled, leading to a negative PAP for those criteria. Only criteria four shows a positive PAP, as BU and TD actors both acknowledge and take action on Capacity-building. The results of BU and TD appreciation of the protection criteria and its influences on PAP is shown in table 6.1.3.

Criteria	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
BU	-	-	-	+	-	-	-	-	-	-
TD	+	+/-	+	+	++	-	+/-	-	-	-
PAP	-	-	-	+	-	-	-	-	-	-

Table 6.1.3: Fulfilment of Protection Criteria from BU and TD Perspective and Resulting PAP in Uganda

Table 6.1.4 shows how BU and TD actors believe the protection typologies are used and how this affects the Partnership Approach to Protection. As can be seen from the table TD actors are (marginally) more negative about the use of protection typologies than BU actors, meaning they feel protection is not reached in the manner suggested by the typologies. Not surprisingly, both TD and BU and TD actors show most appreciation for the typology closest to them. For

example, TD actors are most positive about how they deal with their responsibility vis-à-vis IDPs (typology one), as can be seen in the development of IDP Acts and the Kampala Convention. Opposed to this, BU actors are most positive about the BU typology of Coping. The fact that TD actors are not aware of Coping as a BU typology not only means that PAP is negative, but more importantly, this means a lost opportunity for TD actors to contribute to IDP protection. The negative PAP in four out of the five typologies underlines the many lost opportunities for IDP protection. PAP only materialises in relation to the TD typology of Responsibility, and then only in a suboptimal form. The conclusion which can therefore be drawn from table four is that BU and TD actors do not work together to contribute to IDP protection, instead they focus on their own methods to reach IDP protection. Differences between BU/TD cooperation, as well as the fulfilment of protection criteria, compared to the Colombian case study, are discussed in the next subsection.

Typology	TD Responsibility	TD Categorisation	BU Inventory	BU Accountability	BU Coping
BU	+/-	+/-	-	-	+
TD	+	-	-	+/-	-
PAP	+/-	-	-	-	-

Table 6.1.4: Fulfilment of Protection Typologies from BU and TD Perspective and Resulting PAP in Uganda

6.1.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component One

Comparing the fulfilment of protection criteria and typologies in both case study countries some interesting observations can be made. Looking at the fulfilment of the protection criteria, TD actors in both countries are more positive than BU actors about the level of protection. This is because they see IDP protection fulfilled through human rights. This is also why, TD actors, in both countries, are more positive about the rights related protection criteria than the fulfilment of the other criteria. Regardless of the fact that, BU actors in Colombia are also more positive about the rights than other protection criteria (especially compared to BU actors in Uganda), on the whole BU actors feel much can be improved in relation to IDP protection, which is why they value the fulfilment of protection criteria more negatively. BU actors in Uganda are even more negative about the level of IDP protection than BU actors in Colombia. According to Ugandan BU actors all criteria, but criteria four (capacity building), do not contribute to IDP protection.

Criteria six (pro-active planning) is the least adhered to criteria in both countries, according to both actors. In Uganda, relating to criteria five, the largest differentiation of appreciation between both actors in both countries can be observed. In Colombia, the largest difference between BU and TD actors is + versus -, while in Uganda, criteria five shows a difference between - and ++. As BU actors in Uganda are more negative about the fulfilment

of the protection criteria, less instances of PAP are observed than in Colombia, but it is interesting that the one instance of PAP that does materialise in Uganda is positive. In Colombia, the level of IDP protection is appreciated more as, in addition to one positive PAP, an additional five, suboptimal cases of the Partnership Approach to Protection are observed. The total amount of negative cases of PAP in Colombia is therefore much lower than in Uganda (four in Colombia compared to nine in Uganda).

Comparing the use of protection typologies in both countries, according to both actors, it can be concluded that the way in which protection is provided is more in line with the protection typologies in Colombia than in Uganda. In Uganda, BU and TD actors do not acknowledge or use four out of five typologies. This means that they do not work together in these typologies, which does not lead to PAP. For the remaining typology (Responsibility) BU and TD actors do work together, but not to the highest extent possible, leading to a suboptimal, PAP. Comparing this outcome to Colombia, BU and TD actors do not cooperate in two out of five typologies (preventing the materialization of PAP). The higher BU/TD cooperation in Colombia can be observed in the two suboptimal and one superoptimal case of PAP. In both countries, the BU typologies are less well utilised than the TD ones, with the exception of the BU typology of Accountability which leads to the superoptimal PAP in Colombia. As there is no BU/TD cooperation (hence PAP) in Uganda for this typology, it shows the greatest difference between both case study countries. Additionally, both actors, in both countries, did not mention the BU typology of Inventory, while the benefits of BU Coping are not recognised by TD actors. The appreciation of the TD typology of Responsibility is the same in both countries, meaning that TD actors value their legal frameworks equally. However, as can be seen in relation to the TD typology of Categorisation, TD actors in Uganda are more negative about how this legal framework contributes to IDP protection, than TD actors in Colombia are about their legal framework. Comparing the fulfilment of the protection criteria and typologies according to the BU and TD actors in both countries the final conclusion of component one is that the starting position for IDP protection in Uganda is worse than that in Colombia.

6.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

In the previous two chapters BU and TD actors understanding of what constitutes IDP protection, captured within ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs, have been presented. According to the logic inherent in component two (as explained in chapter two), when ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs overlap, more instances of ‘derived’ needs occur. This is because BU and TD actors work together in the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). The Partnership Approach to Protection and the corresponding ‘derived’ needs move along a protection continuum from soft to hard protection cooperation, eventually leading to full protection. While the general aim of chapter six is to identify the manifestations of PAP in the different PPA components, component two pays specific attention to PAP. Manifestations of PAP are identified within each case study country, as can be read in the first two subsections, after which the findings are compared and contrasted in subsection three.

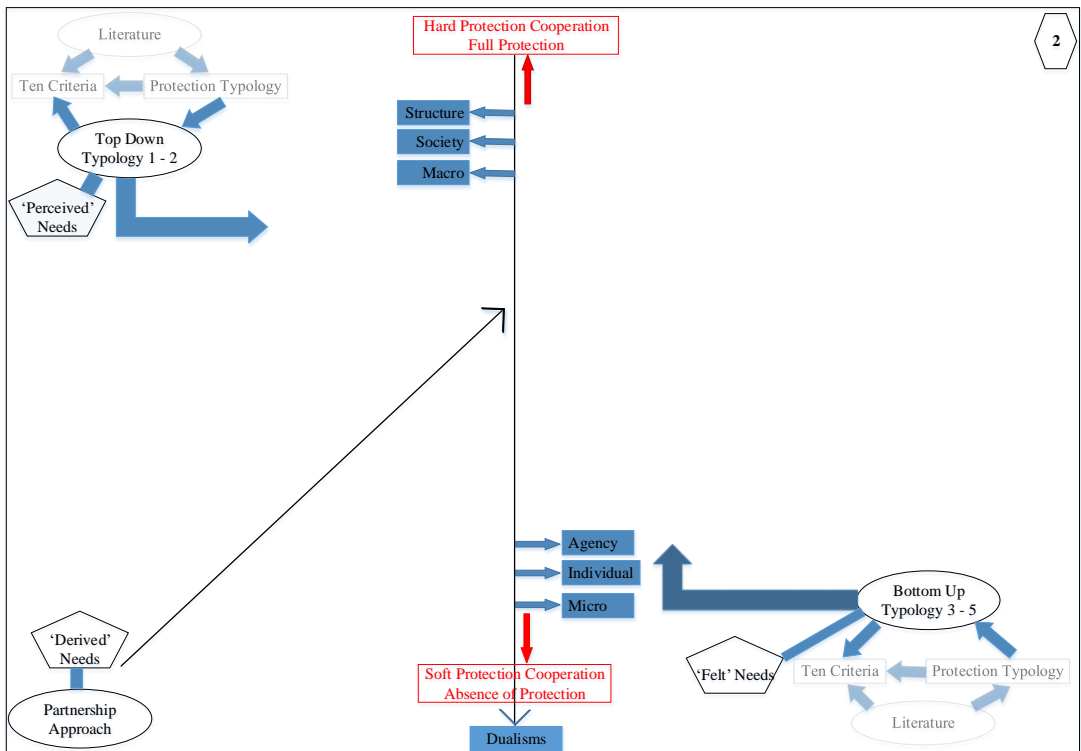


Figure 6.2: PPA Component Two - Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

6.2.1 Colombia

Cooperation between BU and TD actors, represented in PAP, is facilitated if both actors agree on who are protection providers, and whether these providers have a positive or negative effect on IDP protection. Both actors agree that the Government has both a positive and negative

effect on IDP protection. BU actors also feel the army has a similar dual approach while TD actors emphasise the mostly negative contribution of the army to IDP protection. BU actors, contrary to TD actors, acknowledge the (both positive and negative) influence of individuals on IDP protection, while TD actors are unaware of these contributions, including the contributions of IDPs themselves. In all the cases in which BU and TD actors do not agree on the contribution of protection providers to IDP protection, PAP does not develop.

'Felt' needs identified by both actors were land, housing and improved security. In addition to this BU actors also emphasised the need for more practical and emotional assistance or treatment, while TD actors were more concerned with rights-related needs. Slightly more overlap can be observed between BU and TD actors' understanding of 'perceived' needs. Both actors indicated assistance and land restitution as important 'perceived' needs. BU actors furthermore indicated the need to set up IDP organisations, while TD actors emphasised more culturally related 'perceived' needs. In a way, this outcome is surprising as it could be expected to be exactly the other way around.

The way BU and TD actors in Colombia understand 'felt' and 'perceived' needs show some overlap, creating the possibility for 'derived' needs and the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). Overlap exists for land and housing, as both issues are identified by both actors, but important differences in interpretation cause PAP to be suboptimal. For housing for example, BU actors emphasise that the optimal fulfilment of this need equals being able to buy a house, while TD actors feel this need is optimally fulfilled when BU actors are able to rent a house. The difference leads to a positive but incomplete, hence suboptimal, PAP.

The same misunderstanding exists in relation to land. Land restitution has the potential to become a 'derived' need which is fulfilled through the Partnership Approach to Protection. According to BU actors, TD actors are aware of the importance of land to IDPs, as land restitution has been giving such a prominent place in the new Victim's Law. However, due to the complex Colombian laws different forms of land restitution exist. While TD actors do not see any problems in these different forms, BU actors are strongly attached to their own land and therefore are only interested in restitution of their homeland. Interestingly, TD actors, contrary to BU actors, are more vocal about the concept of territory, while BU actors focus more on moving on with their lives. For BU actors, moving on with their lives is related to their homeland, while TD actors assist IDPs move on with their lives by offering them Lifeprojects. This discussion shows that though land is a 'derived' need for both actors in Colombia, what it means and how it contributes to IDP protection is different for BU and TD actors and this difference prevents full protection for IDPs as PAP is challenged.

The provision of assistance comes close to providing an optimal positive PAP. Both actors agree on the need of assistance, but the shape and form in which it is provided is not optimal for BU actors, hence PAP is still suboptimal. In general, no instances of positive PAP can be identified in both data sets, regardless of the fact that 'felt' and 'perceived' needs show overlap. This means that, though BU and TD actors identify the same general issues, important

for IDP protection, they are not able to translate this into a format that leads to an actual upwards movement along the protection continuum. Lack of communication and understanding between both actors prevents optimal PAP and ‘derived’ needs. The next subsection presents the findings on the different kinds of needs within Uganda.

6.2.2 Uganda

In this subsection, the overlap between the BU and TD data collected in Uganda are analysed. Starting with the analysis of the protection providers it can be observed how BU actors indicate both BU as well as TD actors as protection providers, explicitly also mentioning the role of IDPs in their own protection. Opposed to this, TD actors only mention the role of TD actors in IDP protection. Both actors agree that the Government plays a dual role in relation to IDP protection, while the LRA only provides a negative contribution and HA organisations (including the church) only have a positive effect on IDP protection. The army has a negative contribution according to TD actors, while BU actors also see its positive effect on protection.

Moving on to the ‘felt’ needs identified by both actors, overlap (hence the possibility for PAP) can be observed in relation to farming and food. BU actors mentioned how their ‘felt’ needs were both met and breached, while TD actors only focused on ‘felt’ needs which, when fulfilled, positively contributed to IDP protection. While both actors highlighted more emotionally related ‘felt’ needs, the interpretation of these needs differed. For BU actors’ education was important ‘felt’ need, which was not indicated by TD actors, while TD actors focused on VSLS, which were not indicated by BU actors as such. Promoting rights, providing assistance and psycho-social support were ‘perceived’ needs agreed upon by both actors. Interestingly, BU actors emphasised the ‘perceived’ need for strengthening TD capacity, while TD actors emphasised the exact opposite (the need to improve IDP capacity). BU actors furthermore emphasised the need for physical protection, while TD actors were more concerned with financial security. Interestingly, some of the needs identified by BU actors as a ‘felt’ need, but not recognised by TD actors featured in the ‘Perceived’ needs. Important in this respect is education, which TD actors identified as a ‘perceived’ need. This means that though BU and TD actors, individually from each other, identified an issue which positively contributed to IDP protection, they were not aware of each other’s appreciation for this issue. This means that they were not able to work together on it as optimally as they could, if this awareness would have been there. Education is a good example of a missed opportunity for PAP, even though BU and TD actors work together in the educational field.

The materialization of ‘derived’ needs is hampered by a lack of awareness and cooperation between BU and TD actors. This is due to a lack of communication, but is also related to inequality between both actors, especially during the war. The comparison between BU’s ‘felt’ and TD’s ‘perceived’ needs shows that there was some overlap (farming/food), but there were also areas in which the two sets of needs did not match (education). In any case

the priority need identified by both actors was not the same, as BU focused on food/farming and education and TD on rights. The attention paid to emotional and legal needs was also different. Emotional needs were subordinate to BU actors but identified as important for BU by TD actors. This was even more the case with legal needs. Analysing the mutual understanding shows that BU was correct in identifying TD's emphasis on rights, while TD correctly identified BU's need for agricultural support, though missed the level of importance of this need. BU recognised TD's activities in the emotional sphere, while TD actors believed these needs were larger than felt by BU. From BU's point of view TD actors were not fulfilling their most urgent needs, while for TD actors IDP 'felt' and 'perceived' needs were more matching. This means that TD actors were active in the areas in which they identified needs but these activities did not cover IDPs' actual needs, explaining the lack of PAP.

The examples of PAP observed within either data sets therefore do not overlap. This does not mean that BU and TD actors, individually from each other, did not observe PAP, but that they do not work together on the issues which are important to both of them. From a BU perspective PAP occurred in the camps. Being in the camps fulfilled BU's need for food and TD's 'perceived' need to provide physical protection. However, BU actors also indicated problems with the food and were unhappy about the timing and manner of the move into the camps. Therefore, the experience of the camps was both positive and negative, causing PAP to be too. In the TD data, positive PAP was observed in the training of trainers or local organisations. In conclusion, though 'felt' and 'perceived' needs in Uganda overlap, BU and TD actors were not able to translate this overlap into 'derived' needs and the corresponding Partnership Approach to Protection. BU and TD actors were not able to communicate and work together to contribute to the improvement of IDP protection. This problem was also observed in Colombia, as can be read in the next subsection.

6.2.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Two

Analysing similarities and differences between the case study countries shows how, in both countries, BU actors indicated individuals as protection providers, with BU actors in Uganda also specifically emphasizing the role of IDPs themselves in their own protection. Similarly, both actors in both countries mentioned the dual contribution of the Government and the negative role of illegal armed groups vis-à-vis IDP protection. Another similarity was observed in relation to the role both national armies played in the protection of IDPs. In both countries, BU actors were of the opinion the army had both a positive and negative role, while the TD actors in both countries only emphasised the army's negative contribution to IDP protection. Local actors in both Uganda and Colombia were recognised for their positive contribution to IDP protection. In Uganda, the local actors consisted of trainers and local leaders, while in Colombia local communities in general were mentioned.

As indicated above, BU and TD actors in both case study countries were not able to translate the overlapping ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs into ‘derived’ needs. Cooperation between both actors in both countries did not develop into an optimal Partnership Approach to Protection. This lack of hard protection cooperation, resulted in the fact that IDP protection in both countries did not reach the top of the protection pyramid, where IDPs are fully protected. Lack of communication is one of the reasons, mentioned in both countries, for this shortcoming. Additionally, in Uganda (but not in Colombia) a lack of equality between both actors was observed. The lack of cooperation between BU and TD actors however, relates to topics shared by BU and TD actors (as indicated in the ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs). This means that instances of PAP still existed in both countries but were not covered in both ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs. The closest example of PAP based on an overlap on a topic was observed in relation to land. In both countries, though the contribution of land to IDP protection differed slightly, a positive, or partially positive, PAP still developed. In Uganda, the protection potential of land was mostly related to agriculture and food, while in Colombia land positively contributed to IDP protection when IDPs were able to return to their homeland and enjoy the benefits of territory. This concludes the case study comparison of the Partnership Approach to Protection in both countries. The next section focuses on PPA Component three, Maslow’s Hierarchy of Needs.

6.3 Component Three: Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

The goal of the third component of the Protection Pyramid Approach is to visualize the needs identified by BU and TD actor ('felt' and 'perceived' needs) in the different layers of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid. By doing so it will become easier for BU and TD actors to work together in the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP), creating 'derived' needs which allow for an upward movement along the protection continuum to full protection. In the first two subsections, the needs identified by both actors in the two case study countries will be located within the pyramid and instances of PAP will be identified. In the third subsection, the differences and similarities between the manifestations of PAP in both countries will be discussed. Figure 6.3 shows the different layers of Maslow's Pyramid.

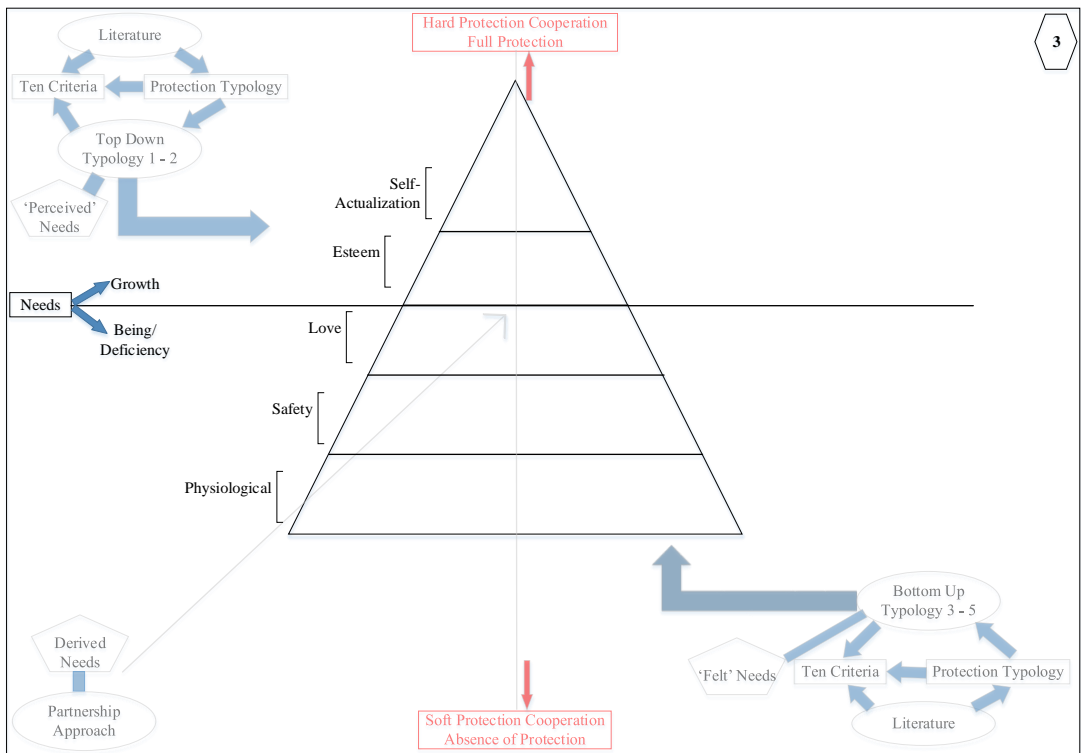


Figure 6.3: PPA Component Three - Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

6.3.1 Colombia

Both actors in Colombia contributed both positively and negatively to each of the layers in Maslow's pyramid. This means that in each layer a PAP can develop which positively or negatively influences IDP protection. However, in layer one (physiological needs) TD actors observed more challenges than positive contributions to IDP protection. Challenges to layer one relate to land and are caused by the war, as well as by problems with land titles, ownership

and boundaries. As these problems were also identified by BU actors, a negative PAP exists which negatively contributes to IDP protection. Both actors indicate the importance of Government assistance (including food), which has both a positive and negative influence on protection. The negative PAP is created as BU actors are fed but are also not self-sufficient and independent, which is important to them. A positive PAP can be observed in TD actors recognizing the importance of self-sufficiency and have therefore made the Dignifying Centres less Existentialist than the UAOs.

The negative effect of the ongoing war on layer two (safety needs) is also something BU and TD actors agree on. Both actors mention the killing, rapes, forced recruitment and politically motivated violence. Both actors also mention the possibility for IDPs to make a declaration. TD actors believe this activity only has a positive effect on IDP protection, while BU actors also see some challenges related to it. Nevertheless, making a declaration is an example where PAP can develop which has a, mostly, positive effect on IDP protection. At the same time, both actors also highlight the importance of housing, creating another possibility for PAP. However, the amount of money and the way it is provided decreases the protection potential of housing, leading to a suboptimal PAP. A difference between both actors in layer two is observed in relation to health care and employment. The former being emphasised more by TD than BU while the latter is prioritised the other way around. For these two issues, BU and TD actors are not on the same page, hindering the development of PAP. TD actors mention more issues as part of layer two than BU actors do, such as financial security and Lifeprojects.

The most important issue within layer three (love needs) is, according to both actors, the family. The family fulfils important BU needs (food, comfort and safety) but is also challenged by the war. According to BU actors TD actors pay insufficient attention to the family. Closer examination shows how TD actors, within the UAOs/DC, have developed a focus on the family by means of the ICBF, but BU actors are unaware of this. Additionally, TD actors also try to stop domestic violence while, utilising the Differential Approach, also fulfil family related needs. This lack of appreciation by BU actors of TD actor's contribution to the family in layer three hampers BU/TD cooperation creating (at best) a suboptimal PAP. Given the negative effect of war on the family and the fact that war is being fought between TD actors, BU's negative understanding of TD's role in fulfilling layer three is understandable. TD actors also mention the need for IDPs to integrate into the poor urban areas they flee to, and have developed activities to assist with this. BU actors do not mention this as such, in the same way as they do not mention domestic violence. In conclusion, more possibility for PAP exists in this layer than is being created both actors due to lack of appreciation and communication.

In layer four (esteem needs) even more possibilities for PAP exist as BU and TD actors mention many similar issues. Both actors recognise the importance of developing IDPs' trust, confidence, self-respect and the respect they get from others. The programmes developed by

TD actors in the UAOs/DC are geared towards reaching this goal, allowing for a positive PAP. Fulfilling rights, treating IDPs well during the declaration process and providing assistance in a timely and dignified manner are also protection increasing, according to both actors. Given that both actors point out the same issues within this layer of Maslow's pyramid, means that cooperation between both actors occurs, leading to a positive PAP, positively contributing to IDP protection. Education and having a job are esteem increasing according to both actors, once again creating the possibility for a positive PAP. One of the reasons why these instances of positive PAP did not materialise is related to a difference between both actors. BU actors emphasised the esteem decreasing effect of being classified as an IDP, while for TD actors this is a prerequisite for receiving assistance. This difference, negatively affecting IDPs' ability to get a job for example, prevents PAP from materializing, negatively affecting IDP protection. TD actors underline the protection increasing effect of returning, which BU actors are only willing to do when given the Guarantee of Non Repetition and return areas are safe. Though there is definitely room for PAP here, the ongoing war prevents it at this moment.

In the same way as the ongoing war negatively affects layer four, the war according to both actors, also prevents the materialization of layer five (self-actualisation). This is because IDPs are not able to return and therefore do not cease to be an IDP. The ongoing war, problems with land and the land restitution system are reasons, according to both actors, why layer five also does not materialise. Additionally, BU actors mention not being able to own a house as negatively influencing their development. Higher education, on the other hand, mentioned by both actors, does positively contribute to this layer. Given all the challenges to layer five, the PAP does not materialise and IDPs are not able to reach full protection.

In conclusion, it can be observed that the strongest manifestation of PAP takes places in layer four, while no PAP occurs in layer five. In all other layers, PAP occurs, ranging from negative to suboptimal. Layer two shows the greatest range as making a declaration allows for a mostly positive PAP but the ongoing war, at the same time, prevents PAP from taking place. Based on need, this layer should therefore receive most attention. However, analysing BU and TD activities, and the possibilities for PAP, most attention is being paid to layer four. The attention for layer four, while layer two is not fulfilled goes against Maslow's logic (where needs are fulfilled in a hierarchical way). The esteem increasing effect of layer four, however, has a positive effect on the fulfilment of the lower layers. Paying attention to specific issues, which are important in multiple layers according to both actors, are land, assistance and making a declaration. Which issues are important in Uganda and how this leads to PAP and therefore to IDP protection, is discussed in the next subsection.

6.3.2 Uganda

The overlap and differences between the data collected from BU and TD actors in Uganda, positioned within Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid, is analysed in this subsection.

Starting with layer one (physiological needs) both data sets show that land and being able to farm are of crucial importance. Instances of PAP have occurred in relation to land and have been positive and negative. When Government soldiers were escorting IDPs to their land to farm during the war, this is an example of a positive PAP. However, land wrangling practices created a negative PAP, challenging IDP protection. Food assistance was also mentioned by both actors and is an example of a positive and negative PAP. TD actors provided much needed food to IDPs, improved IDP protection as it constituted a positive PAP. However, negative TD activities (such as corrupt food registrars, insufficient or low quality food and raising of food by the LRA) created a negative PAP, diminishing IDP protection.

TD actors have engaged in both positive and negative activities in relation to layer two (safety needs). This is also acknowledged by BU actors. Negative activities in this layer, recognised by both actors, are the war including the LRA attacks on the camps. In these cases, the mutual recognition of the challenges to IDP protection created a negative PAP. Moreover the (forced) movement into and out of the camps was mentioned by both actors. This activity both improved and threatened IDP protection and therefore can be identified as a suboptimal PAP. During the war, both actors also recognised TD actor's positive contributions to IDP protection, such as creating access to health care, leading to a positive PAP. However, the protection potential of this activity was decreased, as the LRA (also a TD actor) destroyed health facilities. After the war, both actors mentioned the VSLs and setting up small businesses, as examples of activities providing financial security to IDPs, thereby constituting a positive PAP. TD actors also focused on legal security and domestic violence, which were not explicitly recognised by BU actors and therefore did not lead to PAP. BU actors mentioned shelter, NFIs and manual labour as safety increasing measures during the war. TD actors, though providing the shelter and NFIs, were more focused on the post war period, especially on ending the conflict. As both actors prioritised a different phase, opportunities for the Partnership Approach to Protection to develop in each phase were missed.

In layer three (love needs) positive, negative, suboptimal and missed opportunities for the Partnership Approach to Protection can be observed. The family is most important in layer three. The family is threatened (by war related challenges) and strengthened, by family members and TD actors taking care of the family. The family is therefore a good example of PAP. This PAP could have been positive but, due to the (war related) challenges is also negative. Therefore, the family constitutes a suboptimal PAP which does not translate to hard protection cooperation and full protection. A missed opportunity for PAP exists in relation to the community. As the community is very important for BU actors, but receives less attention from TD actors, PAP does not develop. Instead both actors mention the importance of interpersonal relationships, which strengthen layer three. Similarly, to layer two, TD actors in layer three take a broader approach than BU actors to fulfilling this layer. This means TD actors also include solving cases of domestic violence, improving access to land for women

and orphans and assisting families who are no longer able to live according to Acholi preferences. Since these issues were not mentioned by BU actors, PAP does not materialise.

In the same way as family is key to layer three, education is key to layer four (esteem needs). Being able to access education positively contributes to IDP protection, while not being able to access education has a negative effect, according to both actors. Education, when being accessed, creates a positive PAP, while not being able to accessed has the opposite effect. The presence of schools in the camps was both protection increasing and decreasing because, while IDPs were in the camps it increased their esteem, the schools in the camps prevented return due to the lack of schools in return areas. The specific activity of having schools in the camps therefore is an example of a suboptimal PAP. The effect of culture on esteem needs is mostly negative though for different reasons according to BU and TD actors. BU actors pointed out the fact that more men than women accessed education, while TD actors underlined the culture decreasing effect of having chiefs line up for food assistance. Within culture BU and TD actors are not on one line and PAP therefore did not materialise. Contrary to this, both actors acknowledge the importance of psycho-social support, enabling positive PAP. Missed opportunities for PAP exist in relation to dealing with war traumas, hygiene, hatred and prayer, as these issues are only mentioned by one of the two actors.

The final layer in Maslow's pyramid is layer five (self-actualisation). In this layer, more instances of positive PAP can be observed. Both actors once again highlight the importance of education for the fulfilment of this need, allowing for positive PAP. Land also has the potential for a positive PAP, as both actors believe it is necessary for self-actualisation. BU actors however are still experiencing the negative effects of land wrangling by TD actors and therefore BU and TD actors cooperation in relation to land is suboptimal, translating into a suboptimal PAP. Though worded differently, BU and TD actors both see the importance of being able to forgive and reconcile with others. Cooperation on this issue is therefore possible, contributing to improved IDP protection as a positive PAP can develop. The necessity of equality (expressed in the BU data) and the need to stop discrimination (mentioned in the TD data) equally allow for positive PAP and a self-actualized (protected) IDP. Unfortunately, missed opportunities for PAP can also be observed as TD actors, once again, approach the fulfilment of this need broader than BU actors. According to TD actors layer five is also fulfilled by culture, fulfilment of rights, the prosecution of LRA rebels and setting up of HR and peace clubs. As BU's priorities lie with education and land, the activities mentioned by TD actors do not lead to PAP.

In Uganda both BU and TD actors identify most IDP needs with high priority. The war, which causes most of the problems in layer two, also negatively affects all other layers, according to BU and TD actors. A difference between the two actors can be observed in relation to layer four, which is given more prominence by TD than BU actors. As BU actors, do not prioritise this layer that much, the resulting PAP is suboptimal and opportunities to contribute to IDP protection are missed. In general, it can be observed that TD actors take a

broader approach to fulfilling the different layers than BU actors. BU actors have just a couple of main priorities which are land, family and education. Whether these BU priorities are also observed in Colombia, as well as other similarities and differences between the case study countries and the manifestations of PAP are discussed in subsection three.

6.3.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Three

In this subsection issues highlighted by BU and TD actors within the different layers of Maslow's pyramid and the extent to which they lead to a positive, negative, suboptimal or missed opportunity of the Partnership Approach to Protection are presented. Starting with layer one, in both countries land and food assistance are mentioned as important issues for the fulfilment of physiological needs. In relation to food assistance a suboptimal PAP manifests itself in both countries, though for different reasons. The reason for a suboptimal PAP in Uganda is related to negative activities engaged in by a TD actor, while it is BU actor's lack of self-sufficiency that cause PAP to be suboptimal in Colombia. The PAP that develops in relation to land in Uganda is also suboptimal, but in Colombia a negative PAP exists. In both countries, however, both actors agree that most challenges to IDP protection are located in layer two. This means that most instances of PAP should also have materialised in relation to layer two, but this did not happen. Instead, most instances of PAP were observed in layer four in both countries, though layer four is stronger in Colombia than Uganda. This is because BU actors in Uganda put less priority on this layer than BU actors in Colombia do.

An issue which receives most priority, by both actors in both countries, is the family, belonging to layer three of Maslow's pyramid. In both countries, though both actors agree on the importance of the family, they are not able to reach optimal cooperation in relation to it. Therefore, only a suboptimal PAP develops in both countries in relation to the family. The war is largely to blame for the challenges in BU/TD cooperation. However, in Colombia, the suboptimal PAP in relation to the family can also be explained by a lack of awareness on the part of BU actors of TD related family activities. Increasing awareness of these activities would lead to a positive PAP. Additionally, in Uganda, BU actors do not highlight the same issues as TD actors do in relation to the family, which causes missed opportunities for PAP to develop. The latter observation can also be rephrased into the observation that TD actors take a broader approach to the fulfilment of layer three than BU actors do. If BU actors would also widen their approach, more PAP would develop. Instead, BU actors often focus only on a limited number of key issues. Interestingly, these key issues are largely similar for BU actors in both countries. Key issues for BU actors in Colombia are land, housing and the family, while BU actors in Uganda emphasise land, the family and education.

Education is an important aspect of layer four, creating the possibility for PAP in both countries. In Uganda, a differentiation is made between receiving education and accessing schools in the camps. While the former is either positive or negative (depending on access to

education for BU actors), the latter is suboptimal as it has both a positive and negative effect on IDP protection. Suboptimal PAP is because having to split the family, leaving some family members in the camps to access education, shows both the positive (being able to access education) and negative (not being together as a family) effect on IDP protection.

In addition to education, BU and TD actors in Colombia (compared to Uganda) agree on many more issues in layer four. Both actors work together to fulfil them and thereby create a positive PAP which positively contributes to IDP protection. In Uganda, less instances of positive PAP exist. Instead, in Uganda, more missed opportunities for PAP are noted as TD actors take a broader approach to the fulfilment of this layer than BU actors do. A positive PAP in Uganda does develop in relation to psycho-social assistance, which is not mentioned as such in Colombia. Culture, though mentioned by both actors, does not lead to PAP as both actors concentrate on different issues within it. Finally, in Colombia the act of being classified as an IDP is an example of a negative PAP as BU actors do not appreciate being labelled as such, but it is necessary in order for them to access assistance.

The broader approach taken by TD actors in layer four can also be observed in layer five in Uganda. In Colombia PAP, does not materialise in that layer as layer five has not been reached. This is due to the war, land problems and not being able to own a house. The broader TD actor's focus in Uganda includes paying attention to culture, rights, the necessity to arrest and prosecute the LRA and setting up HR and peace clubs. These activities are all possibilities for PAP, but they do not materialise as they are not recognised for their contributions to self-actualisation by BU actors. This means that in addition to land and return other topics can also contribute to self-actualisation. In Uganda, BU and TD actors however, also agree on topics which led to a positive PAP, such as education, being able to forgive and reconcile, equality and ending discrimination.

In conclusion, while both actors in both countries emphasise the importance of layer two, this is not accompanied by a corresponding high number of positive Partnership Approaches to Protection. Instead, especially in Colombia, layer four shows most instances of positive PAP. This means that there is a difference between where the needs lie, according to both actors (which is in layer two) and where the activities of both actors concentrate on (which is layer four). This disconnect between needs and activities prevents hard protection cooperation and full protection. In the next section, it will be analysed whether BU and TD activities are more in line with the revised protection definition of component four.

6.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction

Similarly, to the previous three sections, this section will identify cases of the Partnership Approach to Protection within and between the three elements of the Revised Protection Definition in both case study countries. In order to do so, overlap between BU and TD actors for each of the elements of the revised protection will be identified in the first two subsections, after which it will be analysed to what extent these overlaps lead to PAP. Additionally, within the first two subsections, similarities between the interaction of the component elements at country level will be highlighted. Within the third subsection the similarities and differences between the instances of PAP in the case study countries will be compared and contrasted. The goal of this section is to show the extent to which BU and TD actors understand the three protection elements similarly, whether and how this leads to PAP and how this positively or negatively influences IDP protection. As a reminder, figure 6.3 below summarises the three elements of the revised protection definition.

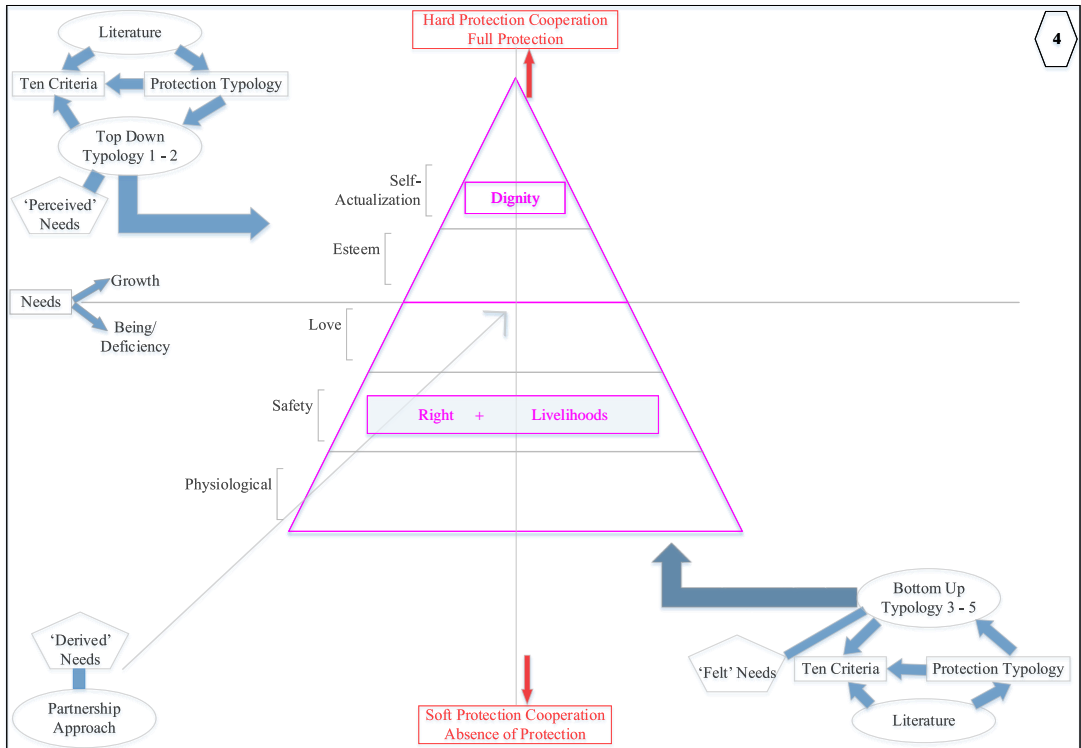


Figure 6.4: PPA Component Four - Revised Protection Definition

6.4.1 Colombia

This subsection starts by briefly Summarising the understanding of both actors of each of the three elements of the revised protection definition. Then it will be analysed whether similarities lead to PAP and whether this PAP has a positive or negative effect on IDP protection. Starting with the **Rights** element, both BU and TD actors indicate the importance of the Victim's Law, as well as the possibility of making a declaration and *tutella*. While both actors emphasised problems relating to the ongoing war, corruption and lack of political will and capacity, BU actors also focused on the lack of BU's Rights knowledge. Both actors developed ways to contribute to the improvement of Rights. BU actors set up IDP organisations while TD actors created Protection Working Groups. The Rights element shows great potential for a positive PAP to develop, especially around the elaborate legal framework. The PAP is however suboptimal due to BU actors' lack of knowledge and TD actor's lack of money, political will and capacity. The fact that both want to make the situation of IDP Right's fulfilment known to the world is however, another possibility for positive PAP. The Rights element therefore shows potential to positively contribute to IDP protection.

IDP protection is improved due to the presence of potentially positive PAP in the second element of the revised protection definition (**Livelihoods**). BU and TD actors both mentioned the possibility for BU actors to make a declaration. Though TD actors emphasise the HA part of this activity and BU actors attach more importance to owning a house, accessing education and finding a job, cooperation between both actors still has a positive impact of IDP protection. Both actors also agree on the importance of land, another possibility of positive PAP, however, given the ongoing war, lack of land titles and other land related problems, this PAP only has partially positive effect protection and is suboptimal. Analysing the similarities and differences between both actors reveals how BU actors focus on only a limited number of topics (land, housing, education and employment) all geared towards taking care of the family, while TD actors have a much broader approach to Livelihoods. Given that PAP only materialises when both actors are willing to work together on a certain topic, many opportunities for PAP are missed. Additionally, many of the PAP's that develop are suboptimal because TD actors divide their attention between many issues within Livelihoods. TD actors are also not aware of the restraining influence of IDP status on IDP protection, but instead focus on lack of skills, the large number of declarations, corruption and bureaucracy. The lack of appreciation for the negative influence of IDP status not only hampers BU/TD cooperation within the Livelihoods element, preventing the development of PAP and its positive contribution to protection, but also shows that TD actors lack awareness of the next element of the revised protection definition, Dignity.

Though TD actors are aware of the **Dignity** decreasing effect of having to make a declaration, which is to relieve the trauma of displacement, this is still a prerequisite for assistance. This means, from a Dignity perspective, that the PAP that develops between BU

and TD is negative as it decreases IDP protection. Both actors agreed that the ongoing war, lack of trust and cultural differences were Dignity decreasing. Some of these issues (such as lack of trust) can be solved through the PAP but other (like war) cannot. TD actors, again, have a broader approach to this element of the revised protection definition than BU actors, but also see more challenges to it. Challenges to IDP Dignity, according to TD actors, are the Unconstitutional State of Affairs, corruption and bureaucracy. Lack of shared interests within the Dignity element hamper BU/TD cooperation and decrease the success of cooperation in areas where mutual interest does occur, such as on land, setting up IDP organisations, education, psycho-social assistance and the Dignity increasing effect of having a job. Though TD actors developed the Family Dynamics Programme, they fail to notice the driving force of taking care of one's family within BU's activities, which is another missed opportunity for PAP. Other mismatches between both actors' activities in this element further decrease the materialization of PAP and the possibility of positively contributing to protection.

Even though missed opportunities for the Partnership Approach to Protection exist within the Dignity element, because TD actors neglect the Dignity oriented part of IDP protection by being more Rights oriented than BU actors, both actors emphasise the great protective capacity of the Dignity injection column. Part of the problem within the Dignity element is that, though TD actors recognise the protective capacity of Dignity oriented activities (like psychological assistance); they undervalue the contribution of Dignity within non-Dignity-specific activities (like food assistance or the importance of taking care of one's family). TD actors maintain a compartmentalised approach to the different elements of protection and not an integrated approach. This is problematic as the analysis of BU and TD interaction in the different elements showed how one activity (such as making a declaration) can create a positive PAP in the Rights element, while leading to a suboptimal PAP in the Livelihoods element and a negative PAP in the Dignity element. As a whole the process of making a declaration is suboptimal. This example shows that in order to determine the true contribution of an activity to IDP protection, BU/TD interaction should be analysed from the perspective of all three elements of the revised protection definition. The extent of BU/TD cooperation in Uganda and its effect of PAP and IDP protection is presented below.

6.4.2 Uganda

Analysing the possibility for the Partnership Approach to Protection to develop in Uganda differs per element of the revised protection definition. The PAP potential within the **Rights** element is low. This is because BU actors are not very knowledgeable on their Rights, nor very vocal about them. TD actors on the other hand try to strengthen the fulfilment of Rights but corruption, discrimination, lack of funds and a weak legislative environment, decrease their efforts. BU and TD actors agree on the negative effect of war and certain cultural practices, but any interaction between the actors on these topics lead to negative PAP and

decrease IDP protection. The fact that both actors focus on different priority Rights and emphasise the importance of the non-existing Right to land, makes it even more difficult for PAP to develop.

BU and TD interaction improves in relation to the **Livelihoods** element of the revised protection definition, at least to the extent that both actors mentioned a large number of similar issues. Unfortunately, both actors also mentioned similar challenges to the fulfilment of Livelihoods needs such as education, access to land, food, NFIs and drugs. Both actors were aware of the negative effect of the war, LRA attacks, lack of protection by Government soldiers, insufficient and bad quality food distributions, looting and the difficult living conditions in the camps. Additionally, BU actors highlighted the importance of the family for this element. The identification of similar issue creates the possibility for a positive PAP as BU and TD actors have the possibility to work together on the improvement of IDP protection because they agree on what needs to be done to increase this protection. However, as both actors indicate similar challenges the resulting PAP is only suboptimal because the challenges prevent the BU/TD interaction from fully contributing in a positive way to IDP protection.

In the **Dignity** element of the revised protection definition, BU and TD cooperation is more positive. Both actors not only agree on many of the same topics, there is more potential to work together on them. This does not automatically translate into more protection, as both actors also acknowledge many challenges. Therefore, for issues such as education, fulfilling rights, access to health, counselling or food, PAP is suboptimal. In general, it can be observed that the fulfilment or lack thereof of the Livelihoods element, influences the fulfilment of the Dignity element in the same way. BU and TD actors also highlight a number of issues which are important to them individually (so not shared by the other actor). For these issues, PAP, does not develop. Examples of such issues are the Dignity decreasing effect of the camps (according to BU) and being able to live up to one's own expectations, and BU's involvement in culture and community life (TD). The family, however, has a mostly positive effect on IDP protection and is therefore an example of positive PAP within the Dignity element.

Given the fact that most instances of PAP are observed in the Dignity element, it is not surprising that this element is considered the most important in the interaction between the three elements, according to both actors. This materialises in the submerged protection pyramid and the Dignity-injection column. Both manifestations of the protection pyramid allow for BU/TD cooperation and therefore for the development of PAP. Nevertheless, both actors emphasise that all elements are equally important, which is why each of them should be shown in a separate protection pyramid. BU and TD actors in that sense also prefer a sequential approach to the three elements, though TD actors also mentioned the preferred interaction between the elements ($R+L \rightarrow D$). The sequential pyramid leads to suboptimal protection, and hence suboptimal PAP as BU/TD cooperation is still possible but not ideal. BU/TD's conviction that protection increases if the different elements of the revised protection definition are explicitly recognised also creates the possibility for PAP. A missed opportunity

for the PAP is the fact that TD actors are not aware of the Dignity decreasing effects of land related activities (such as land wrangling). In the next subsection, the similarities and differences between the two case study countries are presented.

6.4.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Four

An overlap between the two case studies, though unfortunately in the way of an omission, is the undervalued positive contribution of Dignity to IDP protection. Though both actors in both case study countries emphasised the importance of the Dignity element of protection it still received too little attention, especially in relation to the other elements like Livelihoods. In both case study countries TD actors, have been offering Dignity oriented standalone assistance, such as community dialogue, equality programmes and improving respect (Uganda) or setting up psychological and psycho-social programmes (Colombia), but have not been able to integrate Dignity in Rights or Livelihoods related assistance. More specifically, in both case study countries food assistance, either in the form of food distributions in the camps (Uganda) or food assistance provided through the UAOs/DC (Colombia), did not pay sufficient attention to IDP Dignity. In Uganda discrimination and malpractice by food registrars decreased IDP Dignity, while in Colombia the same occurred when IDPs had to wait in line, making them feel like beggars. The lack of Dignity in food assistance hampered the cooperation between BU and TD actors, causing a suboptimal PAP to develop, resulting in suboptimal protection. Fulfilment of rights was mentioned by both BU and TD actors in Colombia and Uganda, however, in both case study countries, TD actors assigned a greater protective capacity to Rights than BU actors did. Additionally, TD actors in Colombia had a broader and more elaborate understanding of the Rights element than TD actors in Uganda. In Uganda TD actors emphasised the need for BU actors to know their Rights. In Colombia TD actors also wanted BU actors to access and fulfil their Rights. The extent to which TD actors ensure the protective capacity of the Rights element is challenged (in both countries) by lack of Government capacity, corruption, discrimination and lack of Rights implementation.

The similarities and differences in the Partnership Approach to Protection are directly influenced by the similarities and differences in relation to the different elements. In relation to the Rights element, the Colombian case study showed a great potential for PAP, but not all of it was used. The latter also occurred in Uganda. However, there the starting potential for PAP was lower. BU and TD actors in Colombia had more possibilities for cooperation and therefore for contributing to IDP protection than is the case in Uganda. The PAP situation in relation to the livelihoods element is more similar in both countries. BU and TD actors are more on one line concerning what are the important topics and what are the challenges which prevent the positive contribution to IDP protection. As a result, the suboptimal PAP and

resulting effect on IDP protection are not due to problems within BU/TD cooperation due to external challenges recognised by both BU and TD actors (such as war or corruption).

Though BU and TD actors in both countries agree on the importance of the Dignity element, the analysis of the situation in Colombia shows many missed opportunities for PAP. In Uganda, the Partnership Approach to Protection in the Dignity element does materialise but is suboptimal due to the same challenges that hamper the Livelihoods element. As a result, though the importance of the Dignity element in both countries leads to submerged pyramids and a Dignity injection column, this does not always lead to optimal PAP (in either country). A solution to this problem, based on the Ugandan analysis, is the need to explicitly mention the protective effect of each element, while the Colombian case study shows the necessity to analyse the emerging PAP for each protection element, to be able to determine the overall effect on IDP protection. Though both case study countries highlight the strong interconnection between the three elements, chapter two has pointed out how Rights are the foundation for the protection pyramid. How this affects PAP is discussed in the next section.

6.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law

As Rights are considered the foundation of the protection pyramid an optimal Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP), within this fifth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), has a large protection potential. This is why this section analyses the cooperation between BU and TD actors within International Human Rights Law in both case study countries. The more BU and TD actors are on one line regarding the prioritisation of Rights and the more they work together to ensure the fulfilment of Rights, the more protected IDPs are. The first two sections present this analysis for each case study country individually, while the third subsection presents a comparison between the two case study countries. Figure 6.5 shows the theoretical prioritisation of the two Covenants along the protection pyramid.

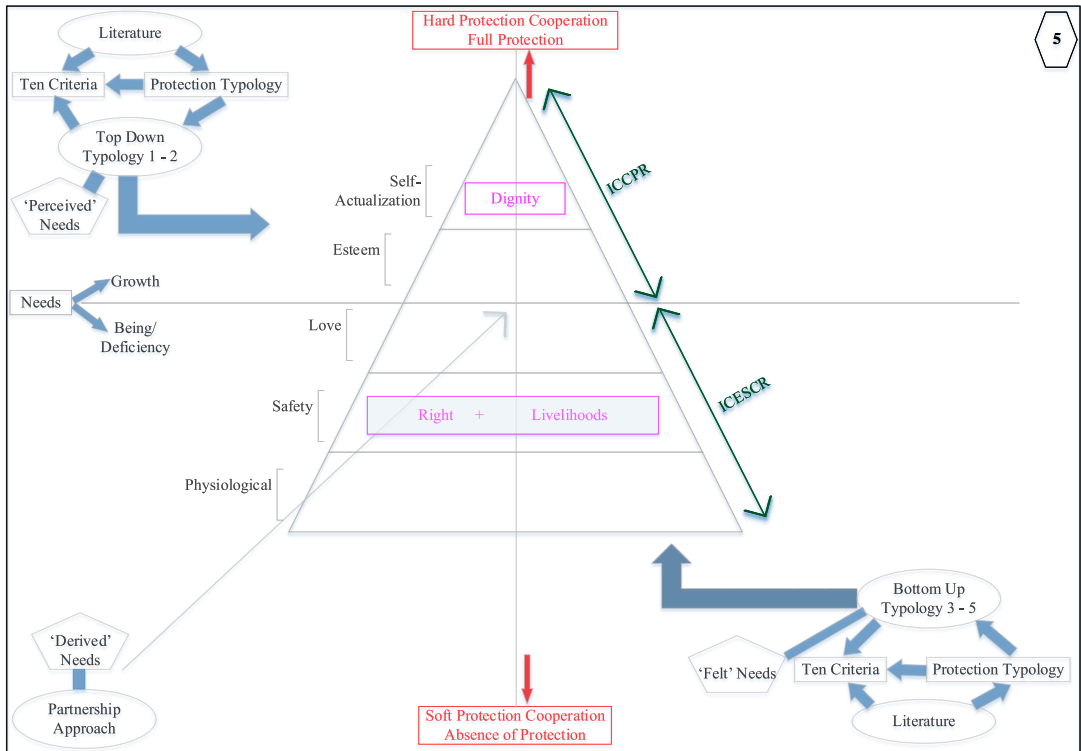


Figure 6.5 PPA Component Five - Positioning ICESCR and ICCPR

6.5.1 Colombia

BU and TD actors in Colombia are familiar with both international HR law and more specific IDP laws. In table 6.5.1 below the level of appreciation of certain laws in Colombia can be observed for BU actors in column one and TD actors in column two. In column three the extent to which the Partnership Approach to Protection materialise is shown:

Rights	BU	TD	PAP
ICESCR 6 - Right to Work	-	+/-	-
ICESCR 8 - Right to Join and Form Trade Unions		+/-	-
ICESCR 10- Right to Protection of the Family	-		-
ICESCR 11 - Right to Adequate Standard of Living (Food/Clothing/Housing)	+/-	+/-	+/-
ICESCR 12 - Right to Health	+/-	+	+/- (+)
ICESCR 13 - Right to Education	+/-	+	+/- (+)
ICESCR 14 - Right to Education	+/-	+	+/- (+)
ICESCR 15 - Right to Culture		+	-
ICCPR 2 - Non-discrimination	-		-
ICCPR 3 - Gender Equality		+	-
ICCPR 6 - Right to Life	+/-	+/-	+/-
ICCPR 5 – Savings		+	-
ICCPR 12 - Freedom of Movement & Choice of Residence	+	+/-	+/- (+)
ICCPR 16 - Recognition of Legal Personality	+	+	+
ICCPR 17 - Recognition of Privacy		+/-	-
ICCPR 19 - Freedom of Opinion, Expression & Information	+	+/-	+/- (+)
ICCPR 21- Freedom of Assembly	+	-	-
ICCPR 22 - Freedom of Association & Trade Unions	+	-	-
ICCPR 23 - Right of Marriage & the Family	-		-
ICCPR 25 - Political Rights (conduct public affairs/vote/be elected/ access public services)	+	+	+
ICCPR 26 – Equality		+/-	-
ICCPR 27 - Right of Persons Belonging to Minorities		+	-
Right to Land	-	+/-	-
1991 Constitution	+	+	+
Degree 1290	+		-
Law 387	+	-	-
T-025	+	+	+
Law 1448	+	+/-	+/- (+)
Law 70	+		-
Law for the Protection of Indigenous Populations	+		-

Table 6.5.1: BU and TD appreciation for ICESCR and ICCPR and the materialization of PAP in Colombia

From table 6.5.1 a prioritisation for ICESCR can be observed in the TD data, while BU actors prioritise ICCPR (even though BU actors are not always aware or vocal about their use of ICCPR). In any case TD actors follow PPA logic (which states that ICESCR should be

prioritised before ICCPR), while BU actors do not. Nevertheless, BU actors are aware that the different articles of ICESCR are fulfilled and therefore some suboptimal Partnership Approaches to Protection still materialise (four out of the eight). In relation to ICCPR, 14 articles were mentioned, however, given that the different actors prioritised different rights, PAP did not materialise in nine cases. Of the other five PAPs, three were suboptimal but two were optimal (Article 16 and 25, legal personality and political rights). The lesson which can be learned from this is that, even though TD actors prioritised ICESCR, in line with PPA logic, the two most successful examples of BU/TD cooperation, leading to the best improvements of IDP protection, could be observed within the ICCPR. If this observation also holds true in Uganda, this will be something to take into consideration in the next chapter.

How the PAP which developed for Articles 16 and 25 contributed to improved IDP protection can be explained by looking at what it was used for. BU and TD actors worked together to improve both Covenants. This is because BU actors made a *tutella*, to the Constitutional Court (a TD actor), demanding that the Government (also a TD actor) upheld its responsibility vis-à-vis IDPs (BU actors). The resulting sentence T-025 led to the creation of the Victim's Law and the UAOs/DC which helps to fulfil both Covenants. It should be noted however, that not all BU actors make use of their legal personality or political rights, as not all IDPs make a declaration. This can be because they are afraid, not want to be classified as an IDP or feel they can take care of themselves. BU actors do not mention the possible negative effect of them being treated together with other victims in Law 1448, something many TD actors do emphasise. This concludes the analysis of the existence and benefit of PAP in Colombia. The same analysis will now be done for the data collected in Uganda.

6.5.2 Uganda

Assessing the extent to which BU and TD actors are of the opinion that the different Rights of the two Covenants are fulfilled leads to table 6.5.2. From the table, it can be concluded that BU actors prioritise the ICESCR. Interestingly, TD actors, in their rhetoric, say they prioritise the ICCPR, however, as can be seen in column two, from their activities it becomes apparent that they contribute more to the fulfilment of the ICESCR. TD actor's prioritisation of the ICESCR can be explained by the fact that these Rights are considered progressive Rights, needing constant attention or by the fact that this Covenant contains more communal Rights. Regardless of the explanation, both BU and TD actors follow PPA logic (as shown in figure 6.5 above) and prioritise ICESCR above ICCPR. As a result of both actors prioritising ICESCR, the Rights mentioned belonging to this Covenant show more instances of PAP. However, not one of the PAPs is optimal, most are suboptimal (+/-) with some cooperation between BU and TD being slightly better than that, shown by the + (-) sign. The less than optimal PAP can be explained by the lack of HR knowledge on the part of BU actors, or

because TD actors are not vocal about their support for the ICESCR. The PAP that develops as a result of BU and TD actor’s appreciation for certain rights is shown in table 6.5.2 below.

Rights	BU	TD	PAP
ICESCR1 Right to Self-determination	-		-
ICESCR 3 Gender Equality	+(-)	+	+(-)
ICESCR 6 - Right to Work	+(-)		-
ICESCR 10- Right to Protection of the Family	-		-
ICESCR 11 - Right to Adequate Standard of Living (Food/Clothing/Housing)	+/-	+/-	+/-
ICESCR 12 - Right to Health	+(-)		-
ICESCR 13 - Right to Education	+/-	+/-	+/-
ICESCR 14 - Right to Education	+/-	+/-	+/-
ICESCR 15 - Right to Culture		+/-	-
ICCPR 1 - Right to Self determination	-		-
ICCPR 3 - Gender Equality	+(-)	+	+(-)
ICCPR 6 - Right to Life	+(-)	+/-	+/-
ICCPR 9 - Right to Liberty and Security of Person		+/-	-
ICCPR 12 - Freedom of Movement & Choice of Residence	-	+	-
ICCPR 17 - Recognition of Privacy	-		-
ICCPR 23 - Right of Marriage & the Family	-		-
ICCPR 24 - Right of the Child	+/-	+/-	+/-
Right to Land	-	-	-
Right to Inheritance	-		-
2004 IDP Policy		-	-
2010 IDP Policy		-	-
Kampala Convention	-(+)	+/-	+/- (-)

Table 6.5.2: BU and TD appreciation for ICESCR and ICCPR and the materialization of PAP in Uganda

Focusing specifically on IDP related Rights shows that only the Kampala Convention is slightly known by BU actors (shown by the - (+) sign). The two IDP Policies, which are not enforceable and the Kampala Convention, which has not been adopted in domestic legislation, show that TD actors have not been very active in the protection of IDP Rights. Many missed opportunities for PAP exist in relation to these Rights. The extent to which the presence of PAP in Uganda compares to Colombia is discussed in the third subsection.

6.5.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Five

An obvious observation comparing the two case study countries is the fact that more Rights are mentioned by BU/TD actors in Colombia than in Uganda. Additionally, to this, these Rights are better fulfilled leading to more instances of the Partnership Approach to Protection.

Though the instances of PAP in Colombia range from negative to positive, not one completely positive PAP has been observed in Uganda (only + (-) instances of PAP). This observation means that BU and TD actors in Uganda work together less on improving IDP protection by strengthening the fulfilment of the Rights mentioned in both Covenants. Having said this, both actors in Uganda, compared to only TD actors in Colombia, follow the PPA logic of first prioritising ICESCR above ICCPR. Interestingly though, the prioritisation of ICCPR by BU actors in Colombia does not create the instable protection pyramid that has been introduced as a possible scenario in Uganda if TD actors had indeed followed their rhetoric of prioritising ICCPR above ICESCR. There are two reasons why prioritisation of ICCPR in Colombia does not lead to an instable protection pyramid, as it does in Uganda. Firstly, there is the difference between the actor conducting the prioritisation of ICCPR (BU actors in Colombia versus TD actors in Uganda). Secondly, the strengthening of BU actors' Civil and Political Rights means BU actors can use these Rights to contribute to their own protection, as happened in Colombia. There BU actors used the prioritisation of ICCPR (through *tutellas* and the possibility to make a declaration) to strengthen their Rights belonging to the ICESCR, strengthening the base of the protection pyramid and positively contributing to their own protection.

IDP protection is furthermore improved, in the case of Colombia, because, in addition to having a better BU/TD cooperation (more instances of PAP), by the better interaction between national, IDP and international law, compared to Uganda. In Uganda, the lack of domestication of the Kampala Convention on the national level, depending instead on the sub-national level, while enforcement lies on the regional level, creates a far from optimal (being symbolised by a suboptimal PAP) contribution to IDP protection. An interesting similarity between both case study countries is the fact that both actors in both countries mention the non-existing Right to Land, but in both countries, this Right is challenged and PAP is negative.

In conclusion, it is observed that the protective capacity of PPA component five is larger in Colombia than in Uganda. This is not only due to the fact that more BU actors are aware of their Rights in Colombia, but also because the Partnership Approach to Protection materialises more often in Colombia than Uganda. This materialization of PAP is explained by the larger knowledge of Rights in BU actors in Colombia. The comparison between both actors in both countries furthermore shows that the prioritisation of the Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights, above the Covenant for Civil and Political Rights creates a more stable protection pyramid, allowing for more cooperation between BU and TD actors, more cases of positive PAP and therefore better IDP protection. The next section analyses the presence of the Partnership Approach to Protection in both case study countries by analysing the collected data from the perspective of Giddens' Structuration Theory.

6.6 Component Six: Giddens' Structuration Theory

In the previous components of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the cooperation between BU and TD actors within the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) have been analysed. Though a similar exercise will be conducted for this component, PAP is already inherent in Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory. Within Giddens' element of the Duality of Structure, the BU dominated element of Agency and the TD element of Structure interact with each other. As a result, the Duality of Structure can be equated with the Partnership Approach to Protection. The equation is even more justified as Giddens, in the same way as is propagated within PPA, maintains that the Duality of Structure is the highest goal. The Duality of Structure has a higher protective capacity than the individual elements of Agency and Structure (or, by analogy BU or TD actors working individually). Therefore, within this section, similarities and differences will be identified between BU and TD actors in the different elements of ST as well as coping and self-protection mechanisms, to determine the presence of Duality of Structure/PAP. This is done in the first two subsections, while the third subsection compares the case study countries. The different elements of component six are shown in figure 6.6.

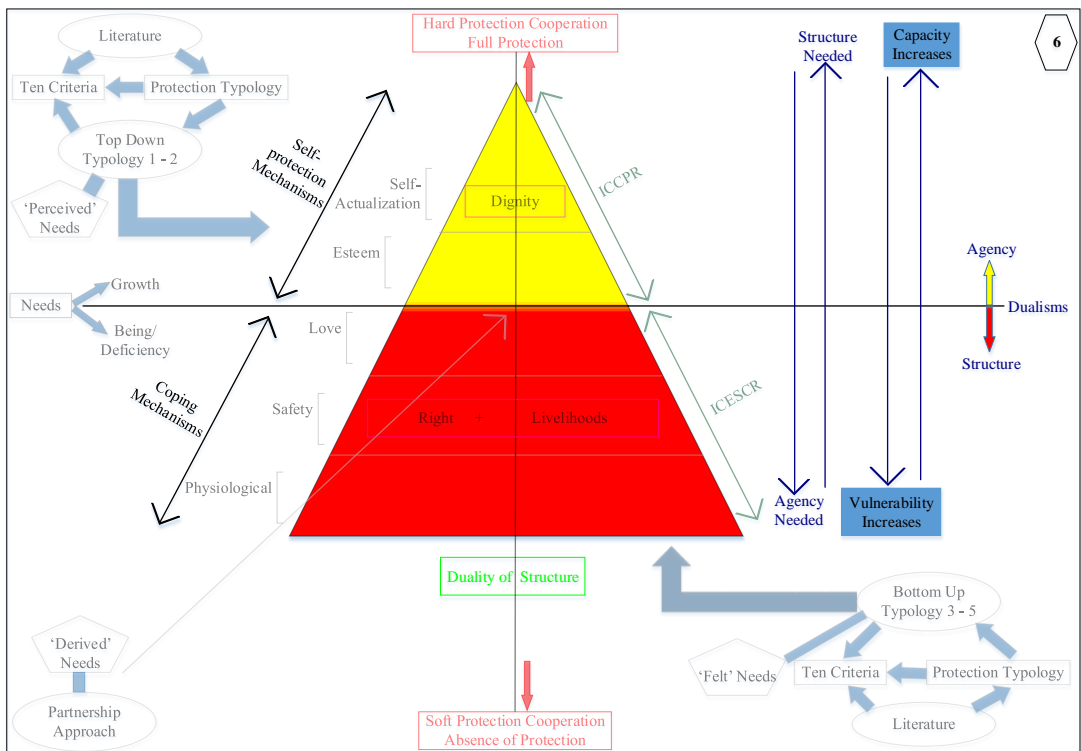


Figure 6.6: PPA Component Six - Structuration Theory

6.6.1 Colombia

As PAP is inherent in Giddens' Structuration Theory, this subsection focuses on the similarities and differences between BU and TD actors in all elements of PPA component six. The logic behind this exercise is that the greater the overlap between BU and TD actors in the different elements, the better able both actors are to work together in PAP/DS. Similarities and differences relating to Agency concentrate on a number of topics. It is interesting to note that TD actors give more example of positive Agency while BU actors mention most examples of negative Agency. In relation to positive Agency, both actors emphasise the importance of making an IDP declaration or *tutella* as well as being a IDP leader. BU actors mention more family related aspects of Agency while TD actors aim to strengthen BU's Agency through the UAOs/DC, an enabling Structure (also recognised by BU).

Enabling Structures both actors agree on are; the elaborate IDP legal framework, including the HA and land restitution system, education, health care, psychological assistance, family and community. Though a lot of overlap exists between both actors in relation to enabling Structures, allowing PAP to develop, each actor also mention actor specific Structures, of which the other actor is not aware. For example, the coordination mechanisms set up by TD actors. BU oriented enabling Structures not recognised as such by TD actors are IDP organisations, social support networks and civil resistance movements. TD created enabling Structures of which BU actors are less aware of are enabling Structures which span different hierarchical levels. BU and TD actors also agree on a number of constraining Structures such as the war, illegal land extortion, bureaucracy, corruptness of the system and discrimination. TD actors furthermore point out the informal land ownership system and unclear boundaries while BU actors emphasises alleged linkages between the Government and illegal armed groups and lack of knowledge and capacity of the Government.

While BU actors use their Agency to develop activities to improve their protection, TD actors engage in activities which decrease the protective effect of Structure and thereby create an instable base in the protection pyramid. This instable base has negative effects on the Structure to Agency movement (which BU actors do not mention), limiting the increase in IDP capacity and increasing vulnerability. BU and TD actors both recognise a number of Dualities of Structure (both positive and negative ones), however they are not similar. The examples of DS found in the BU data are more closely related to BU than those identified in the TD data (which are closer to TD). In a sense this is not surprising as it is easier for actors to recognise the things they have influence on. In the case of BU actors this included whether or not to lie about being an IDP or choosing to become a HR defender, while TD actors noticed how IDPs made a declaration or came to the UAO/DC (a TD/S). Being aware of the fact that DS can be more BU or TD oriented, increases the possibility of both actors working together in PAP, creating more DS. This increased awareness can also assist to prevent negative DS, which was observed in both data sets. The overlap between BU and TD in both Agency and

Structure shows that the potential for more examples of positive DS exist, which means that more cases of positive PAP can develop, positively contributing to IDP protection.

A reason why these cases of positive DS/PAP do not develop is, according to both actors, due to the negative constraining time-space created by the war. The war negatively influence BU actor's ontological security (acknowledged by both actors). The war also, negatively influences Agency and Structure preventing the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential, thereby decreasing the possibility for DS/PAP and negatively influencing IDP protection. At the same time, both actors agree on the positive influence of the elaborate IDP legal framework giving IDPs, through for example the Victim's Law, the possibility to decrease the negative effects of the constraining time-space. The legal framework increases Agency, Structure and therefore the Duality of Structure, allowing for more PAP and better IDP protection. The negative constraining time-space also prevents IDPs to use their self-protection mechanisms, instead having to rely on their coping mechanisms. Though there is overlap between BU and TD actors on coping mechanisms available to IDPs, TD actors do not recognise these BU activities as such. This negatively influences the extent to which BU and TD actors can work together, which means a missed opportunity for PAP and less positive contributions to IDP protection.

In conclusion, the analysis of the BU and TD data collected in Colombia shows that, regardless of the significant overlap between BU/A and TD/S, only a few cases of PAP/DS develop. This is a missed opportunity. Partly it can be explained by the negative constraining time-space, diminishing the extent to which the protection pyramid can reach its full potential. The negative effect on Agency and Structure is however partly offset by the mutual (BU and TD) acknowledged benefits of the elaborate IDP legal framework. The extent to which Agency and Structure overlap in Uganda and whether this leads to DS will be discussed below.

6.6.2 Uganda

Within this subsection similarities and differences between BU and TD actors in the different elements of PPA component six are identified. The goal is to determine the extent to which the Duality of Structure, i.e. the Partnership Approach to Protection, materialised. Starting with the analysis of the Agency element, both actors mention more cases of positive than negative Agency, with BU actors mentioning most cases of negative Agency. The kind of Agency mentioned by both actors however, differs slightly. BU actors focus more on farming and family related Agency while TD actors pay more attention Agency related to rights. This means that each actor has their own perspective on Agency. These different perspectives hamper the development of PAP within the Agency element of PPA component six.

The amount of enabling and constraining Structures is more or less similar according to both actors. Additionally, there is more agreement on the kind of enabling and constraining Structures identified by both actors, which creates more possibilities for PAP to develop. The

clear exception are the camps, which are seen more as an enabling Structure by TD actors than BU actors. The war is a constraining Structure agreed upon by both actors. Other Structures both actors agree upon (often both enabling and constraining) are land, food assistance, (dis)respect, family, community, rights (non) fulfilment, peace, freedom and equality.

The extent to which both Agency and Structure are strengthened and able to bring Agency to Structure and Structure to Agency is, hampered by a negative constraining time-space. As a result, IDP capacity decreases and IDP vulnerability increases. BU and TD actors agree that the Duality of Structure does not function optimally due to the challenges within Agency and Structure. Still both actors observe positive and negative DS. The overlap between BU and TD actors within both Agency and Structure indicate that more examples of the Duality of Structure are possible than have developed. This means that BU and TD actors are not functioning optimally in the Partnership Approach to Protection and are therefore not engaging in hard protection cooperation leading to full protection.

One of the reasons for suboptimal DS/PAP is the negative constraining time-space caused by the war creating ontological insecurity according to both actors. Additionally, TD actors also focus on the negative effect of land wrangling. Though BU actors also mention land wrangling they focus on their own activities (such as hiding in the bush) which increase their ontological security. The reason why TD actors do not focus on these BU activities is because, within the TD data, the protective capacity of BU coping mechanisms is not fully appreciated. Though coping mechanisms are noticed, the extent to which they contribute to IDP protection is not. This is a pity because overlap between BU and TD actors on what constitutes coping mechanisms exists. When IDPs are able to use their coping mechanisms, both actors agree this enables IDPs to start relying on their self-protection mechanisms. However, both actors also agree that IDPs are not able to do so satisfactorily, partly because TD actors do not recognise the protective capacity of these mechanisms, which negatively affects PAP and IDP protection.

The lack of appreciation by TD actors of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms is one of the reasons why cooperation between both actors is not ideal, translating into suboptimal DS/PAP. This suboptimal contribution to IDP protection is further challenged by the negative constraining time-space of war, which both actors agree upon. The potential for more PAP/DS, due to overlap between both actors in a number of elements within component six, is however promising. To capitalize on this potential both actors should be more aware of the contribution of the other actor to IDP protection. Being able to improve IDP protection is not only achieved by increasing BU/TD mutual understanding, but also through inter-case study analysis, which is conducted in the next subsection.

6.6.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Six

Within this sixth component of the Protection Pyramid Approach quite a lot of overlap exists between the two case study countries. In both countries, more cases of positive than negative Agency were observed, with BU actors mentioning most of the cases of negative Agency. The way in which Agency is used is, to a certain extent however, country specific. BU actors in Uganda relate Agency to farming for example, while Agency in Colombia is more related to rights. BU actors do use Agency for similar purposes across case study countries. In both countries, BU actors used their Agency to find employment while education strengthened Agency, increasing capacity. The necessity for BU actors to increase their Agency is directly influenced by TD activities as BU actors, in both countries, compensate for TD shortcomings.

Having said this, a promising similarity between both countries is the high level of agreement between both actors on the Structure element of Giddens' theory. BU and TD actors in both countries agree on enabling and constraining Structures, showing awareness for PAP possibilities which can positively influence IDP protection. It is disappointing that the high level of overlap between both actors in both countries on Giddens' concept of Structure does not translate into an equally high number of DS. The lack of DS shows that BU and TD actors in both countries do not work well together. As a result, the Partnership Approach to Protection does not materialise as often as it could and opportunities are missed to positively contribute to IDP protection. The BU/TD overlap does however show a potential for positive PAP/DS.

Interestingly, the reasons for the disappointing number of PAP/DS is similar for both countries. BU and TD actors in Colombia and Uganda mention the war as a reason for a negative constraining time-space. This does not only hamper BU actor's ontological security but prevents the protection pyramid from reaching its full potential. As a result, both Agency and Structure are challenged, which makes their interaction more difficult, explaining the suboptimal Duality of Structure and, by analogy, the suboptimal PAP. An additional, overlapping, reason for suboptimal PAP/DS is the failure by TD actors in both countries to recognise BU actor's coping and self-protection mechanisms. Additionally, BU actors can only make little use of their self-protection mechanisms, preventing IDPs from reaching the top of the protection pyramid. Nevertheless, self-protection mechanisms do exist in both countries, with slightly more being noted in Colombia than Uganda. This is surprising as the war in Uganda has ended, creating more possibilities for self-protection mechanisms. The higher reliance of BU actors in Uganda on their coping mechanisms can be seen as an indication that protection in Uganda is lower than in Colombia. This observation is strengthened by the increased appreciation, in Colombia, of the rights related enabling Structures created by TD actors. In general, more awareness of the contribution of the other actor to IDP protection by both actors would increase the potential for PAP/DS thereby positively contributing to IDP protection. The extent to which the interaction by BU and TD actors is influenced by the different phases of displacement is discussed in the next section.

6.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement

The BU and TD actors' cooperation not only differ for the elements within a component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), as has been discussed above, but also between different displacement phases, as will be discussed in this section. For each displacement phase, in each case study country, the extent to which BU and TD actors work together in the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) will be determined. The goal of this exercise is to find out whether PAP changes in the different displacement phase and why. This knowledge can help increase BU/TD cooperation, increasing the number of PAP and thereby positively contributing to IDP protection. Additionally, it is researched whether PAP is influenced by the times and duration of displacement. Both exercises are conducted for each country in the first two subsections after which the third subsection will compare and contrast the case study findings. Figure 6.7 shows the protection pyramid including component seven.

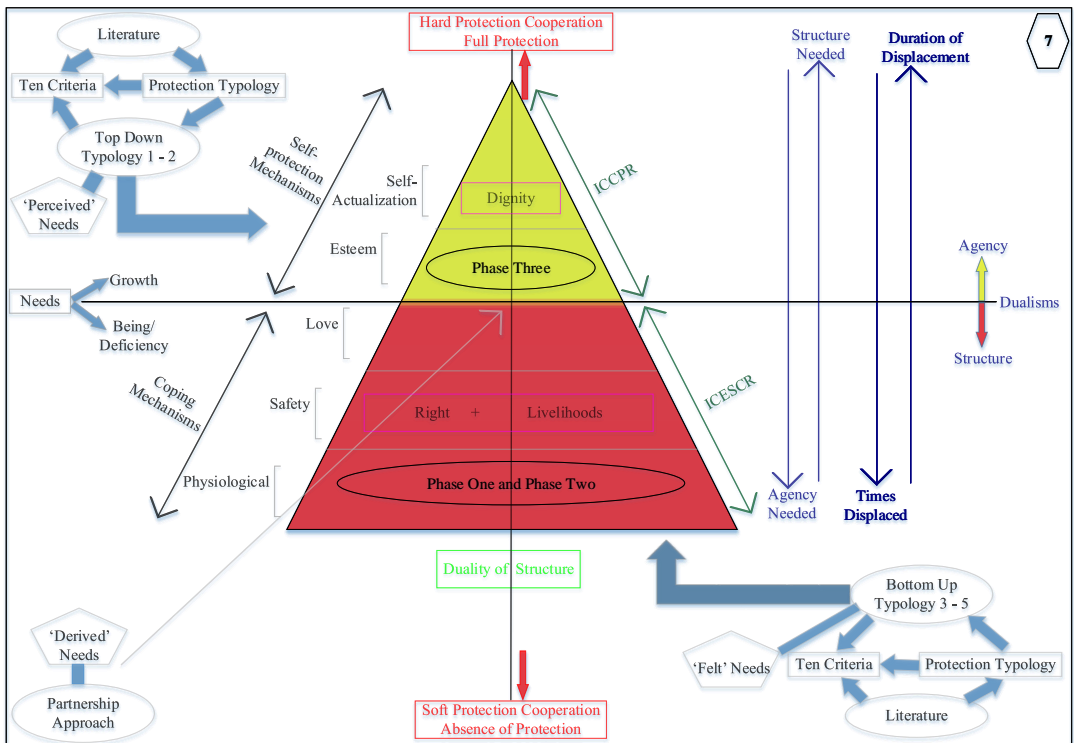


Figure 6.7: PPA Component Seven - Three Phases of Displacement

6.7.1 Colombia

In Colombia BU actors are active in displacement phases one and two, while TD actors are active in all three phases. Though BU actors want to return, most of them have not returned, indicating that phase three of displacement did not yet occur. Reasons for the non-

manifestation of phase three are the ongoing fighting and the difficulties with the land restitution process. This means that in the Colombian case study the Partnership Approach to Protection only takes place in phases one and two and not in phase three. Without phase three BU actors cannot reach full protection as they cannot reach the top of the protection pyramid. Most IDPs are in phase two, though phase one is still ongoing too. The extent to which PAP takes place in phase one is hampered by the negative TD activities. TD actors are the reason BU actors have to displace and determine if PAP develops. If TD activities result in immediate displacement, without BU actors being able to bring anything, BU and TD actors cooperation is disrupted in both phase one and two. This is because BU actors were not able to bring ID and property papers which would have eased the process of making a declaration and engage in land restitution in phase two. In these cases, initial negative TD activity in phase one, negatively affects PAP in all subsequent phases. When TD actors gave BU actors some time to prepare their departure, this positively affects PAP in all phases, positively affecting the level of IDP protection.

The materialization of PAP is further influenced by the extent to which BU actors are aware of their rights prior to displacement. When TD actors offer BU actors rights knowledge and BU actors acquire this knowledge, this increases the chance for PAP in all phases. This is because BU actors then know that they are entitled to assistance and will go to the UAOs/DC to access it. The initial decision of BU actors to stay close to their village after displacement and TD actors to emphasise the importance of the Regions indicates the possibility of local PAP developing. However, staying close to their village often resulted in multiple displacements for BU actors which, as can be seen by the Times Displaced arrow, leads to a decrease in IDP protection because it hampers PAP from occurring. This is because TD actors are not able to develop the structures in the regions necessary to provide BU actors with protection. Another reason why PAP does not develop is the fact that BU actors focus strongly on the direct effect displacement has on the family, while TD actors concentrate on the indirect effect. At the moment of displacement BU actors make decisions regarding the immediate safety of their families. TD actors, not only force IDPs to make these decisions, they pay attention to longer term family safety, through the legal framework and UAOs/DC. The different focuses prevent PAP from materializing. In all of the examples above, TD actors' activities in phase one determine the extent to which PAP develops in phase two.

Knowing their rights and having been able to prepare for departure BU actors are better able to work together with TD actors in the UAOs/DC. The activities in the UAOs/DC create more instances of positive PAP and therefore positively contribute to IDP protection as BU and TD actors work together during the declaration and land restitution process. The problems relating to land (informal system, lack of titles and clear boundaries) decrease the land related PAP, causing it to become suboptimal. These problems also prevent the Partnership Approach to Protection developing in phase three.

The lack of BU and TD cooperation in phase three is not only due to problems relating to land, but also because TD actors initiated the land restitution process before phases one and two of displacement are concluded. The ongoing war, fought between TD actors, is another reason why BU actors do not want to return, hampering the development of PAP. Therefore, similarly to phase one, TD activities in phase three prevent the materialization of PAP and therefore negatively contribute to IDP protection. Still, TD actors also positively contribute to IDP protection in component seven. TD actors have developed an elaborate legal framework and set up the UAOs/DC creating the possibilities for PAP. Additionally, TD actors have realized that BU actor's skill sets are not suitable for urban areas and have offered education and training to enable BU to contribute to their own protection. TD actors have, however, undermined their own positive activities by continuing fighting and engaging too early in the land restitution process. The lack of PAP in Colombia can therefore mostly be assigned to TD actors, even though TD actors are also the actors who created most possibilities for PAP. The role of BU and TD actors in the materialization of PAP in Uganda is discussed below.

6.7.2 Uganda

Activities of BU and TD actors in the different phases of IDP displacement show that the Partnership Approach to Protection developed and was hampered at the same time. Starting with the analysis of phase one, PAP initially did not develop as BU actors were living their own lives and did not need TD actors. However, when TD actors did impose themselves on BU actors, through fighting forcing IDPs to displace, this created a negative PAP, decreasing IDP protection. The lack of TD actors in relation to other issues in phase one also prevented PAP from developing, not only in phase one but also in subsequent phases. This latter situation occurred as TD actors were not able to ensure sufficient knowledge on rights in BU actors. This lack of knowledge, which partly can also be put on BU actors themselves, decreased IDP protection in all subsequent phases. Summarising the PAP situation in Uganda in phase one either no or negative PAP occurred, mostly due to negative TD activities.

This situation changed to a certain extent in phase two. TD actors still threatened IDP protection through continued fighting, preventing PAP from materializing. At the same time, TD actors also developed initiatives to improve IDP protection. The most important initiative was the creation on the camps. Within the camps, BU and TD actors worked together, PAP developed and IDP protection increased. However, once again, TD actors decreased the level of cooperation through TD related activities. These activities were continued fighting, attacks on the camps, as well as shortages and low quality food assistance. It has to be noted that in some case different TD actors had a positive or negative influence on PAP and therefore it is useful to specify the contribution of individual TD actors. However, as a group, TD actors diminished the chances of PAP and decreased IDP protection in phase two.

In phase three TD actors also positively and negatively influenced PAP. On the one hand TD actors created the possibility for PAP by the Cessation of Hostilities Agreement and the Kampala IDP Convention. On the other hand, TD actors diminished the chances for PAP because of land wrangling activities and forcefully moving people out of the camps before the return areas were ready to receive the people. Additionally, many TD actors left in phase three, decreasing the chance for BU actors to cooperate with them and therefore decreasing the possibilities for PAP to develop. As can be observed from the above, the development of the Partnership Approach to Protection in Uganda is, to a large extent, influenced by the activities, or lack thereof, by TD actors. BU actors were much less influential in the materialization of PAP and therefore had less influence on their own protection. This is a clear difference between the case study countries as can be read in the comparison below.

6.7.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Seven

The largest difference between the two case study countries is the role of BU actors in the realisation (or lack thereof) of the Partnership Approach to Protection. In Uganda, BU actors had little influence on their own protection as they either lacked the (rights) knowledge which could have led to PAP (as it did in Colombia) or decisions were enforced on BU actors by TD actors (the forced move into and out of the camps). TD actors in both case study countries conducted many activities which either led to negative PAP or prevented PAP from materializing all together. In both case study countries TD actors are the reason for BU actors to become displaced, making cooperation between both actors difficult in phase one. The situation changes slightly, for both case study countries, in phase two, as TD actors engaged in both positive and negative activities allowing some PAP to develop. At the same time, it should be noted that the positive and negative TD actors' activities can be allocated to different TD actors, making a differentiation of TD contributions to PAP necessary.

In both countries, TD actors, have been involved in phase two, though both of them were late to react and too limited in their initial response. Both TD actors however stepped up their game to provide improved protection to IDPs in phase two, creating more possibilities for PAP. A difference between the case study countries can be observed in relation to phase three. In Uganda, the remainder of the IDPs are located within phase three as the Government has demolished the camps and thereby single handily ended phase two. This unilateral decision prevented the development of PAP. In Colombia, most IDPs have not yet reached phase three and are in phase two, while new displacements are still occurring. Nevertheless, similar to TD actors in Uganda, TD actors unilaterally started phase three (by initiating the land restitution process). In both countries therefore phase three is characterised by a power imbalance between BU and TD actors, leading to a sub-optimal PAP and less IDP protection. In each of the three displacement phases possibilities for PAP exist but are often negative or suboptimal due to, mostly, activities by TD actors. As TD actors, in both countries, also

develop many positive activities, it should be concluded that either TD actors undermine their own good work, or the group of TD actors is so diverse that a differentiation should be made between TD actors positively and negatively contributing to IDP protection.

The awareness of both actors in both countries of the effect of displacement and the possibilities of the Partnership Approach to Protection developing and positively contributing to IDP protection are similar for TD actors but different for BU actors. To start with the latter, as the rights knowledge of BU actors in Colombia is larger than that of BU actors in Uganda, BU actors in Colombia are better able to initiate or demand cooperation with TD actors, leading to positive PAP, which is not so much the case in Uganda. Focusing on the latter, TD actors in both countries are less aware of the negative effect of displacement on PAP. This can be seen by TD actors, in both countries, initiating phase three against the wishes of BU actors and before phase two was completed. The disregard for BU actor's preferences prevents PAP from materializing. Not realizing the protection decreasing effect of an additional displacement (return) also negatively affected IDP protection, as can be seen in the Times and Duration of Displacement arrows. In conclusion, it should be noted that within each phase the possibility for PAP exists but is most often hampered by TD activities. The possibility for PAP in each phase means that protection pyramids should be drawn up for each displacement phase. This latter observation will be further elaborated upon in the next section.

6.8 Component Eight: Feedback of Pyramid into BU and TD

Within component eight of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the observations from all previous components come together and interact. Additionally, feedback is provided to both BU and TD actors on the lessons that can be learned from the interaction between the different PPA components. Within chapter six the focus has been on the extent to which BU and TD actors interact, creating a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). The outcome of this interaction, the PAP, moves along the protection continuum from soft to hard protection cooperation thereby, positively or negatively, contributing to IDP protection. Within the first two subsections the manifestations of PAP in each case study country are presented, while the third subsection compares and contrasts the findings across the case study countries.

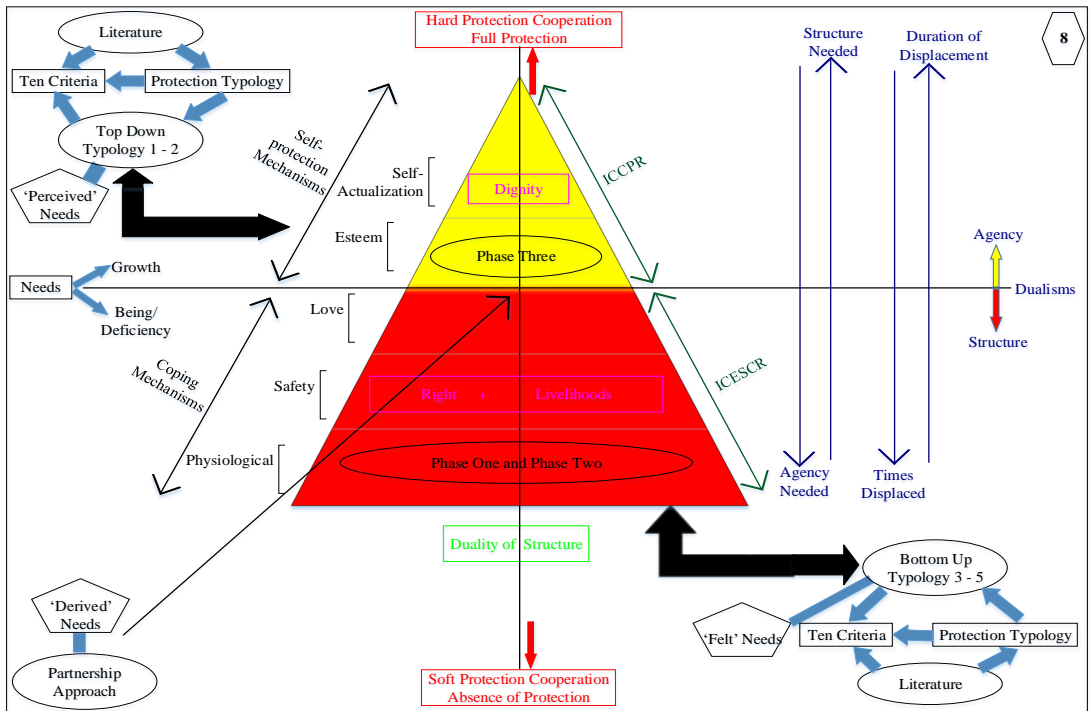


Figure 6.8: PPA Component Eight – Components Interaction and Feedback Mechanisms

6.8.1 Colombia

In this subsection, the effect of the interaction between the different PPA components on the manifestation of the Partnership Approach to Protection are being presented. Additionally, feedback is provided to both BU and TD actors on how they can improve PAP. Determining BU/TD actors lessons learned and the effect of inter-component interaction on PAP is based on PAP discussions in components one till seven. Studying the inter-component interaction relating to PAP it can be observed that there are more cases of PAP in component one, in the

rights-related criteria than the other criteria. This can be explained by the large potential for PAP in the Rights element of component four. The suboptimal and missed PAP opportunities in both these components can be explained by the observations in component five. In that component, PAP, did not develop for all Rights, and if it developed it was not always positive.

The positive PAP observed within the Dignity element of component four, positively influences PAP in all component elements in the lower halve of the protection pyramid. The fact that, also within the Dignity element, many opportunities for PAP were missed out on, also negatively affects PAP in that and other components of the protection pyramid. One of these missed opportunities for PAP relates to the Structure element in component six. PAP potential exists because of the great overlap, especially relating to enabling Structures, between BU and TD actors. However, the lack of Duality of Structure/PAP already shows that BU and TD priorities are focused on different things. This observation can be narrowed down utilising component two. There the overlap between ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs only resulted in suboptimal ‘derived’ needs as BU and TD actors misunderstood the exact meaning of needs. This shows that an increase in PAP in the needs related criteria of component one would ensure an increase in PAP in components two till four and component six.

Returning to the PAP increasing effect of the Dignity injection column, it should be noted that this positive effect is replicated by the positive PAP within the esteem needs of component three, even though this moves against the logic proposed by Maslow. The prioritisation of the top halve of the protection pyramid over the lower halve can be used to strengthen PAP in the lower halve, thereby contributing to overall improved IDP protection. At the same time, looking at component seven, prioritisation of the top halve of the protection pyramid does not always result in improvements to IDP protection. This is because the non-manifestation of PAP in phase three of displacement is caused by the prioritisation of the top halve of the protection pyramid (by TD actors, against the wishes of BU actors), hampering PAP and decreasing IDP protection. When the war, which now prevents PAP, ends this would positively influence all protection components. At the same time, increased emphasis on other activities (such as education or family) have a similarly component wide positive PAP effect.

Translating the effect of inter-component interaction on the Partnership Approach to Protection the following lessons learned and observations can be made to BU/TD actors. It can be seen how BU actors prioritise the top of the protection pyramid regardless of the existing challenges in the lower halve. While this is contrary to the logic inherent in component three, it is in line with the Dignity-injection column explained in component four. The Partnership Approach to Protection only materialises if BU and TD actors work together in the two halves of the pyramid. Therefore, IDP protection is improved if BU and TD actors prioritise the same halve of the protection pyramid as this enables them to work together in PAP. Awareness within both actors on the priorities of the other actors ensure that this occurs.

According to both actors ongoing fighting and related land problems create a negative PAP in all components and inter component interactions. However, awareness of the negative

influence of these activities is already a first step towards positive PAP. BU actors, emphasise the constraining effect of TD actors, while TD actors consider themselves to be a mostly enabling actor within these activities. It is important for PAP to materialise that a positive approach is taken. This is why it is good that Colombian BU actors acknowledge the positive TD actors' activities such as the elaborate IDP legal framework.

The feedback to both actors is to engage in constructive dialogue to move from negative to positive PAP. Additionally, TD actors should stop undermining their own positive activities, stop fighting and illegal land extortions. This would not only decrease the constraining time-space and allow for phase three (return) to materialise, it would ensure more BU/TD cooperation creating PAP. Simultaneously BU actors should continue using all means available to them to cooperate with TD actors (such as making a declaration or *tutella* and go to the UAOs/DC). TD actors should not only refrain from engaging in negative activities but continue developing positive activities such as offering education to BU actors. TD actors should also increase their understanding of BU actors and of the (positive or negative) impact of their activities (this applies to the difference between owning and renting a house as well as the protection decreasing effect of initiating another displacement even if this is return). This concludes the lessons learned from the analysis of the effect of inter-component interaction on PAP. A similar exercise will now be done for the Ugandan case study.

6.8.2 Uganda

In this subsection, the interactions between the aforementioned seven components of the Protection Pyramid Approach are analysed to determine how the observed PAP manifestations (or lack thereof) in the different components influence each other. After this analysis, the lessons learned from the inter component analysis on PAP are fed back to both actors. The fact that there is only one instance of PAP in component one is explained by components two and six. In those components, it becomes clear that the materialization of PAP is hampered by a lack of understanding and communication between both actors. In both components, BU and TD actors agree on the areas in which activities need to be undertaken (component two), as well as what constitutes Agency and Structure. However, in both components both actors disagree on the exact understanding of needs (component two) or how to work together in DS (component six). Therefore, in these component more opportunities for PAP exist than are currently created. This observation also applies to the protection elements level, in, for example, component four. In this component, a high level of similar Livelihoods issues is identified by both actors, but PAP is only suboptimal. The difference between suboptimal PAP at the element and component level is that for the former PAP does not materialise within an element, while in the latter, the lack of PAP hampers intra-component interaction. However, for component four, the missed opportunities for PAP in the Livelihoods element do not lead

to missed PAP opportunities at intra-component level, as (according to both actors) the Dignity-injection column compensates for PAP shortcomings in the livelihoods element.

At the same time, there are also issues which are single-handedly responsible for suboptimal PAP in multiple components. Examples of these issues are the war and land related problems. Awareness of the negative effect of these activities does exist within both actors and this paves the way to transform negative into positive PAP. This applies most strongly to ending the war, as ending the war allowed for PAP to develop in component two. As a result, the total amount of needs decreases and enabling PAP to materialise in the Safety Needs of component three. The end of war also creates both intra and inter component PAP in component four, fulfilling Rights in component five and enabling Agency and Structure to transcend into the Duality of Structure in component six. Finally, ending the war, to a large extent, ended displacement (component seven). Land wrangling in a slightly less elaborate way, also affects many protection components. Though land wrangling did not hamper PAP in phase one, land did negatively affect PAP in phases two and three. Awareness of this would create the possibility for PAP in these protection elements, as well as in relation to protection components three till six. Lack of awareness by TD actors of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms in relation to land, hampered PAP in component six, as well as in components three and four. This is because TD actors do not realize how BU actors contribute to, for example, their physiological needs or livelihoods, thereby decreasing the possibility for TD to assist BU in their activities, which would increase PAP and IDP protection.

More awareness and TD activism in certain component (elements) would decrease the number of missed PAP opportunities. This especially applies to TD activities in relation to Rights. The lack of BU Rights knowledge hampered PAP in many components, as they were not aware of their Rights and therefore could not claim them. This shortcoming becomes clearest in relation to component five where half or more than half of the Rights mentioned did not lead to PAP, which is a missed opportunity. At the same time, especially in relation to component three, BU actors should be more aware of the positive activities engaged in by TD actors. The lack of PAP in component three is attributable to both actors. Nevertheless, TD actors should also be more constructive in their activities, to ensure less missed PAP opportunities. This applies for example to TD activities in camps, where TD actors engaged in positive and negative activities. Refraining for negative activities (looting) and increasing positive activities (such as improved food assistance) would create more PAP. The need for a more constructive TD actor was most heartfelt in phase one of displacement in component seven as TD actors initiated the fighting which caused a negative PAP in phase one.

The way the interaction of components affects PAP can be translated into concrete feedback to BU and TD actors. Feedback which applies to both actors is that a positive PAP develops if both actors increase their communication and mutual understanding. This activity would positively influence PAP in different component and their elements. Though missed PAP opportunities on the intra-element level do not necessarily lead to missed PAP at intra-

component level, BU and TD actors should always consider the possibilities for PAP within all elements of a component. Additionally, BU and TD actors should be aware of activities which, on their own, have a positive or negative effect on PAP (such as war, land, education or increased rights knowledge). This increased awareness creates the possibility for increased BU/TD cooperation, which has the potential to increase PAP in multiple components.

Moving on to actor specific feedback, TD actors should be more aware, active and constructive in creating PAP. Increased TD awareness of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms, would lead to more instances of positive PAP as it would allow TD actors to build upon BU activities. Cases of PAP would increase in protection components four and six, if TD actors are more active in disseminating information on Rights, while increased TD actors constructive activities would have ensured increased PAP in the camps. Positive TD activities, such as offering education, would decrease the power imbalance between BU and TD actors and would facilitate PAP within components three, four and six. However, TD actors are not the only actors to receive feedback. When BU actors are more vocal about their needs and activities this would increase the potential for PAP in components two, three, four, six and seven. This applies specifically to BU actor's dislike of the timing and manner in which they were ordered into camps, starting phase two, and were told to leave the camps (phase three). Increased vocalisation could have influenced TD actor's decision to delay return to home areas, paving the way for positive PAP to develop in components three till six. The effect of intra and inter component interaction on PAP and the way BU and TD actors can improve on their mutual cooperation has been discussed above. In the next subsection similarities and differences between both case study countries will be analysed and presented.

6.8.3 PAP Case Study Country Comparison Component Eight

In this subsection, an intra and inter component, actor and case study comparative analysis will be conducted in order to determine the similarities and differences of the manifestation of the Partnership Approach to Protection between the two case study countries. Comparing the findings of both countries the following observations are made. In relation to PAP in component one, less cases of PAP are noticeable in Uganda than in Colombia. This means the protection culture and context in Uganda is less developed than in Colombia. In both countries, the Rights related criteria received more attention, though this still did not translate to more PAP in Uganda, due to the lack of BU Rights knowledge. In relation to the protection criteria, in Colombia, more cases of PAP were seen in typologies which were inherently more BU/TD in character (such as Accountability), while in Uganda the negative appreciation of TD actors for typologies resulted in only one suboptimal typology.

In relation to component two a considerable amount of overlap existed within BU 'felt' and TD 'perceived' needs in both countries, but this did not materialise into PAP in either country. Therefore, in both countries, there are many missed opportunities for PAP and

related ‘derived’ needs. BU and TD actors in both countries also agreed on the challenges existing in relation to the Safety Needs of component three. Though this agreement is positive, the resulting PAP is negative, as the challenges to layer two, decrease IDP protection. TD actors in both countries agree on the PAP potential of Maslow’s esteem needs, but only in Colombia this resulted in positive PAP because BU actors in Uganda give esteem needs less prominence than BU actors in Colombia. This observation is in line with another difference between both actors and both case study countries, as TD actors in Uganda take a broader approach to both BU actors in Uganda as well as TD actors in Colombia.

The Rights element in component four is an element in which the intra and inter component interaction between both case study countries is large. PAP in Colombia is almost positive (only decreased by TD shortcomings of money, capacity and political will), while PAP in Uganda is almost non-existent (due to lack of Rights knowledge in BU actors). The lack PAP in the Ugandan Rights element negatively impacts R/L/D interaction, making it more difficult for PAP to develop. The negative PAP in Rights, negatively influences the PAP in component five as BU actors are equally unaware of their Rights in both Covenants. In Colombia, the exact opposite is noted in PAP on an inter and intra component level as a result of a positive PAP in the Rights element of component four. In both case study countries, however, both actors identify most cases and potential for PAP in the Dignity element of component four. This results in both countries in the acknowledgement, by both actors of a submerged protection pyramid or a positive Dignity injection column. In both countries, the missed opportunities for PAP in Dignity prevent this column from developing. This prevents PAP in other components too, such as in components three and six. Similarly, to the missed opportunities of PAP in the Dignity element, component five, in both case study countries, but most strongly in Uganda, shows many instances of missed PAP.

Within component six, the considerable degree of overlap between BU and TD actors in both countries within Agency and Structure, should have resulted in many instances of PAP/DS. However, these failed to materialised, in both case studies, due to the (overlapping) identified challenges (by both actors in both countries). Especially the negative constraining time-space created by the war is a reason, in both countries, for less PAP. The war, a TD activity, is, single-handedly, responsible for many missed PAP opportunities in both countries. Interestingly however, the end of the war in Uganda did not increase the amount of PAP as the negative constraining time-space lingered on. Still, the end of the war did create more PAP in Uganda in relation to component seven than in Colombia. This is because in Colombia phase three of displacement has not started yet. Another difference between the countries is that in Uganda TD actors have engaged in more activities causing negative PAP in component seven than their counterparts in Colombia, once again (similarly to component one) creating a less optimal climate for PAP to develop and therefore for IDPs to be protected. The overall effect of BU and TD interaction, through the Partnership Approach to Protection on IDP protection is determined in the conclusion of this chapter, presented below.

6.9 Conclusion

In this chapter the occurrences of the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) have been presented for each component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). For components one to seven issues which hamper or strengthen PAP within and between both case study countries, have been discussed. In component eight PAP interaction, within and between case study countries, showed how negative PAP on the element level, could not only lead to a negative PAP between the elements at a component level, but could also negatively influence inter component interaction. The opposite (a positive PAP at the element level) was also observed, for example within a positive Dignity-injection column. It was also noted how certain events, such as war, influenced PAP across elements, components and countries. War is an intra-actor activities (fighting between TD actors) negatively contributing to IDP protection. It would seem that ending TD actors fighting would improve IDP protection. This is not necessarily the case. The Ugandan case study showed that even when fighting stops, war still negatively effects PAP across elements and components. This is because the spirit and impact of war lingers on long after the fighting has stopped. Increased awareness of the effect of certain BU/TD activities on the occurrence (or lack) of PAP, increases the possibility of positive PAP. This occurs because the preferences of the other actor are taken more into account. This is why both actors are advised to increase communication and mutual understanding.

The analysis of the different manifestations of PAP (positive, negative and missed opportunities) within and between the components and their elements across the case study countries contributed to the goal of this chapter. This goal read: *'To critically analyse both the effect and impact of the BU and TD protection strategies, used by IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors, when connected in an interactive and complementary PAP, to contribute to IDP protection'*. Increasing the cooperation between BU and TD actors through the PAP positively affects IDP protection. Protection decreases when BU and TD actors are not able to work together in PAP. When opportunities for PAP exist but PAP does not occur, this is classified as missed PAP opportunities. This means there is room for PAP, which is positive, but these opportunities are not utilised, meaning no improvement to IDP protection is made. The more BU and TD actors are aware of each other's activities within the different PPA component, the better both actors (can) work together in PAP and increase their contributions to IDP protection. This chapter showed (for both countries) that IDP protection increases (as well as the way in which it increases) when PAP develops at the component and component element level. Additionally, the interaction between all PPA components and their elements positively contributes to IDP protection. How this effects PPA is discussed below.

Chapter Seven: Synergy between Theory and Practice

This chapter builds upon the previous chapters. In chapter two the newly developed Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) was introduced in its theoretical form. PPA is based on the idea that the best way to provide protection is the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). PAP should be used in each PPA component. In chapter three, the Protection Pyramid Approach has been operationalised in preparation for its use and application in the two case study countries, Colombia and Uganda. Chapters four to six are the empirical chapters in which the data collected in the case study countries is presented and then analysed utilising PPA. The chapters follow an actor's perspective; chapter four presents and analyses the data utilising PPA from a Bottom Up (BU) perspective, while chapter five does the same from a Top Down (TD) perspective. In chapter six, the extent to which the PAP is observed within each PPA component has been presented.

In this chapter, the findings of the previous three empirical chapters is fed into and reconnected to the theoretical PPA, as presented in chapter two. Reconnecting the empirical findings to the theory in some cases leads to adaptations of the theoretical PPA, while in other cases a more elaborate explanation of the functioning of PPA suffices. In both cases the analysis conducted in chapter seven will eventually provide opportunities to improve PPA.

PPA benefits most when proposed changes lead to an increase of PAP in each PPA component. The importance of PAP in PPA is represented by the sub research question of this chapter which reads: *'To make recommendations on further improving the way in which IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors can contribute to increased IDP protection by building on their individual activities as well as utilising an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection'*. The aim to improve PPA by increasing the interaction between BU and TD actors, by promoting the use of PAP, means all aspects of the main research question are covered, paving the way for actors to start using PAP and to contribute to improving IDP protection. The main research question reads: *'What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?'*

7.1 Component One: Protection Criteria and Protection Typology

In this first section the findings of the empirical chapters, relating to component one of the Protection Pyramid Approach, are presented and discussed. All observations obtained from the analysis of BU and TD actors' understanding, use and interaction concerning of the protection criteria (in both case study countries) are presented in the first subsection. Special attention is paid to how BU and TD interaction increases the use of the Partnership Approach to Protection. The same is done for the protection typologies in the second subsection. The third subsection presents the effect of the empirical findings on the protection criteria and typologies, and how this leads to increased PAP and helps improve PPA. Any changes to either element of component one are shown in figure 7.1.

7.1.1 Ten Protection Criteria

Studying the use and appreciation of the ten protection criteria by both actors in Colombia and Uganda showed that the criteria were not always acknowledged or perceived as important for IDP protection. In Uganda for example, only very few protection criteria were fulfilled. This can help explain the lower level of IDP protection in Uganda, compared to Colombia, where the criteria were better adhered to. Another observation was the fact that the protection criteria were not always recognised by both BU and TD protection providers, but sometimes by just one of the two. For example, this was the case in Colombia where TD actors not only recognised the criteria but were also of the opinion that they were fulfilled. BU actors there did not agree on this. This difference in the fulfilment of protection criteria shows that BU and TD actors can have a different perception of IDP protection, to the extent that one actor feels IDPs are protected, while the other believes IDP protection is still lacking.

Based on these empirical observations, the protection criteria according to the protection literature do not cover the range of necessities to ensure IDPs are protected. Additionally, the criteria do not cater for differences between BU and TD actors. On the contrary, the criteria show a dominance for what TD actors believe constitutes IDP protection. This remark is based on the observation that BU actors do not recognise the criteria nor feel IDPs are protected when the criteria are fulfilled. The protection literature, upon which the criteria are based, is dominated by TD actors, explaining why the ten criteria are less focused on BU actor's understanding of protection. In applying PPA component one, it is therefore of crucial importance to include BU actor's understanding of IDP protection too.

The latter remark raises the question how BU actor's understanding can be better included in the PPA component one. This means ensuring a more equal input in PPA component one. This goal can be obtained by increasing the use of the PAP in PPA component one. In order for this to materialise BU and TD actors should voice their perceptions on IDP protection more clearly. The better both actors are able to express what, according to them, constitutes IDP protection and which criteria need to be fulfilled, the better both actors are

able to work together, creating a PAP in PPA component one. At the same time, the general protection criteria presented in chapter two also need to be adapted to the country specific understanding of IDP protection. This necessitates making the general criteria known in the case study country, as well as encouraging the vocalisation of local criteria for IDP protection. The two sets of criteria then need to be combined. Having discussed the effect of practice on theory in relation to the protection criteria, the same will be done in the next subsection for the protection typologies.

7.1.2 Five Protection Typologies

In this subsection, the lessons learned from the analysis of the empirical data will be reconnected to the theory presented in chapter two. Contrary to the previous subsection, in which only explanations on the application and representation of the protection criteria were added, the empirical data analysis suggests necessary changes to the protection typologies.

The clearest change between PPA component one theory and reality is the observation of additional ways to provide protection. The protection criterion of Capacity Building was considered by TD actors as a way to provide protection. Furthermore, in addition to the pair-wise oppositions discussed in chapter two (positive and negative, and individual versus community), other oppositions, observed in both BU and TD oriented typologies were: direct, versus indirect, active versus passive, material versus immaterial, abstract versus practical, personal versus community, internal versus external and general versus specific. The BU protection typology showed a range of oppositions, including the active versus passive opposition and other characteristic elements. The additional pair-wise oppositions, noted in chapters four and five, were entrepreneurial versus traditional and sustainable versus non-sustainable coping mechanisms. Other categories of coping mechanisms distinguished in the data were: practical, family-centred, socially-centred, and the difference between male and female coping mechanisms.

Coping mechanisms relate to BU actors. In order to move from a BU orientation towards a Partnership Approach to Protection, it is important that TD actors are aware of BU coping mechanisms. BU and TD actors should therefore be increasingly conscious of the oppositions in the different protection typologies because increased awareness increases understanding of how a protection typology is used, valued or experienced by the other protection actor. Understanding how a protection typology is fulfilled (for example in a direct or an indirect way) helps BU/TD actors know what to expect and how they can contribute to ensure the protection typology positively contributes to increased IDP protection. Having said so, TD actors should not only recognise this BU protection typology, but also act upon it. Therefore, TD actors should, in addition to being mandate driven, be more focused on the context. Increased awareness and activity within the two elements of PPA component one will

allow actors to know what kind of assistance is needed and how they can increase interaction. This BU/TD interaction will lead to a PAP and contribute to IDP protection.

7.1.3 Discussion Component One

The analysis of BU/TD actors' contribution to IDP protection in Colombia and Uganda shows that some additions need to be made to PPA component one. These additions will improve the functioning of this component by increasing the level of PAP in component one. These additions include both more elaborate explanations of the functioning of the protection criteria, as well as adding additional protection typologies. In relation to the protection criteria more explanation should be included to point out possible differences between BU and TD actors' understanding of the criteria, what constitutes IDP protection and how this understanding can differ from the general theoretical understanding. Therefore, a necessary aspect of PPA component one is determining what, according to BU and TD actors, constitutes IDP protection in a certain case study country. The chapter two protection criteria only provide a theoretical generic understanding of the protection context and culture in any given protection crisis, and need to be adapted to the local situation. The TD dominated nature of the protection literature, observed in the criteria, furthermore necessitates careful consideration of BU actors' point of view. Taking these explanations into consideration, changes to the protection criteria are not necessary, as can be observed in figure 7.1 below.

Some adaptations to the protection typologies are however necessary, to do justice to the data analysis of chapters four to six, especially the observation that additional typologies (ways to provide protection) were used in the case study countries. Not all observations however, lead to adaptations of the model however. In the case of the different categories and pair-wise oppositions within the BU typology of coping, no additions are necessary to figure 7.1. Increased awareness, pointed out in the explanation of this element, suffices. Also, the observation that the protection criteria Capacity Building was used as a protection typology, does not necessitate a change in figure 7.1. This is because Capacity-building can be seen as part of the TD typology of Responsibility. Of the additional identified, pair-wise protection typologies, some should however be included.

Keeping in mind that the main goal of PPA component one is to create awareness of the status quo of IDP protection in a given case study, being aware of direct and indirect consequences of assistance provided is very important. As TD actors mostly provide assistance, this typology should be added to the TD side of the protection pyramid. The extent to which BU actors are required to contribute to their own protection is covered by the active/passive protection typology. The awareness of the necessity of an active contribution of BU actors is an important piece of information in order to determine the contribution of BU actors to their own protection, as well as the possibilities of PAP to occur. The active/passive

protection typology has also been observed in the TD actors’ data, however, as it has greater impact on BU actors and is considered a BU protection typology (as included in figure 7.1).

The other pair-wise oppositions have not been added to figure 7.1. The reason why material versus immaterial, abstract versus practical and general versus specific oppositions were not included is similar for all three oppositions. For each opposition, it is interesting to know whether protection should be provided in that way, however, this information does not have a strong protection potential as it does not change the extent to which protection is achieved. The personal/community opposition is a useful protection typology but one which is covered by the TD typology of Responsibility and by component two. The internal versus external opposition is equally interesting, but also covered by other components (two and six) and to a certain extent covered by the typology of Accountability.

In conclusion, component one of the Protection Pyramid Approach is enriched with two additional protection typologies - one BU related typology (active / passive) and one TD related typology (direct / indirect). The typology of Coping will be approached with greater eye for detail. In addition to this, the awareness of the status quo of protection in a given case study country is increased with an increased vocalisation of protection needs, capacities and challenges on the part of both BU and TD actors. Vocalisation is therefore something that needs to be kept in mind when collecting the information on component one, and will be added in the explanation of the theoretical application of PPA in chapter two. The other changes are shown in figure 7.1.

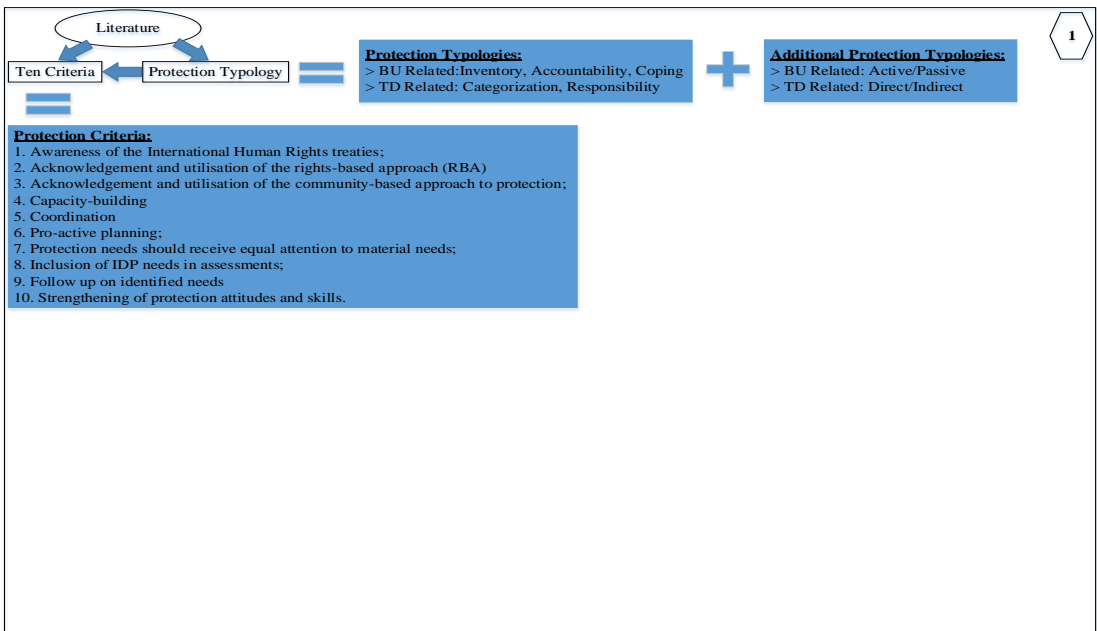


Figure 7.1: PPA Component One - Protection Criteria and Typologies

7.2 Component Two: Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

In the second component of PPA the focus is on the protection providers, needs and dualities. The aim of this chapter centres on the extent to which BU and TD protection providers work together in a Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) in each component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). In this component, specific attention is paid to PAP, while linking it to the needs both actors perceive are most urgent to IDP protection. In chapter two it has been explained how the protection providers, and the needs they identify, constitute different or opposing sides of abstract dualisms. In the empirical chapters (chapter four to six) no specific attention is paid to the dualism discussion, nevertheless, the dualism discussion remains the foundation of the Partnership Approach to Protection. A dualism can only be identified when both sides of a dualism are present. Within this research this abstract notion translates as follows. IDP protection is best improved when both BU and TD actors are present and work together in PAP in each PPA component. Given the importance of PAP in PPA, component two pays specific attention to PAP by presenting the lessons learned on protection providers and needs (first two subsections) and reconnecting those to the theoretical PPA component two (third subsection).

7.2.1 Protection Providers

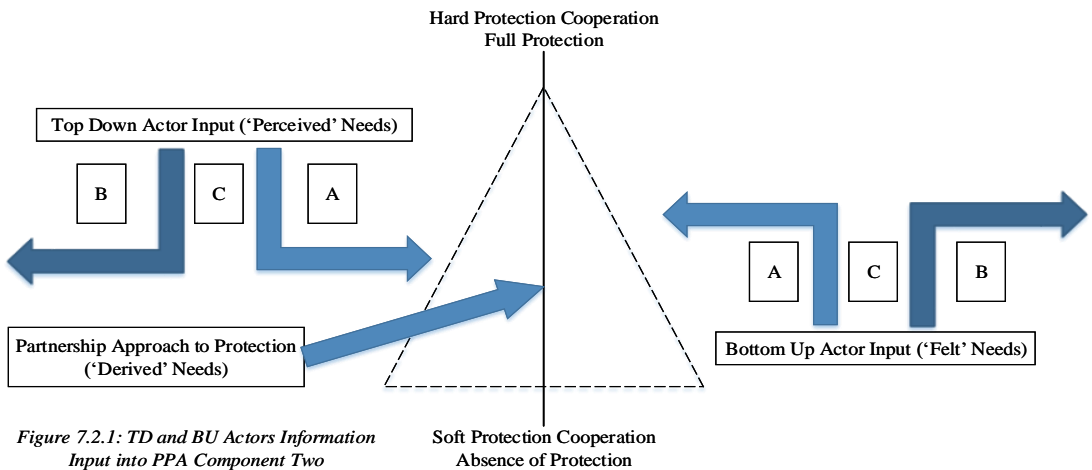
The most important observation from the two case study countries is the role played by IDPs in their own protection. In both countries, BU actors identified IDPs as an actor in their own protection while TD actors did not. Agreement on who constitutes protection providers, especially on the issue whether IDPs are protection providers, facilitates (or hampers) the development of PAP as cooperation cannot occur between actors who do not acknowledge each other. Another observation in relation to protection providers relates to the contribution of these actors to IDP protection. Both actors in both countries always specified whether the contribution to IDP protection has been positive or negative. Therefore, in addition to knowing who are the protection providers, the empirical data shows that it is also important to know whether their contribution has been positive or negative.

The protection providers listed by both actors in both countries show overlap with the list of protection providers mentioned in chapter two. Protection providers consist of both BU and TD actors. Who or which actor is part of either group is, to a certain extent, determined by the context and culture of the case study country. Therefore, only few adaptations should be made to the second component of PPA. The most important adaptations relate to acknowledging IDPs' contribution to their own protection. This does not require an addition to figure 7.2, as adding more explanation to PPA component two suffices. Specifying whether the contribution of a protection provider has a positive or negative effect on IDP protection should however be added. This has been shown within the arrows indicating the input of actors, as can be seen in figure 7.2.2 at the end of 7.2.3 Discussion.

7.2.2 ‘Felt’, ‘Perceived’ and ‘Derived’ Needs

Paying attention to the needs identified by BU and TD actors clarifies what BU and TD actors believe constitutes IDP protection. The more BU and TD identified needs are consistent, the better PAP can function. Rephrased in terms of needs, ‘derived’ needs are clearer when there is greater overlap between ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs. These ‘derived’ needs can then be addressed, allowing upwards movement along the protection continuum towards hard protection cooperation and full protection. PAP is increased if BU and TD actors are able to articulate their needs.

Analyses of the data collected in Uganda and Colombia has shown that, for a number of reasons, the input of information into PAP is sub-optimal, i.e. BU and TD actors are not fully able to voice ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs. Sub-optimal information input can be done consciously or unconsciously. For example, in Uganda discrimination negatively impacted IDP protection. In some cases, BU and TD actors were aware of the actor discriminating but decided not to disclose this out of fear for retribution. This decision hampered the normal functioning of PAP. Some actors did disclose the actor discriminating against them, while others had no idea of the cause of the discrimination they experienced. These three scenarios influence PAP in component two in three ways, as shown by figure 7.2.1.



In figure 7.2.1, utilising the example of discrimination, letter A stands for the ideal flow from the different actors into their respective needs. Letter B represents the flow occurring when actors know who is discriminating them but consciously, for whatever reason, decide to not give full disclosure of this information. The arrow belonging to letter B shows how information has not been translated into ‘felt’ or ‘perceived’ needs, giving an incorrect representation of what is needed for IDP protection. Without this information, intra and inter-

component interactions are hampered. In the situation, represented by letter C, an actor genuinely does not know who is doing the discrimination and is therefore unable to provide ‘felt’ or ‘perceived’ needs, which is why letter C is represented without an arrow. Letter C also represents a sub-optimal situation, as the lack of input on needs hampers the functioning of PAP. From a TD perspective letter C can also indicate that TD actors have not paid enough attention to BU’s needs, or else they would be aware of the cause of discrimination and could have acted against it. This does not only necessitate an awareness of the specific needs of specific BU actors, or groups on the part of TD actors, but also an increased vocalization by the different groups of BU actors. If both occurs, PAP materialises and the ‘derived’ needs represent BU actor’s needs, of which TD actors are fully aware, leading to a positive, upwards movement along the protection continuum.

Following from the analysis presented above, the three arrows within figure 7.2.1 indicate that BU actors choose different ways to deal with a situation. This implies that IDPs are not a uniform group. Instead IDPs consist of different groups, which each can have different needs. There can be a difference between the needs of men and women, or between ethnic groups. Therefore, needs should be differentiated for the different groups within an IDP population, at the very least between men and women. In the same way that differences can exist within an IDP population, differences can also exist between similar groups in an IDP population in different geographic locations or in different time periods. In Uganda, the needs of men and women changed over the different displacement phases, while in Colombia the Regional Approach was developed to cater for differences in needs in the Regions.

BU actors, in both countries, preferred assistance with a higher protective capacity, even if this required more efforts from themselves. In Uganda IDPs were not very happy about the fact that NGOs mostly gave assistance rather than, for example, farming equipment, as the protective capacity of the former is lower than that of the latter. The BU actors preferred contributing to their own protection than passively accepting assistance. This shows that BU actors’ ‘felt’ needs were more future focused and geared towards self-sufficiency. In Colombia, a similar sentiment was observed in BU’s preference for cash instead of a housing subsidy by cheque. The greater the awareness on differences between groups, geography or time, the greater the understanding of IDP protection and therefore the better able BU and TD actors are, through PAP, to contribute to improving IDP protection. How this affects PPA component two is presented in the next subsection.

7.2.3 Discussion Component Two

Changes to PPA component two relate mostly to needs. This is because the empirical findings relating to protection providers largely concur with chapter two. The only necessary addition should be the explanation that IDPs also play a role in their own protection. TD actors should

be more aware of this characteristic of BU actors in order to create more possibilities for PAP in PPA component two.

Moving on to the second element of PPA component two, ‘needs’, the increased awareness of IDPs’ own contribution includes the necessity of increased awareness for groups, geography and time. This is because the empirical analysis has shown that ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs differ for different groups within an IDP population, over different geographical locations and across different time periods. The uniform approach to IDP protection, utilised up till now, should be replaced by a more versatile approach. For this to work IDPs should be more vocal about their needs, giving space to differences between groups, geography and time, while TD actors should be more aware of possible differences in needs¹⁰⁹. Power differences within the BU actor can hamper the full articulation of needs, therefore both actors should be conscious of it. The need to differentiate ‘needs’ by group, geography and time, could necessitate conducting PPA for these three aspects separately, meaning that separate protection pyramids have to be drawn up. While this is an option, for now, groups, geography and time have been added to figure 7.2.2 as points of attention.

The key lesson derived from the empirical data relating to PPA component two, is the importance of vocalisation of needs. The more specific and vocal BU actors are about their needs, and the better aware TD actors are of the possibility of differentiated needs, the better both actors can work together in PAP and through ‘derived’ needs work on increasing IDP protection by moving upwards along the protection continuum. Vocalisation of needs is however challenged by insecurity (ranging from physical security till discrimination and politics). When insecurity prevents vocalisation, ‘felt’ and ‘perceived’ needs do not adequately represent what needs to be done to improve IDP protection, hampering PAP and ‘derived’ needs. TD actors can assist BU actors in being more vocal by becoming more context than mandate driven. Having said this, the high level of TD experience connected to a more mandate driven approach should not be disregarded. This is why a context/mandate continuum is suggested as addition to PPA component two as this would allow more PAP. The context/mandate continuum has been added to figure 7.2.2 below and runs along the protection continuum. However, for sake of clarity it has been added next to it.

The addition of the context/mandate continuum assists TD actors to encourage BU actors’ vocalisation of needs. Both actors should stimulate groups within the BU actor to voice their specific needs, while paying attention to possible differentiation needs across geography and time. Groups, geography and time are therefore additions to PPA component two. When TD actors are more open to the different IDP needs, this means no longer treating BU as a uniform actor (which has also been added as a point of attention). This is especially important as BU actors see an active role for themselves in their own protection. The vocalisation of needs is, however, tempered by insecurity. This means that the interrelation of needs is

¹⁰⁹ This is also known as ‘conversational or communicative space’ (Zeelen, Rampedi and Van der Linden, 2014).

important too, which is dealt with in the following PPA component. Before moving on to this component the additions to PPA component two are visualised in figure 7.2.2 below.

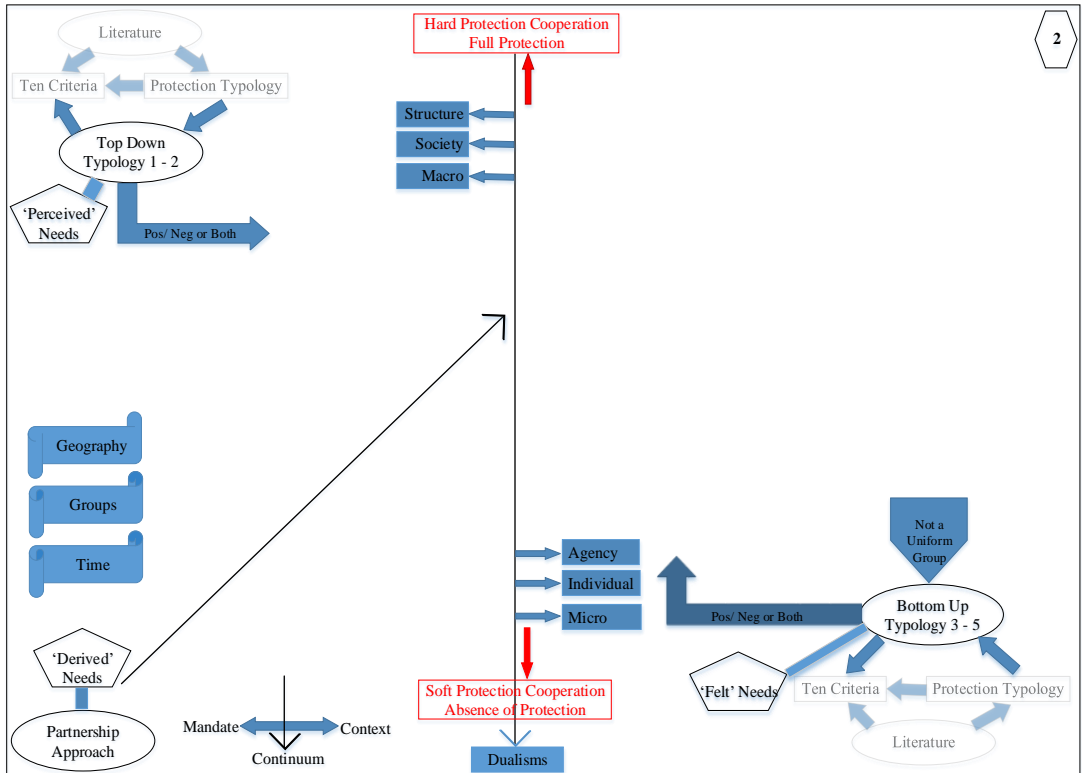


Figure 7.2.2: PPA Component Two - Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities

7.3 Component Three: Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

From a theoretical perspective, the aim of component three is to visualise the prioritisation of needs and activities in relation to IDP protection, as indicated by BU and TD actors. From a practical point of view the addition of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory assists BU and TD actors to increase their mutual understanding of what constitutes IDP protection and how it can be reached. This paves the way for the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) to occur in this component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). The representation in the shape of a pyramid shows the hierarchical needs fulfilment suggested by Maslow's theory. Maslow hypothesises that higher needs will only be fulfilled when lower needs are (almost completely) fulfilled, therefore, locating needs within the pyramid provides BU and TD actors with a roadmap along which they can operate and within which they can develop PAP. Utilising Maslow's theory in PPA component three for the analysis of the Ugandan and Colombian case studies will indicate if other forces and interactions, then foreseen by Maslow's theory, occur in this PPA component. This analysis will take place in subsection one. The lessons learned from the case study analyses will be reconnected to the theoretical application of PPA component three (as explained in chapter two) in the second subsection.

7.3.1 Physiological, Safety, Love, Esteem Needs and the need for Self-Actualisation

The five layers within component three are useful for IDP protection because the needs identified by BU actors, as well as the activities they engaged in by BU and TD actors, can be recorded in them. Identifying for each layer the needs and BU/TD activities, component three visualises the layer most prioritised by both actors. In both case study countries, the physiological layer was identified by both actors as being of key importance. This is in line with Maslow's theory. However, in both countries, land was also identified as necessary for IDP protection. Land can be visualised in layer one and five. Land is not the only phenomena which can be visualised in multiple layers. While the decision to locate a phenomenon in one layer or the other might be a theoretical exercise, the fact that land is located in both the lowest and highest layer of the pyramid, is significant. It means that land is necessary to fulfil a BU actors' most fundamental needs (not dying (M1¹¹⁰)) and what is needed to live to the fullest (M5). As this phenomenon covers two extremes its protective capacity is very large. Taking into consideration the importance of land in both case study countries, the observation has to be made that when phenomena are located in M1 and M5, they are considered to contribute greatly to IDP protection and should be actively searched for. Though PAP does not occur

¹¹⁰ Each layer within Maslow's Pyramid is abbreviated by the letter M (referring to Maslow) and a number. Number one refers to layer one (physiological needs), number two to layer two (safety needs) and so forth.

much yet in relation to land, given the large protective capacity of land, developing PAP would have a large positive impact on IDP protection.

The agreement on the importance of physiological needs is not a standalone observation. In general, analysing component three for both countries has shown that BU and TD actors are generally consistent in the prioritisation of layers. Layer four was also prioritised by both actors in the two case study countries. This means that BU and TD actors, in both countries, prioritise IDP needs similarly. This agreement between BU and TD actors paves the way for PAP because both actors concentrate on the same layer. However, when taking the analysis to a deeper level differences in prioritisation within layer four emerged. BU actors prioritised education while TD prioritised rights, both of which are located within layer four. The differences are related to the kind of esteem the phenomena strengthens. Education strengthens self-esteem, while rights necessity the esteem received from others. BU and TD actors should therefore ensure that interaction occurs at this deeper level too.

Component three has also made it very clear that both actors in both countries felt that layer two was most challenged. This is not that surprising given the timeframe upon which the analysis focuses. While BU and TD agree in a positive way on layer one and in a negative way on layer two, layers three and five also deserve special attention. Layer three is unique because BU actors are willing to make great sacrifices to fulfil this layer. At the same time, however, this layer acts as a barrier between the bottom and top halves of the pyramid. Layer three differs from the other layers because it has a communal component. Whether an IDP is concerned about his immediate family, or the community at large, it shows that BU actors are concerned about something else than their own wellbeing. The uniqueness of layer five lies in the fact that it is almost never reached. Even when a BU actor reaches layer five, and as a result is no longer seen as an IDP, this does not necessarily mean a BU actor is protected. The implication of this will be further elaborated upon in the next sub-section, titled 'Discussion'.

7.3.2 Discussion Component Three

In chapter two it was explained how Maslow suggests that the fulfilment of needs occurs in a hierarchical way. In the case study analyses of this research, it has been shown that while this indeed occurs, other movements are possible too. Analyses of the data has shown how IDPs have experienced decreases in their protection. Previously fulfilled higher needs ceased to be fulfilled, which forced IDPs to focus on the fulfilment of lower needs again. These setbacks can be temporary or necessitate IDPs to start over again; fulfilling lower level needs and moving upwards in the protection pyramid. In both case study countries IDPs have had to go back to fulfilling their physiological needs while they had already progressed to fulfilling love needs. Reasons for this temporary setback were often related to layer two, safety needs, the most challenged layer. Layer two has had a tremendous impact on all layers of the pyramid. Developing PAP in this layer has the potential to greatly contribute to the fulfilment of all

other layers. This is difficult however, because the TD actors challenging layer two are not always the same as those who have a responsibility to fulfil the other layers of the pyramid. However, in the two case study countries, they were the same actors. Nevertheless, even if a TD actor is both challenging and fulfilling IDPs' safety needs (or any other need for that matter), there will always be other TD actors which (as part of R2P) also have a responsibility to fulfil layer one. Therefore, it is important to see PAP outside the country setting, aiming for PAP to develop at a higher (regional or international) level as well.

Other movement in component three, which were not mentioned by Maslow, were the effects of fulfilling higher level needs, when lower level needs were not yet fulfilled. To start with the positive manifestation of this phenomena - IDPs would receive assistance, such as education (fulfilling layer four), while being in a camp in the middle of the war (which meant that layer two was not yet fulfilled). Approaching this situation from a pure theoretical point of view, this would cause a tension within the protection pyramid. The protection pyramid would be top heavy and possibly topple over. However, in the case studies this situation positively contributed to IDP protection. By receiving education, for example on their rights, IDPs were able to contribute to the fulfilment of lower level needs (such as the fulfilment of physiological needs). In this situation, the fulfilment of a higher-level need enabled IDPs to fulfil lower level needs which were not yet fulfilled.

The negative manifestation of this phenomena occurred when a higher-level need was challenged. Maslow introduced the concept of continuous, upward, hierarchical and positive movement in the pyramid, fulfilling the layers one after the other. In the case study countries, higher level needs have been noted to act as a barrier between higher and lower level needs or even actively challenged already fulfilled lower level needs. In the former situation, in which a layer acts as a barrier, love needs prevented IDPs to fulfil their esteem needs and become self-actualised. However, given the special character of layer three (connecting BU to TD) the positive fulfilment of love needs, simultaneously fulfils esteem needs. This is because, in line with PAP logic, BU and TD actors (i.e. IDPs and their families) work together to increase IDP protection. Layer three and four are therefore, to a certain extent, linked to each other.

At the same time, a challenged or unfulfilled third layer equates to a negative PAP and acts as a barrier. If BU is not able to fulfil layer three, this actor is also not able to fulfil the communal part of layer four. The inter-linkage between these layers means that positive or negative activities, by either actor, influences two layers at the same time. An activity can have a double positive or double negative effect. This multiplier effect of activities resonates within PAP, strongly (positively or negatively) impacting IDP protection. A negative third layer always leads to a negative fourth layer. A positive PAP has a sum layer than its parts, similarly a negative PAP has higher negative effect than BU or TD activities on their alone. If an IDP has a family and is not able to take care of this family (negative M3) this is due to challenges in M2 and M1. M3 is not reached because M1 and M2 are not reached and they are not reached because of the fact that an IDP has a family, so because of M3. The inter-

linkage between M1-M3 is in line with Maslow's writing on Being needs. The strong effect of Love needs shows that when BU and TD actors consciously work towards PAP in this layer the multiplier effect will lead to a large, positive impact on IDP protection.

In addition to layer three, layer five was also identified as a special layer. The uniqueness of layer five lies in the realisation that a positive fulfilment of M5 can still pose a challenge to protection of a BU actor, as was seen in Uganda. There, it was observed that IDPs who returned home, and were no longer seen as an IDP as they reached the stage of self-actualisation, were worse off than when they were still considered an IDP. Upon their return, the self-actualised BU actors became part of another protection pyramid relating to their situation. If these BU actors returned to their completely destroyed village, they may become part of a protection pyramid for poor rural people. In that protection pyramid they would not be self-actualised, but rather find themselves struggling to meet their physiological needs, hence starting at the bottom of this new protection pyramid. The observation which is important is that a protection pyramid is always followed by a new protection pyramid. In this example a BU actor, after returning and no longer being an IDP (in other words being self-actualised), moved into a new protection pyramid. The bottom pyramid of figure 7.3.1 shows how an IDP has reached self-actualisation but at the same time is in M1 in the rural poor protection pyramid (the top pyramid in figure 7.3.1).

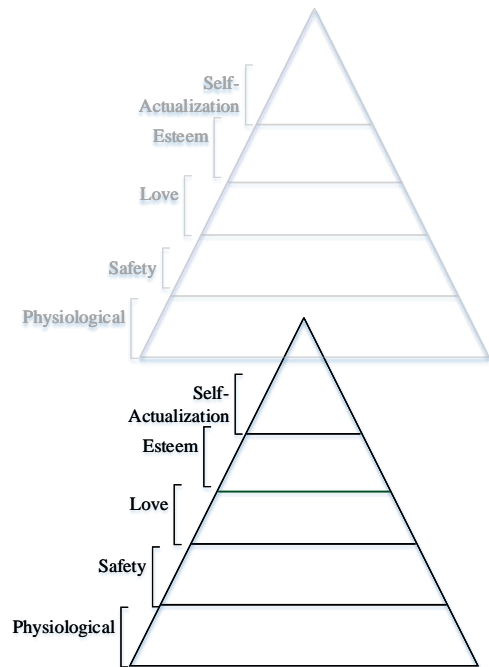


Figure 7.3.1: Overlap IDP Protection Pyramid with Poor Rural Person Protection Pyramid

The observation which is important is that a protection pyramid is always followed by a new protection pyramid. In this example a BU actor, after returning and no longer being an IDP (in other words being self-actualised), moved into a new protection pyramid. The bottom pyramid of figure 7.3.1 shows how an IDP has reached self-actualisation but at the same time is in M1 in the rural poor protection pyramid (the top pyramid in figure 7.3.1).

In conclusion, analysing the functioning of component three in the case study countries, showed that Maslow's theory has more positive contributions to IDP protection than was anticipated in chapter two. In chapter two the positive effect on IDP protection of fulfilling a higher-level need before all lower level needs are fulfilled, was not anticipated. At the same time, the effects on protection of a layer being challenged was also not foreseen. A negative layer not only prevents upwards movement (as dictated by Maslow) but also endangers the already fulfilled lower layers. Layers can also be missing or act as a barrier. It is important, in the theoretical description of the *modus operandi* of component three, to point this out. BU and TD actors also need to be aware of the unique nature of phenomena which influence more than one layer. The further apart the layers which are influenced are, the greater

the positive effect on IDP protection. BU and TD actors should strive towards making PAP happen in these situations for its positive impact on IDP protection.

The empirical analysis also showed the overlap between BU and TD actors in the prioritisation of certain layers within the protection pyramid. This, once again, paves the way for the Partnership Approach to Protection to materialise. The unique nature of layers three and five should be kept in mind when BU and TD actors aim to improve IDP protection. The effect of layer three on IDP protection, is further influenced by its inter-linkage to layer four, especially when combined with PAP. This inter-linkage can therefore have a positive or negative multiplier effect on IDP protection. Layer five was unique because IDPs can become self-actualised (which happens when they return and are no longer an IDP) but still not be protected. This is because they moved into a new protection pyramid (the Rural Poor Protection Pyramid), where they have to start at the bottom (M1) of this new pyramid.

Having discussed the effect of the case study analyses on the theoretical functioning of protection component three, figure 7.3.2 shows that no additions were made to the theoretical visualisation of PPA component three. The observations discussed above need to be added to the explanation of the application of PPA component three. Nevertheless, figure 7.3.2 has been added to visualise the discussion above. In the next section the effect of the empirical data analyse on the theoretical representation of PPA component four is discussed.

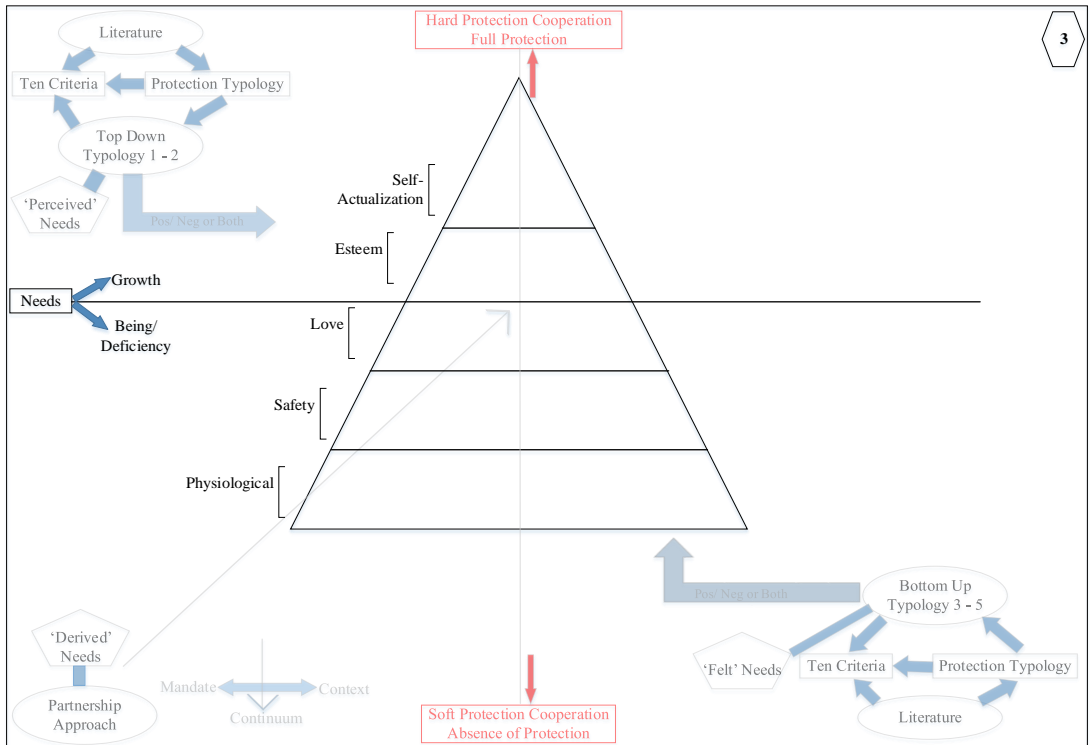


Figure 7.3.2: PPA Component Three - Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid

7.4 Component Four: New Protection Definition – Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity and their Interaction

The aim of chapter seven is to identify and increase the instances of the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) within each component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA). In this section this exercise will be conducted for the fourth component of PPA, the Revised Protection Definition. Analysing the empirical chapters (chapters four – six) shows how BU and TD actors understand, value and use the revised definition or its elements: Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. The greater the overlap between BU and TD actors on the definition and the use of the elements, the larger the potential for the materialisation of PAP, which will increase BU and TD actors' contribution to IDP protection. The analysis of the empirical chapters for the use of the revised protection definition and its elements, by both actors in both case study countries, is covered in subsection one. In subsection two any necessary adaptations to PPA component four are discussed.

7.4.1 Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity

In this sub-section observations relating to the Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity element of the new protection definition are presented, based on the analyses of the case study countries (chapters four to six). Observations relating to the Rights element show how both countries have an elaborate and impressive legal framework (though at different levels) for the protection of IDPs. However, the rights element often only remains indirectly fulfilled, with both countries suffering from lack of implementation of rights. The disconnect between Rights and their implementation means that, when Rights are not being implemented (by TD actors), BU actors cannot enjoy their rights and PAP does not materialise. Having said this, the Colombian case study has shown how BU actors can play an important role in forcing TD actors to engage in PAP (they claimed their rights through the Constitutional Court). This did not occur in Uganda, in part as BU actors are less knowledgeable and active on their Rights.

In both case study countries, the Rights element is the preferred element of TD actors. Not only do TD actors in both countries mention this element more than the BU actors do, they are also actively strengthening it. At the same time lack of (up to date) knowledge within TD actors in relation to this element was mentioned. The level to which BU (and TD actors) are informed about Rights dictates the possibility of PAP developing. Another problem observed in relation to the rights element, is the fact that some issues are not covered by specific rights. This relates especially to the issue of land. In both case study countries actors talked about the Right to Land, which is inadequately recognised and upheld in statutory instruments. Given its importance for IDP protection it is worth mentioning this issue while discussing the characterisations of the rights element and it has been added to figure 7.4.6.

The second element of the revised protection definition is Livelihoods. In both case study countries, a strong emphasis is placed on the practical aspects of this element, as livelihoods are the tangible expression of Rights. TD actors have provided different kinds of assistance in order to fulfil this element. While practical assistance is an important component of the livelihoods element, it should not only be the only one. The problem with assistance is that, often, it is a one-way activity where TD actors provide to BU actors, which is not in line with PAP thinking as it is less protection enhancing. A more PAP approach to the Livelihoods element of PPA component four would, for example, be offering employment. Then TD actors create the conditions in which BU actors can actively contribute to their own protection, making BU and TD actors work together. What constitutes work differs in both case study countries but it is important that BU and TD actors play an equal role in it, only then PAP materialises and IDP protection increases. PAP was also observed in different fields, such as education and health care where a higher protection potential is reached when BU and TD actors work together. Another observation pertaining to the livelihoods element, supported by both case study countries, is the high importance of land for IDP protection. All actors should be aware of this and actively strive towards ensuring access to land.

The analyses of the case study countries has shown that the Dignity element is unique within the protection formula. Though both BU and TD actors have emphasised that all three elements are important and necessary for IDP protection, the analyses still showed that the Dignity element had a special influence on IDP protection. From the data collected in both countries it became clear that the Dignity element has a protection increasing or decreasing effect, through a positive or negative Dignity injection column. It is important to be aware of this characteristic as it gives the Dignity element the largest potential of the three elements. Both BU and TD actors should be made aware of the multiplier effect of this protection element, as it also allows better cooperation between BU and TD actors making it possible for PAP to develop and thereby positively contribute to IDP protection. A Dignity injection column can be created by immaterial activities, such as providing trust or comfort.

Other (im) material issues which are of great importance to the Dignity element are the status of being considered an IDP, family, land and the extent to which IDPs' suffering is known to the world. This shows that Dignity is influenced by IDP internal and external aspects which means both actors are necessary to make PAP happen. In both countries, however, TD actors have most difficulties with the Dignity element of IDP protection as they perceive it to relate exclusively to BU actors. The effects of shortcomings and achievements, in the Dignity, as well as the other two elements, on IDP protection are discussed in the next sub-section.

7.4.2 Discussion Component Four

In the subsection above the understanding and application of the three elements of the revised protection definition, based on the analysis of the empirical input of both actors in both case

study countries, has been discussed. The protection enhancing effect of PAP has been indicated. In this subsection, the appreciation and use of the interaction between the elements of the revised protection definition are analysed to determine the manifestation of PAP, while also pointing out where PAP could have developed as well. The goal of this subsection is to determine whether the realisations from the analysis of the empirical data necessitate a revision of the theoretical PPA component four, as discussed in chapter two. Any necessary changes are shown in figure 7.4.6, which is presented at the end of this Discussion.

One observation relates to the relative importance of the three elements within the protection pyramid. In addition to the theoretical representation, the protection elements within both case study countries were given different priorities by both actors, which influences their position relative to each other in the protection pyramid. Simplified, the two case study countries protection pyramid would look like the figure 7.4.1. Placing these two pyramids next to each other allows for an easy comparison of the situation in those two countries.

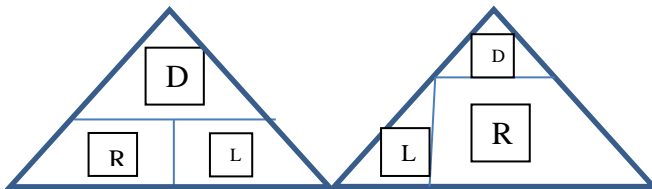


Figure 7.4.1: R/L/D Uganda (L)& Colombia (R)

It shows how BU and TD actors in Uganda placed a higher priority on the Dignity element while in Colombia the Rights element is felt to be more important. In addition, it also shows how each element relates to

the other two elements within a case study country. The protection pyramid now has become a format in which different case study countries can be compared. It also makes it easier for PAP to develop because, for each case study country, it is known which element is prioritised. In addition to this, protection pyramids showing the relative related importance of the protection elements can also be drawn up for each protection actor. When this is done, PAP can more easily develop because each actor knows the priority element of the other actor.

The analyses of the case study countries has shown that theoretically the rights element is more a TD than BU phenomena. Nevertheless, even at the TD level, actors fall short in ensuring the link between the Rights and Livelihoods/Dignity elements. The strength of the protection formula is based on the strength of the linkages between the three elements. This means that even when actors strengthen each element individually, the formula does not reach its full potential when the linkages between the elements are weak. The protection formula has the highest protection potential when not only the individual elements are strong but also when both BU and TD actors invest in the linkages between the elements. When the Rights element is only indirectly fulfilled this means that the linkage between an entitlement and its corresponding right, is weak. In addition to this, even if the inter-linkage between Rights and Livelihoods is acknowledged on BU level, creating a stable base in the protection pyramid, the fulfilment of these two elements at TD level is also necessary for the fulfilment

of the Dignity element. This shows that not only the links between the elements is important but also between BU and TD actors, which means IDP protection is increased if PAP is used.

Analyses of the case studies has not only identified a connection between Rights and Livelihoods but also between Livelihoods and Dignity. In both countries delays in the fulfilment of the Livelihoods element were connected to decreases in the Dignity element. The link between Livelihoods and Dignity is most strongly felt by BU actors, while TD actors link Livelihoods more to Rights. Overall IDP protection increases if BU actors are more aware of the link between the Livelihoods and Rights element (because then they would claim their rights) and if TD actors were more aware of the link between Livelihoods and Dignity (because they would realise the negative effect of delayed food assistance for example). Increased understanding is always a key prerequisite for PAP to materialise.

Another observation from the case study countries was the fact that other representations of the protection formula occurred. While these other interactions also contributed to protection, their effect was often sub-optimal. However, when the Dignity element in these other representations of the protection formula was emphasised, these representations also positively contributed to IDP protection. This was because of the Dignity-injection column. The Dignity injection column can have a positive or negative effect on IDP protection or both. This is because the column influences the other two elements in a positive or negative way. When Dignity improves, even when Rights and Livelihoods are weak, the unique nature of Dignity, strengthens the other two elements, causing an upward movement towards increased protection. Unfortunately, the opposite also occurs. If Dignity decreases this negatively influence the other two elements, even if the two elements were positive to start with. A situation in which Dignity is both weakened and strengthened causes the Dignity column to both weaken and strengthen the other two elements. The influence of the Dignity element on the protection pyramid has been summarised in figure 7.4.2. This unique characteristic of the Dignity element was not foreseen in the theoretical presentation of the protection formula in chapter two. The protection enhancing or decreasing effect of the Dignity-injection column should be added to the theoretical representation of PPA component four and is therefore shown in figure 7.4.6 at the end of this subsection.

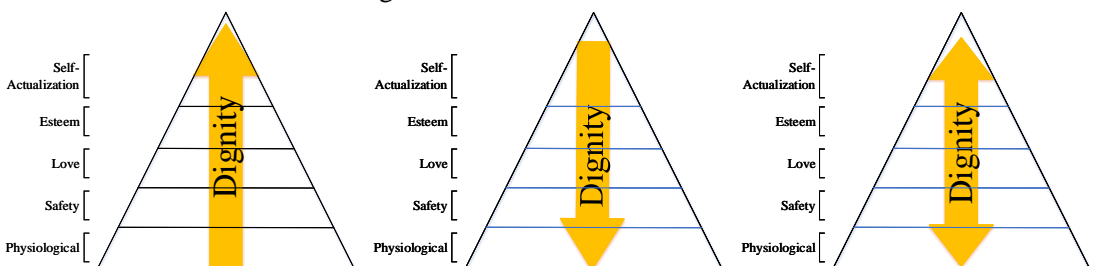


Figure 7.4.2: Two-way Dignity Injection Column in Protection Pyramid

In addition to the positive Dignity injection column (caused by a positive Dignity element), another phenomenon materialises. When the positive Dignity injection column reaches the top of the protection pyramid, the Dignity element once again strengthens the Rights and Livelihoods elements, not through a downward pyramid internal movement but because the protection pyramid is replicated. This means that, in addition to the Dignity injection column (shown in figure 7.4.2), the protection formula (represented by column I in figure 7.4.3) and the consecutive representation of the three protection elements (column II in figure 7.4.3), a third representation has been observed in the data. Column III in figure 7.4.3 represents the replication of a complete protection pyramid. These three different representations of the three protection elements are all geared towards improving IDP protection.

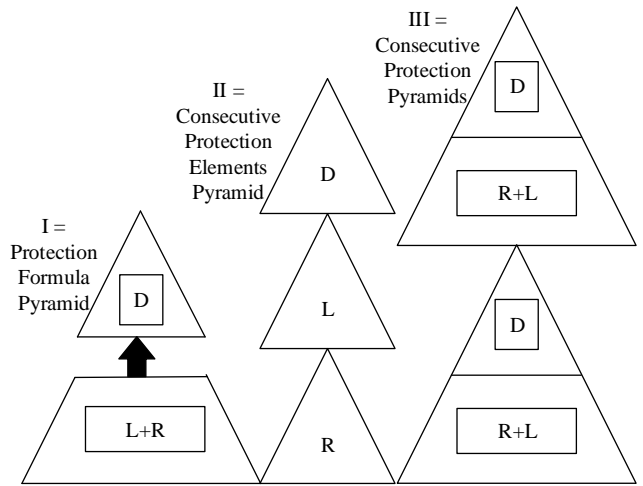


Figure 7.4.3: Interaction Between Protection Elements

Unfortunately, interactions were also observed which, whether consciously or not, decreased IDP protection. Such situations occurred when only two of the three elements were present, elements were presented sub-optimally or there was a gap between the fulfilment of the elements. This is visualised by figure 7.4.4. The elements which are shown as compromised could be replaced by any of the other elements.

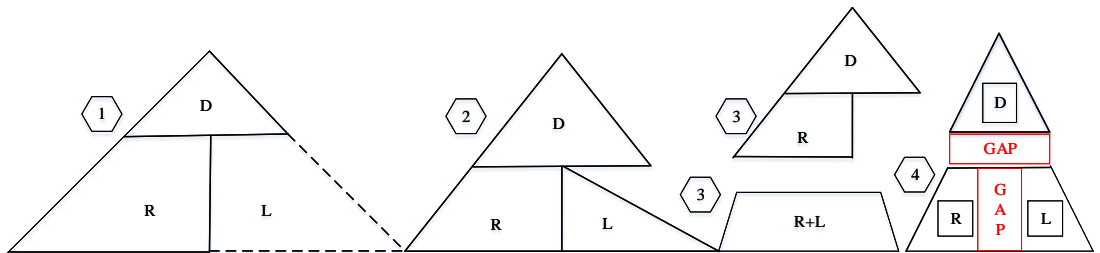
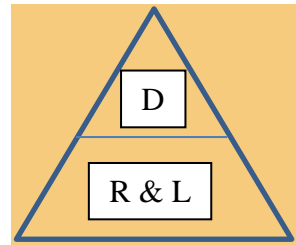


Figure 7.4.4: R/L/D Interactions Negatively Influencing Protection
(1= Indirectly fulfilled element, 2= sub optimally fulfilled element, 3=element missing, 4= gaps between element)

Another observation relating to component four is best explained by taking the example of owning a house in Colombia. Increased vocalisation on the part of BU actors of how important owning (as opposed to renting) a house is to them, would have, at the very least, encouraged TD actors to explain why they decided to provide IDPs with rent money. Taking the time to explain their decision to BU actors would have been Dignity increasing, creating a positive Dignity injection column. Though TD actors may ultimately have chosen

a solution which is not preferred by BU actors, the Dignity injection column could still have allowed PAP to manifest itself, providing a positive impetus to IDP protection.

The Dignity element is not only interesting from the point of view of the Dignity-injection column, but also because it has been noted (in the empirical data of both actors in both case study countries) to sometimes surround the protection pyramid. Reasons for the Dignity element to surround the protection pyramid (shown by the yellow colour in the Submerged Protection Pyramid of figure 7.4.5) can be related to BU or TD actors and can therefore also be termed internal or externally motivated Dignity. In case of externally motivated Dignity, increased awareness for the context in which the protection pyramid operates makes both actors conscious of the possibility of PAP to develop. External Dignity is easier to recognise and act upon than internal Dignity. Internal Dignity requires more active vocalisation on the part of BU actors to allow PAP to develop.



*Figure 7.4.5:
Submerged Pyramid*

Manifestations of the Dignity Injection Column, the different representations of the Consecutive pyramids, the visualisations of the three protection elements within the protection pyramid and the PAP increasing effect of internal and external Dignity (figures 7.4.2 – 7.4.5) are all useful to increase BU and TD actors’ mutual understanding of how the other actor sees, values and uses the revised protection definition. To obtain the benefit of increased awareness, both actors need to be vocal about their needs and activities. Increased vocalisation on the part of both actors, increases awareness, which increases understanding which allows for BU/TD cooperation to take place paving the way for PAP and increasing IDP protection in PPA component four. Though all three elements of the revised protection definition can benefit from the positive effect of increased vocalisation, increased vocalisation within the Dignity element has the largest effect on the Revised Protection Definition. Vocalisation in the Dignity element has the largest influence on the extent to which BU and TD actors engage in PAP and contribute to increased IDP protection in PPA component four. This is why the Dignity Injection Column is included in figure 7.4.6. After figure 7.4.6, the impact of practice on theory is presented for PPA component five.

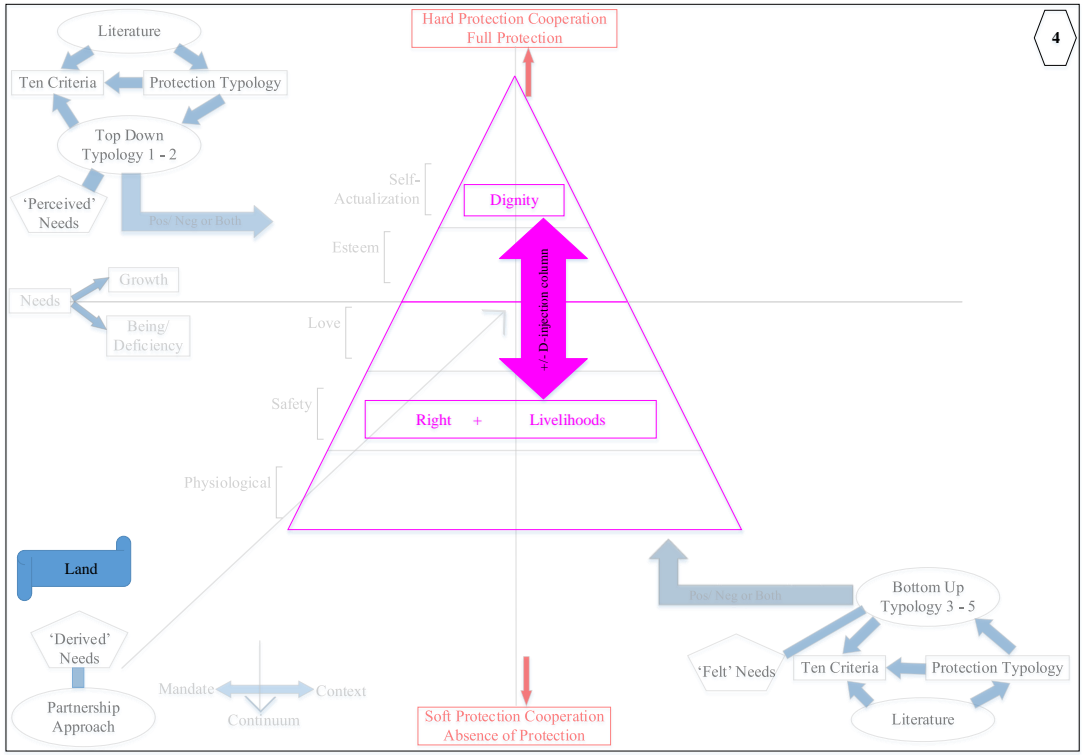


Figure 7.4.6: PPA Component Four - Revised Protection Definition

7.5 Component Five: International Human Rights Law

In chapter two it has been explained how International Human Rights Law should act as a *lingua franca* between BU and TD actors (while being aware of the discussions on the universality of IHRL and the lack of knowledge and access to rights). This section will determine the protective capacity of IHRL in the provision of IDP protection. The main focus of is to determine the extent to which PAP occurs between BU and TD actors in IHRL and IDP related laws (first two subsections). In the third subsection, the interrelation between the different legal frameworks is discussed, focussing on the level of BU/TD interaction allowing for PAP to occur. Any necessary adjustments to the theoretical manifestation of PPA component five will be represented in figure 7.5.2 at the end of the Discussion.

7.5.1 International Human Rights Law

In line with the observations in component four, both BU and TD actors in Colombia are more knowledgeable of and engaged with International Human Rights Law than their counterparts in Uganda. This means that there are more possibilities for PAP to develop in relation to IHRL in Colombia than in Uganda. In Uganda, the focus, especially amongst BU actors, is more on the entitlements of the laws than the actual laws themselves. BU actors in both case study countries indicated that their knowledge of IHRL increased following their displacement. In other words, many BU actors lacked this knowledge prior to displacement. This is problematic as they are in a worse position to claim their rights from TD actors, meaning that PAP does not develop and they suffer in their protection.

Amongst BU actors the ICESCR is mentioned and prioritised over the ICCPR, even though ICCPR, unconsciously, is used by BU actors in Colombia. The importance of ICESCR justifies its position at the base of the protection pyramid, creating a solid foundation upon which the rest of the pyramid can be build. Zooming in on the positioning of ICESCR in the base of the pyramid, BU actors allocate importance to the Right to Education. From a component five perspective, in which ICESCR is located at the base of the protection pyramid, the position of this right is in line with BU preferences. However, looking at the position of education in other protection components shows that, as education is not immediately life-saving, it is located in the top half of the protection pyramid. Nevertheless, from a PPA component five perspective, ICESCR Articles 13 and 14 pertaining to education are correctly located in the protection pyramid. Both BU and TD actors should be aware of this potential clash in the positioning of these rights, in order to ensure that PAP can develop in relation to education. At the same time, it should be pointed out that the positioning of education in the top of the protection pyramid in other PPA components is not wrong because BU actors' approach to the IDP crisis, is more future oriented, emphasising the temporary nature of the crisis and the importance for children to prepared for the post-crisis period. Other priority

rights (such Adequate Standard of Living, Work, Health Care and Freedom of Movement) are appropriately located in the base of the pyramid.

Another observation from the data is the importance of land. Both BU and TD actors across the case study countries have repeatedly mentioned the Right to Land. Such a right has not received formal recognition, but for the sake of providing protection it should be considered. This is also because the Right to Land is amongst the least fulfilled rights. Other non-recognised case study specific rights are Right to Inheritance (Uganda) and the Right of Non Repetition (Colombia). In both case studies these rights were threatened by non-rights related activities such as war.

Analysis of the data furthermore showed how the fulfilment of one right, threatened the fulfilment of one or more rights. In Colombian BU actors fulfilled their Political Rights (ICCPR Article 25) and by doing so threatened, amongst others, their Right to Life, Protection of Family and Adequate Standard of Living. In Uganda, the fulfilment of an entire Covenant, the ICESCR, was threatened by the political decision to label these rights progressive rights. This means that the fulfilment of ICCPR article 25 at national level, threatened the fulfilment of ICESCR. This phenomenon should, in the theoretical explanation of component five in chapter two, be flagged as a potentially threatening side-effect of rights fulfilment.

Finally, TD actors should fulfil the law but instead have ended up threatening it. Active threats relate to TD actors engaging in acts of war, while more passive threats to IHRL relate to failing to implement the law, fight corruption and end discrimination. These TD threats hamper the development of PAP and have a negative effect on IDP protection. In addition to the contribution of IHRL to IDP protection both countries have developed IDP related laws which are discussed in the next subsection.

7.5.2 IDP-related Law

Both case study countries have IDP related laws. Though Colombia has more far-reaching national legislation, Uganda has signed and ratified a regional IDP Convention in addition to its national IDP Policy. In both countries, however, implementation of IDP related laws is far from optimal. Similarly, to the problems with IHRL, the implementation of IDP law suffers from lack of political will, corruption and insufficient capacity. Once again shortcomings on the side of TD actors hamper the development of PAP. In Uganda, the lack of knowledge about IDP laws, both amongst BU and TD actors, is an additional problem. The problems in Colombia relate more to practical issues. Having said this, the Judicial branch of Government in Colombia, in response to multiple claims from BU actors, successfully contributed to increasing IDP protection. This shows that in Colombia at least some TD actors are willing and able to cooperate with BU actors to improve IDP protection by using PAP. The opposite can be observed in Uganda, where TD actors are fearful for claims once the Kampala

Convention is adopted in domestic legislation. What is needed in Uganda is awareness of IDP laws and activities ensuring that these laws are enforceable on the national level.

What is interesting is that TD actors have the opportunity to create the prerequisites for PAP to occur. They can do so by adapting international legislation (such as the Guiding Principles) to the needs of the national BU actors (IDPs). This puts a responsibility on TD actors to not only be knowledgeable on the Guiding Principles, but also about the needs of their own IDPs. Both have been lacking in both case study countries, though to a larger extent in Uganda than Colombia. The problem in Colombia is more related to the Government decision to treat IDPs as one amongst a number of conflict victims. In Uganda, where the regional Kampala Convention in practice is left to sub-national actors, IDP legislation is not set up to reach its highest protection potential. In any case, it is important that IDP related laws are set up at the most appropriate level and incorporate both national and international lessons learned from already existing IDP legislation. This, once again puts the burden of responsibility for enabling PAP to occur on TD actors. Having said this, PAP can never occur without BU actors. Instead of being passive, BU actors should be actively demanding PAP. This was observed in Colombia where BU actors pushed TD actors to create the possibilities for PAP by using *tutellas* leading to Constitutional Court Decision T-025. How this affects the theoretical representation of PPA component five is discussed in the next subsection.

7.5.3 Discussion Component Five

Starting with the interaction between the two Covenants, and their positioning within the protection pyramid, it was observed that ICESCR was adhered to more than ICCPR. This was the case even though TD actors expressed a greater interest in the latter. As TD actors did not accompany their interest with activities, on the contrary, even developing more ICESCR related activities, ICESCR was better fulfilled than ICCPR. In addition to this, both BU and TD actors in both countries, prioritised ICESCR rights more than ICCPR rights, creating PAP in ICESCR which positively contributed to IDP protection as the base of the pyramid is stable. Though this is positive, the case study data showed that more ICCPR related activities are needed because only when both Covenants are fulfilled IDPs can reach the top of the protection pyramid and be truly protected. The findings do however, justify the positioning of ICESCR at the base of the pyramid. It is not only desirable for ICESCR to be fulfilled first, but it is, in actual fact, fulfilled before ICCPR is. The only clear exception to this observation is ICCPR Article 12 concerning the Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence. As explained in chapter two, the nature of the BU population causes this right to be one of the key entitlements and therefore ICCPR article 12 is located in the base of the pyramid.

Nevertheless, in general, the empirical data has shown that the theoretical explanation of component five, in chapter two, is in accordance with the observations made in real life. Still, some slight adjustments need to be made. The most important of these relates to the

Right to Education. As this right belongs to ICESCR it should be located in the lower half of the pyramid. However, in chapter two, it was positioned in the top of the pyramid, as it was not considered one of the life-saving rights. This assumption needs to be adjusted as the data from the case study countries show that BU actors do prioritise this right. Therefore, in the discussion of the positioning of the rights of the two Covenants along the protection pyramid, ICESCR Articles 13 and 14 should indeed be located in the bottom half of the pyramid.

Another adjustment to the general rule of thumb which positioned ICESCR at the base and ICCPR at the top of the pyramid, applies to ICCPR Article Six, Right to Life. As an ICCPR right, this right should theoretically be positioned in the top of the pyramid. However, in a research population consisting of IDPs, this right is closely linked to the right to Freedom of Movement and Choice of Residence (ICCPR Article 12). In both case study countries BU actors had to utilise Article 12 because of Article 6. Due to the threats to their lives, BU actors were forced to flee. Therefore, the theoretical presentation of component five of the PPA, should clarify this linkages and position both rights in the bottom of the pyramid. In addition to this, it should be pointed out which role TD actors play in enabling PAP to develop (which is mostly positive in relation to education and mostly negative in relation to the Right to Life).

A potential problem exists with those rights which are represented by both Covenants, such as the rights relating to the protection of families and the freedom to form trade unions. It could be argued that because these topics are covered in both Covenants, the ICCPR manifestation of those rights should also be located in the lower half of the pyramid. The contents of the rights in both Covenants however, show that the ICESCR representation of those rights are more practical, urgent and should therefore be prioritised over the ICCPR representation. The general positioning of ICESCR at the bottom, and ICCPR at the top of the pyramid therefore still holds true. As a result, no changes are made to figure 7.5.2 presented at the end of this Discussion, with the aforementioned exceptions of ICCPR Articles 6 and 12.

One of the issues which received relatively little attention in the theoretical explanation of component five in chapter two is the interaction between International Human Rights Law and IDP laws. The case study countries, especially Colombia, showed that the two bodies of law mutually enforce each other. All elements for this to take place in Uganda are present, however this does not occur. This can be explained by the level at which the two bodies of law are located. In Colombia, IHRL and IDP Law both apply to the national level. In Uganda part of the IDP Law is located at regional level, which will only be applicable and enforceable at the national level once it has been adopted in domestic legislation, which has not occurred yet.

An additional important point relating to the connection between IHRL and IDP Law is that, even though IDP related laws are extremely important to IDP protection, they do not need to be represented separately in the protection pyramid. The reason for this is that, as much as possible, IDP related laws should be translated into national legislation. When this translation is done in a PAP way, the resulting legislation has an even higher protective

capacity because it, on the one hand, is adapted to the specialised, local needs of IDPs, and, on the other hand, improves BU/TD cooperation, both increasing IDP protection. The benefit of developing IDP specific legislation can be observed in Colombia where both bodies of law work together and mutually enforce each other. When IDPs felt, they were not well protected they used a national, non-IDP related, mechanism (*tutellas*) to force the Government to improve their protection. As such, BU actors engaged the (initially unwilling) TD actors into PAP, thereby positively contributing to their own protection.

At the same time, however, the Colombian case study shows how the principles behind the two bodies of law can create sub-optimal IDP protection. This situation can be observed within the Victim’s Law (Law 1448). In this law one of the basic principles of IHRL works to the detriment of IDP protection. Law 1448 is strongly based upon the IHRL principle of equality. All victims of the conflict can find redress for their suffering within Law 1448. As BU actors are often victimised in multiple ways, the Victim Law set up a one system in which all victims can be treated. Though the thinking behind the Victim’s Law is valid, it does have a negative effect on IDP protection, as IDPs are no longer treated as a special group with specific concerns. IDPs now need compete for the attention of TD actors with all other victims.

The division of TD attention is shown in figure 7.5.1. Combining IDPs with other victims decreases the opportunities for PAP to develop between BU (IDP) actors and TD actors as TD actors have to divide their attention over the different groups of victims, thereby decreasing the contribution to IDP protection.

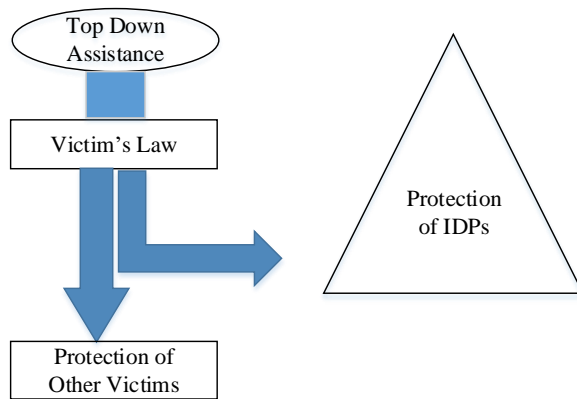


Figure 7.5.1: TD Assistance Divided Between IDPs and Other Victims

In conclusion, the above has shown why an elaborate explanation of the connection between IHRL and IDP Law, and how both bodies of Law mutually enforce each other, should be added to the theoretical component five in chapter two. In practice this means increasing the knowledge of IDP related laws, which is lower than knowledge about IHRL. TD actors should furthermore create the requirements for PAP to take place, while BU actors can seek opportunities to force TD actors to do so, increasing the manifestations of PAP and improving IDP protection. At the same time awareness, should exist of the fact that the rhetoric on ICCPR, often rings hollow and that instead ICESCR receives more attention than ICCPR. Improving general knowledge of all laws (at national, regional and international level) while ensuring that the means, desire and capacity to implement and challenge laws is present in a country will strengthen the protective capacity of component five. Visualising these

observations mean that, in addition to ICCPR article 12 (Freedom of Movement), ICCPR Article Six (Right to Life) should also be located in the base of the protection pyramid. ICESCR Articles 13 and 14 (Right to Education) are correctly located in the foundation of the pyramid, but awareness of possible clashes with their location at the top of the pyramid in other components should exist too. Ideally, a Right to Land should be recognised, but at least all actors should be aware of the importance of land to IDP protection. The next sub-section will record the most important observations regarding Giddens’ Structuration Theory.

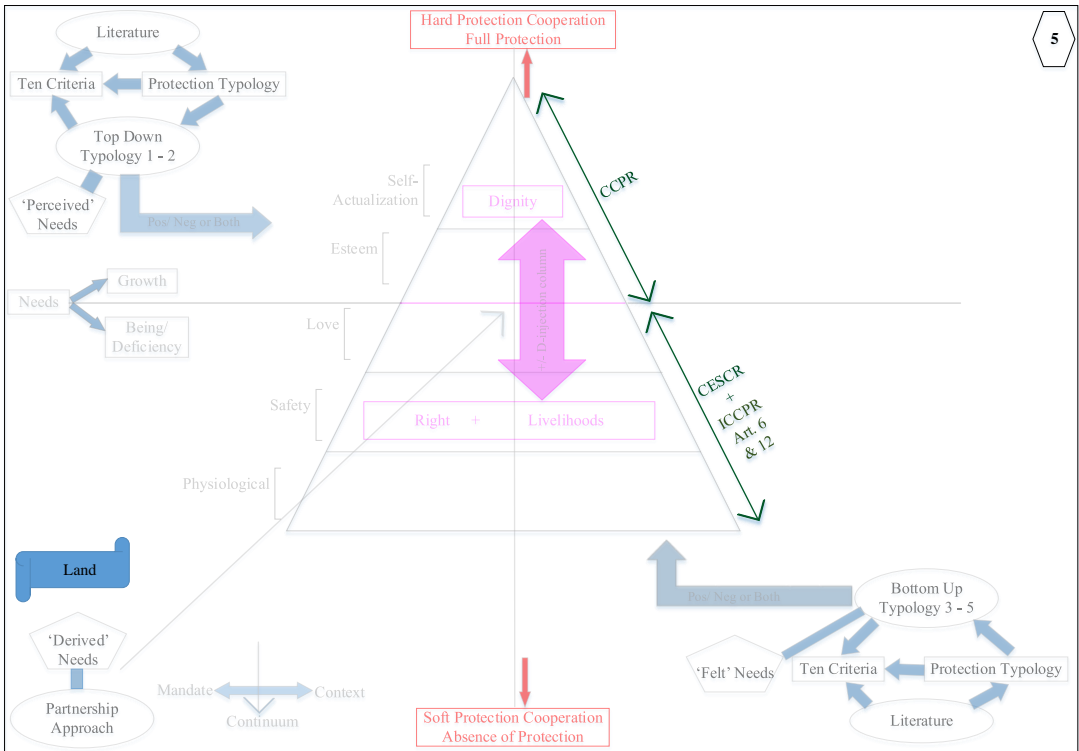


Figure 7.5.2 PPA Component Five - IHRL in the Protection Pyramid

7.6 Component Six: Giddens' Structuration Theory

Finding instances of the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) is the general aim of Chapter Seven. In Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) component six this aim is fulfilled by the identification of the concept of Duality of Structure, a key component of Giddens' Structuration Theory. The Duality of Structure relies on the interaction between Agency (A) and Structure (S) similarly to PAP being based upon the cooperation between Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) actors. In this section attention is paid to BU and TD actor's understanding of Agency, Structure and the Duality of Structure in both case study countries. Increased familiarity with these elements of Giddens' theory could improve BU and TD cooperation in PAP. The first subsection will focus on Agency and the second on Structure. In the third subsection, the interaction between Agency and Structure, leading to the Duality of Structure is discussed. According to Giddens, the interaction between A&S is influenced by other forces, such as time-space, ontological security, Coping and Self-Protection Mechanisms. By analogy, these factors influence BU and TD actors collaboration leading to PAP and increased IDP protection, which is discussed in the fourth subsection. In the final subsection, the interaction between all elements are analysed for possible adaptations of PPA component six.

7.6.1 Agency

Analysing BU and TD actors' understanding of Agency in both case study countries shows how Agency can be both positive and negative. BU actors do not aim for negative Agency but sometimes have to accept it for the short term to garner longer term benefits. Negative Agency will also be accepted when it harms the BU actor at individual level but benefits the individual at collective level. This acceptance of negative Agency, within both case study countries, is observed in relation to the family.

Further analysis of the empirical data showed how Agency is strengthened by internal and external stimuli. External stimuli are activities and goals such as food, having access to education or having one's rights fulfilled. The latter two examples of external stimuli can also be seen as bringing Structure to Agency (as indicated by the arrows on the right hand in the protection pyramid). Internal stimuli are for example increasing trust or self-esteem. When these stimuli do not exist, or are threatened this threatens the fulfilment of Agency.

The effect of external stimuli can furthermore have a direct or an indirect effect on Agency. War, for example, is a negative external stimulus (observed in both case study countries), having a direct effect on IDP Agency because it threatens IDP protection. Opposed to this is the example of providing food, which is an external stimulus which (in addition to having a direct positive effect on Agency by feeding people) has an indirect positive effect on the Agency of women. This refers to an example observed in Ugandan where women became

empowered by the fact that food was distributed to them, making them the family's breadwinner. Awareness of Agency did not only exist within BU actors but also in TD actors. TD actors, in both case study countries, offered Agency increasing activities to BU actors. The BU and TD actors' understanding of Structure are presented in the next subsection.

7.6.2 Structure

The analysis of the empirical data in both case study countries showed how Structure, in both countries, was enabling as well as constraining. This observation was in accordance with the way Structuration Theory is supposed to operate according to Giddens. Also, the rules and resources which make up Structure were noted in both countries. Having said this, other Structure related phenomena (not identified by Giddens) were seen in Colombia and Uganda. One of these phenomena was the observation of different substructures within Structure. These substructures can exist at horizontal or vertical levels. An example of a vertical Structure occurs when Structure consist of different substructures at different hierarchical levels. This was observed in Colombia, where the Victim's Law is replicated at different levels of Government. Additionally, the Victim's Law is also a horizontal Structure, in which different substructures exist at the same level. This is observed at the national level where the Victim's Law gives IDPs access to Assistance and Reparations as well as Land Restitution. These observations mean that, in addition to Giddens' writings about Structure, Structure is made up of the same substructure at different levels or different substructures at the same level.

Other observations relating to Structure, observed in both case study data, not explicitly mentioned by Giddens but implicit in his writing, is the changing nature of Structure. In the data, it was observed how the effect of Structure on IDP protection was not constant but changed over time. An initially enabling Structure could develop into a constraining Structure and vice versa. An example of this phenomena was seen in Uganda where the camps were set up as an enabling Structure by TD actors but later on became constraining Structures for BU actors. Therefore, the effect of Structure on IDP protection should be continuously monitored. Similarly, to Agency, Structure can also have a direct or indirect effect on IDP protection, as well as a short versus long term influence. The effects of Structure on IDP protection can be felt either directly or indirectly and can be long-lasting or only short term. Setting up food assistance is an example of a short term enabling Structure which directly increases IDP protection. Making *tutellas* is an enabling Structure which has an indirect, long-term effect on IDP protection because it aims to make structural changes. Moving along a continuum from enabling to constraining, a structure can be activated or not. This occurred in both countries where impressive IDP legislation was not being implemented. Constraining structures can be created out of omission, ignorance or actively. The effect of Structures on Agency and vice versa is discussed in the next subsection below.

7.6.3 Interaction Agency and Structure leading to the Duality of Structure

In chapter two it was explained that Agency and Structure are closely related. Agency relies on Structure and when there are problems with Structure this causes problems with Agency. In the case study countries, it has been observed how Agency has changed Structure, in other words, how BU actors have changed the activities of TD actors to bring them more in line with their preferences. When this activity increases BU and TD cooperation, PAP develops. In Giddens' terms this would mean that there is the potential for the Duality of Structure. Though PAP and DS are closely related, PAP can occur for a single purpose while a key characteristic of DS is its perpetual replication. A clear example of Agency in Structure resulting in a changed Structure (constituting both PAP and DS) are BU actors making *tutellas* in Colombia resulting in T-025 and the Victim Law. An example of an enabling Structure in Agency exists when TD actors enable access to education for BU actors.

No clear conclusion can be connected to the observation, in both case study countries, of the effect on the Duality of Structure when not all elements are similar (so either positive or negative) but different from each other (one element positive and the other negative). Opposing elements have been observed to counter each other, not affect the other or change the other element. Therefore, once it is observed that both elements are not similar, care should be taken to determine how the other element is influenced. This is especially important when Agency and Structure interaction leads to the recursive replication of Structure. In this situation, the way Structure is influenced by Agency determines the effect of the recursive replication of Structure, and hence the overall effect of the Duality of Structure. To summarise, if all elements within DS are positive, DS is positive, if all elements are negative, DS is negative. However, when the two elements within the Duality of Structure are not similar than the effect of their interaction on DS should be closely examined. Having said this, within the case study data, there seems to be a tendency for DS to become negative if one of the two elements is negative, but this is not always the case. The interesting thing about the Duality of Structure is that, in addition to the summary above, DS can also be negative when both Agency and Structure are positive. This occurs when a positive Structure does not replicate into a positive recursive Structure. An example of this was observed in Colombia where IDPs would use their Agency to make a declaration (Agency is positive). In order for IDPs to make this declaration the Victim's Law and UAOs/DC were developed, which are enabling Structures (Structure is positive). However, the interaction between Agency and Structure did not mean IDPs could access employment, the desired recursively replicated Structure. The replicated Structure is therefore constrained. Furthermore, the Duality of Structure can manifest itself at different levels ranging from the national level (for example in the UAOs/DC) to the local level (the family). The family is an actor which is of special importance in this research. Families are local Structures consisting of individual Agents and therefore, the family unit can result in local Duality of Structures.

The case study data has also revealed other interesting things about Agency, Structure and their interaction. Agency and Structure have interacted without creating a replicating Structure, so without creating the DS. This interaction is not covered by the Agency in Structure and Structure in Agency interaction, but is more in line with PAP. Furthermore, though Giddens maintains that DS is triggered by Agency, the research data show that DS can be set up by both BU or TD actors. Sustainability and the acceptance of the replicated Structure increases when DS is set up by BU actors, this is because TD actors are external actors. In addition to the initiating element being different, the research also showed that the benefitting element changes too. These different manifestations of the elements can be seen as additions to the theoretical representation of component six and will be further elaborated on in the final sub-section, the 'Discussion'. Observations about the other elements of PPA component six are presented below.

7.6.4 Other Elements of PPA Component Six

Another element which was observed by both BU and TD actors in both case study countries is time-space. Time-space grounds the activities of BU/TD actors in the Protection Pyramid Approach as it provides the context for activities. War can be seen as a negative constraining time-space, while certain activities or situations (like peace, freedom and equality) help push the constrained time-space back to its optimal frame in which the protection pyramid can develop to the fullest. The analysis of the case study data however, revealed that time-space has a different effect on groups and individuals in a society. This was observed, for example, in Uganda, where the negative constraining time-space of war had a different effect on men and women. Ideally, this should result in different protection pyramids for each group.

Given the important role time-space plays in IDP protection, a recommended change to chapter two is to link time-space to Giddens' concept of ontological security. The case study analyses have shown that a positive time-space increases ontological security while a negative time-space does exactly the opposite. This linkage also helps to explain why IDPs have reported insecurity in a seemingly positive time-space. This is because time-space is not only influenced by actual events (such as war) but also by perceptions. In addition, linking the two elements is in line with Giddens' general reasoning on the interconnection between Agency and Structure. Ontological security is linked to the concept of Agency (as its effects are mostly felt by BU actors), while, in most cases, time-space is influenced by TD actors hence Structure. Linking ontological security to time-space allows for A&S interaction.

In addition to Giddens' elements, PPA component six also paid attention to IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms. These mechanisms are related to IDP Agency and are therefore purely BU actors' activities. Nevertheless, these mechanisms create the possibility for PAP to occur. This happens when TD actors are aware of BU coping and self-protection mechanisms and are willing and able to tailor their activities to these mechanisms. When this

occurs then the interaction between BU and TD actors increases, paving the way for PAP and increasing IDP protection. Having said this, the analysis of the case study data has shown how the theoretical explanation of both coping and self-protection mechanisms should be refined.

In chapter two, it was discussed that coping mechanisms could be positive or negative. Identifying coping mechanisms in the case study countries showed that many other representations of coping mechanisms should be added. It is necessary to add more detail on coping mechanisms in order to be better able to identify them. Also, the difference between coping and self-protection mechanisms should be discussed more, while at the same time it should be clarified that it is not always possible to distinguish between the two. To explain the latter, making a declaration or a *tutella* can be utilised to access basic needs (therefore counting as a coping mechanism), or can be used to access education (making it a self-protection mechanism allowing BU actors to develop). Another difference between the two mechanisms is that, contrary to coping mechanisms, almost no negative self-protection mechanisms were observed. Self-protection mechanisms are generally positive or non-existent. This is because self-protection mechanisms are linked to the development of a BU actor and BU actors, in general, do not establish mechanisms that obstruct their development.

Coping mechanisms can be further broken down into those which have a short-term effect and those with a long-term effect. Coping mechanisms can be reversible or not, which can also be classified as the sustainability of coping mechanisms. In addition to this, coping mechanisms can be developed which are personal or emotional, practical and affecting single individuals or individuals within a group. Furthermore, coping mechanisms can be active or passive. Entrepreneurial coping mechanisms have been observed while many BU actors also relied on more traditional coping mechanisms involving support from family, chiefs or elders. Coping mechanisms are influenced by people or institutions and can differ between men and women. While coping mechanisms can be initially positive, they can become negative over the course of time (or vice versa). Both BU and TD actors are not always aware of the existence of coping mechanisms. This breakdown of different manifestations of coping mechanisms, as well as the differences between coping and self-protection mechanisms should be added to the explanation of PPA component six in chapter two.

The aim of IDP coping mechanisms is to prevent a downward movement in the protection pyramid. To prevent this downward movement BU actors use Giddens' Agency in Structure element. This means that BU actors work together with TD actors to create PAP and positively contribute to IDP protection. Opposed to this, self-protection mechanisms, generally, have an upward (hence protection increasing) effect. This is because if they have a protection decreasing effect BU actors would not engage these mechanisms as self-protection mechanisms aim to develop the individual. The interaction between the different elements of PPA component six is further elaborated on in the next subsection below.

7.6.5 Discussion Component Six

Analysing the interaction in the empirical data between the different elements of PPA component six showed a difference between the two case study countries. In Uganda, more elements were represented in their negative manifestation, while in Colombia most elements were represented both positively as well as negatively. An explanation for this can be found in the presence of an enabling Structure in Colombia. The positive effect of Structure has also been noted in the Agency and Structure interaction. In Uganda, there were more examples of Agency in Structure than Structure in Agency. BU actors were not able to develop Agency to the fullest extent, because of problems in Structure. Cooperation between BU and TD actors was lacking, negatively affecting the development of PAP and, as a result, IDP protection.

Regardless of the presence of an enabling Structure, BU actors in both case study countries had, at times, to compensate for TD activities (or lack thereof). This means that, in order to increase their protection, BU actors would try to develop PAP by taking on part of TD actors' activities. Rephrasing the above in Giddens' terms, Agency compensated for Structure, while trying to create the Duality of Structure. A difference between the case study countries was that BU actors in Colombia had more possibilities to compensate for TD actors' shortcomings than BU actors in Uganda. In Colombia, therefore, Structure is not only more enabling than in Uganda, but the Agency element in Structure is also better developed, reinforcing Structure. In Uganda Agency was negatively affected by the constraining Structure and weak as part of Structure.

In addition to BU actors using their Agency to compensate for shortcomings in Structure, multiple substructures can do so too. This means that the presence of multiple substructures is beneficial to IDP protection. Both countries have horizontally interacting substructures, but only in Colombia vertical interacting substructures were also present. This is one of the reasons why Structure in Colombia contributes more to protection than it does in Uganda. Having said this, all elements (including Structure) in both case study countries were negatively affected by the negative and constraining time-space. This negative time-space hampered BU/TD interaction, making it difficult for PAP to materialise and therefore limiting the possibility of BU/TD actors to contribute to IDP protection. War, therefore, in both countries, is an example of an external challenge to Structure. The two countries also suffered from different country-specific internal challenges to Structure.

In Uganda, the manifestations of PAP were lacking because of the presence of a constrained Structure which hampered the development of the Duality of Structure. However, in general, negative DS is not only caused by Structure being constrained but also by negative Agency. Discrimination is an activity, observed in both case study countries, which negatively affected both the Duality of Structure as well as the Partnership Approach to Protection. Discrimination is an example of TD actors actively working against the provision of protection to IDPs. The empirical data also show other examples in which TD actors negatively

contributed to IDP protection either by omission or neglect. In some cases BU actors have successfully compensated these TD shortcomings by using their coping mechanisms. The effort on the part of BU actors did however, hampered their ability to move on to utilising their self-protection mechanisms.

The extensive role BU actors played in their own protection should be explicitly noted. It shows the importance of Agency and Agency in Structure, to the extent that it would be possible to describe the effect as an Agency-injection column. This description will not be used as it is inherent in the Agency in Structure movement (represented by the arrow to the right in figure 7.6). Nevertheless, it is important to realise the powerful effect of Agency and see the similarity between effects of Esteem needs on Being Needs in PPA component three, and the Dignity-injection column on Rights and Livelihoods in PPA component four. BU actors, in both case study countries, have used their Agency to strengthen both Agency and Structure while TD actors (in both countries) have undervalued BU actors' Agency and coping mechanisms. TD actors therefore missed opportunities to cooperate with BU actors, thereby missing opportunities for PAP to develop and IDP protection to improve. BU and TD actors in both countries have not been able to find the optimal interaction between Agency and Structure in the Duality of Structure, negatively affecting PAP and IDP protection.

At the same time, the analysis of the empirical data showed that the Duality of Structure is not the only possible way Agency and Structure can interact to contribute to IDP protection. The analyses of the case study data has resulted in the realisation that other interactions between Agency and Structure take place, which are not captured in Giddens' Theory, therefore six additions are suggested. These additions, as well as, the Duality of Structure are schematically represented in table 7.6.1 below and will be explained afterwards.

Name	Abbreviation	Schematic Representation
Duality of Structure	DS	$A \rightarrow S \rightarrow S$ (recursive)
Incidental Duality of Structure	IDS	$A \rightarrow S \rightarrow S$ (not recursive)
Duality of Agency	DA	$S \rightarrow A \rightarrow A$ (recursive)
Duality of Structural Agency	DSA	$A \rightarrow S \rightarrow S \rightarrow A$ (recursive)
Non-Recursive DS or DSA	NDS/NDSA	$A \rightarrow S \rightarrow S (\rightarrow A)$ (not recursive)
Duality of Cooperational Structure	DCS	$S \rightarrow S \rightarrow A$ or $S \rightarrow S \rightarrow S$ (recursive)
ASA Cooperation	ASA	$A \rightarrow S \rightarrow A$ (not recursive)

Table 7.6.1: Duality of Structure and Additional Modes of Cooperation

In Giddens' Duality of Structure, Agency works together with Structure resulting in the recursive replication of Structure. The initiating element is Agency, but the emphasis is on Structure. The keyword in this interaction is 'recursive', which means that the Structure which is being replicated is replicated over and over again. In the case study data, however, examples were found in which a Structure was replicated for a single purpose. In Uganda for example, peer support groups (Agents working together in Structure) were set up with the single purpose of moving into animal husbandry. All the elements and interactions of DS were present in this

example, but the agricultural related peer support group moved on to focus on a different Structure, which is animal husbandry. This is an example of an Incidental Duality of Structure (IDS). Agency and Structure work together and replicate a structure serving only one purpose.

Another new phenomenon observed in the case study data has been called the Duality of Agency (DA). In the Duality of Structure, Agency was the initiating element. In the Duality of Agency, Structure takes on this role. In opposition to DS, in DA Structure works together with Agency in order to recursively replicate Agency. In DA, the goal is to continuously strengthen Agency. Therefore, while the starting point is Structure, the emphasis is on Agency. The Lifeprojects approach within the Dignifying Centres in Colombia is an example of the Duality of Agency. With the creation of the Lifeprojects approach, a Structure is created in which Agents are invited to work, with the aim to continuously strengthen Agency. A Lifeproject embarked upon by IDPs was for example to continue their education.

The Duality of Structural Agency is an adaptation of the Duality of Structure. Similarly to the Duality of Structure, the Duality of Structural Agency starts with the Agency element. The resemblance with the Duality of Structure continues when Agency interacts with Structure and then replicates Structure. It is at this point that a difference with DS is observed. In the Duality of Structure the emphasis is on the Structure element. However, in the case study data it was often observed that the ultimate goal of the replicated Structure was aimed at strengthening Agency. Therefore, in the Duality of Structural Agency the emphasis is on Agency. The recursiveness of DSA is found in Structure (it is the Structure which is recursively replicated) but for the benefit of Agency. An example of DSA can be seen in Colombia. There, DSA was observed in the Dignifying Centres. IDPs (agents) use their Agency to make a Declaration at the Dignifying Centres (Structures). In the Dignifying Centres, Structures are being recursively replicated for the benefit of Agents. Examples of these recursively replicated Structures are the ICBF which is safeguarding the protection of children or the Lifeprojects which assist IDPs to obtain employment.

The Duality of Structural Agency, similarly to Duality of Structure, contributes to IDP protection. The case study data even justifies a stronger statement. DS and DSA are prerequisites for IDPs to be protected. According to Giddens, Agency always needs Structure and vice versa, the two have to interact to reach the optimal result. The Duality of Structural Agency is the ultimate aim, because in DSA (contrary to DS) the benefitting element is Agency, hence the IDP. At the top of the pyramid IDPs are protected, meaning DSA is the preferred Duality. However, to get to this point, the different layers need both kinds of Dualities (DS and DSA). This means that for IDPs to move upwards in the pyramid, interaction between Agency and Structure resulting in both the Duality of Structure and Structural Agency, is needed within each layer, as shown in figure 7.6.1.

The Dignifying Centres, in addition to being an example of the Duality of Structural Agency as explained above, are in any case interesting from a PPA component six perspective. In addition to showcasing the DSA, they can also be used to explain the Duality of Cooperational Structure (DCS). The key characteristic of the DCS is the cooperation between different substructures. This cooperation can benefit either Structure or Agency. In the Dignifying Centres, different substructures are represented, such as the ICBF or the Colombian health representatives. The ICBF,

being a Structure in a Structure (the latter being the Dignifying Centres), aims to improve the wellbeing of families. As families are considered local Structures, DCS benefits Structure. Schematically this looks as follows: $S (DC) \rightarrow S (ICBF) \rightarrow S (Families)$. In the case of the Colombian health system, this Structure, also functioning within the larger DC Structure, benefits individual IDPs (Agency). Schematically this looks like $S (DC) \rightarrow S (Health System) \rightarrow A (IDP)$. Whether the benefitting element is Structure or Agency, the emphasis is on the cooperation between Structures. Giddens does not pay specific attention to the interaction between Structures, but this often takes place in reality. Also in Uganda both representations of DCS were observed.

In the ideal world, the different elements create a recursive element which continuously contributes to IDP protection. The recursiveness of the element is crucial, and should at least continue until an IDP is fully protected. However, in both countries Agency and Structure have worked together for the benefit of IDPs but without the recursive quality. This interaction is called ASA Cooperation. This interaction is different from Incidental DS and once-off Incidental occurrences of other interactions (DA, DCA or DCS). What is unique about ASA Cooperation is that it does not aim to be recursive. A Ugandan example occurred where an IDP (Agency) worked together with an NGO (Structure) to rebuild a house (strengthening IDP Agency). In Non-Recursive Duality of Structure and Duality of Structural Agency recursiveness is the goal but it is not reached. The key difference between NDS/NDSA and Incidental DS/DSA therefore, is the intention. Incidental DS/DSA never intended to continue existing. In NDS/NDSA the intention is to create recursiveness, however, it does not occur (for example due to a negative constraining time-space).

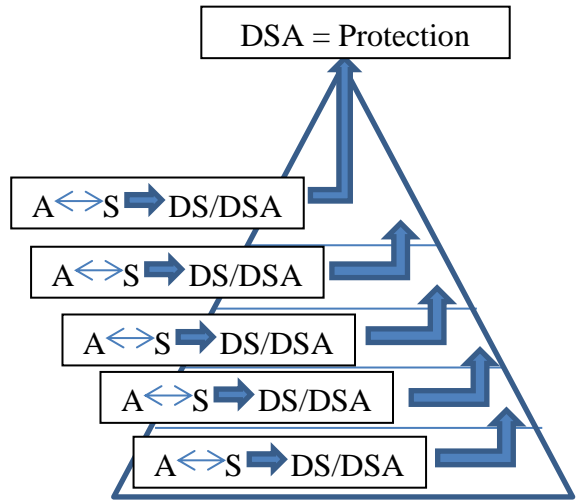


Figure 7.6.1: DS as prerequisite for movement upwards

ASA Cooperation, (Non-Recursive) DS/DSA, (Incidental) DS/DA, and the DCS are all interactions between Agency and Structure which were observed in the case study data. In each Agency and Structure interaction, BU and TD actors work together creating the possibility for the Partnership Approach to Protection to develop, allowing them to positively contribute to IDP protection. These new interactions, utilising and building upon the logic explained by Giddens' Structuration Theory, should be added to the theoretical representation of component six in chapter two and have therefore been included in figure 7.6.2. Whether or not component seven needs adjustments too will be dealt with in the next sub-section.

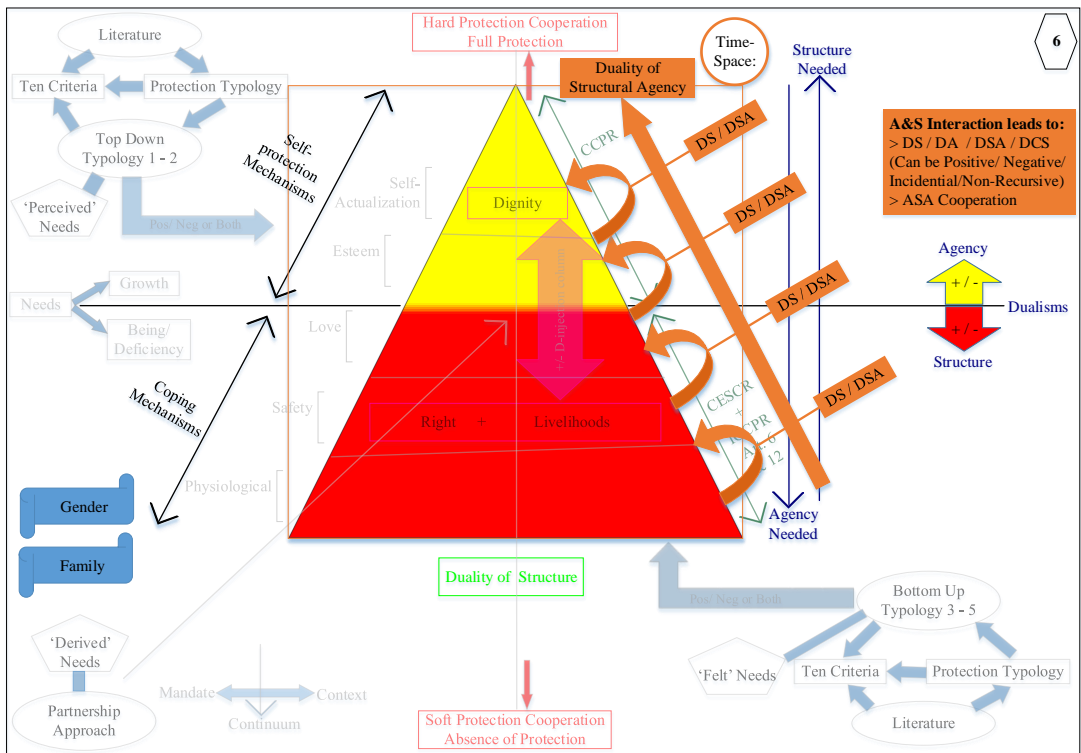


Figure 7.6.2: PPA Component Six - Structuration Theory

7.7 Component Seven: Phases of IDP Displacement

In component seven of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the focus shifts to the issue of displacement. In chapter two, it has been explained how displacement consists of three phases and how each phase is located in the protection pyramid. BU actors go through all phases of displacement before reaching the top of the protection pyramid where they are fully protected. This state of full protection is equated with a BU actor no longer being an IDP. Though BU actors are the ones moving through each displacement phase, TD actors greatly influence each phase. This is because TD actors' activities, or lack thereof, affect the ease with which BU actors move through the different phases, as well as the level of protection they enjoy. Additionally, in both case study countries, TD actors initiated phase one, forcing BU actors to become IDPs. Therefore, in this section, attention will be paid to the activities engaged in by BU and TD actors in the different phases of displacement, as well as the extent to which both actors interact. Positive interaction between BU and TD actors in the different phases allows for the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) to develop and IDP protection to increase. In the first subsection, the activities of BU and TD actors and their effect on IDP protection are analysed for each phase of displacement. In the second subsection, the observations and lessons learned obtained from the analysis are reconnected to the theoretical representation of component seven of the Protection Pyramid Approach.

7.7.1 Phases of IDP Displacement

Starting with the first phase of displacement, analysing the data obtained in both case study countries showed how this first displacement phase could be divided into two phases. In the literature on IDP protection, most notably the Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement, an IDP crisis is described as existing of three phases. These phases are displacement, being in the place a person displaced to and return. In both Uganda and Colombia, it was observed that IDPs often break down the first phase of displacement into two parts. IDPs, especially in Uganda, identify the actual moment of displacement as an important event. This actual moment of displacement is differentiated from the act of displacing. The moment of displacement determines the length, duration and method of displacement. If the moment of displacement is very sudden and IDPs are not able to bring anything this decreases the options they have during displacement. For some IDPs the moment of displacement influenced the decision to not displace far away because they wanted to remain close to their home to see if they could return, even if only temporarily to collect important possessions.

The empirical data in both countries also showed how the moment of displacement influenced the level of protection in the other phases. In both countries, BU actors were either explicitly warned about imminent displacement, or had reason to believe it would happen soon. In Uganda for example IDPs described how they saw nearby villages being destroyed, while in Colombia BU actors were sometimes given an ultimatum before which they had to

leave their house and land. In these cases, IDPs had time to pack and bring valuables with them. When this occurs IDPs start at a higher level within the protection pyramid, than when they have to flee for their lives.

Focusing more specifically on the traditional phase one, the data showed that there could be considerable time between the moment of displacing and arriving in the place a person displaces to. The act of displacing often includes multiple movements (in Uganda this included sleeping in the bush at night but still working the land near the house during the day, while in Colombia IDPs would first displace to nearby towns and later to larger towns where they would register). The case studies have shown that phase one is more complicated than suggested by the literature.

Comparing the empirical data of the two case study countries a marked difference can be observed in relation to displacement phase two. Though the starting level in both countries was similar, with many BU actors being farmers, the role of TD actors varied greatly. In Uganda IDPs stayed in a camp after their displacement, while in Colombia most IDPs fled to large cities. In Colombia BU actors contributed to their increased protection by finding a job. In Uganda, however, IDPs were not allowed to leave their camps and TD actors were responsible for IDP protection. TD actors both succeeded and failed at this. Part of the problem lies in the fact that the group of TD actors consists of different actors with different agendas. Some TD actors ensured IDP protection by providing food assistance, while other TD actors decreased IDP protection by attacking the camps and looting the food.

The complicated nature of phase one is, in a way, replicated in displacement phase three. This is because a similarly diffuse movement can be observed when IDPs return home. In Uganda, some family members would return while others remained in the camps to access assistance or education and health care facilities (which were still lacking in the return areas). This activity (of leaving family members in the camps) is protection increasing. This is in line with the general feeling that return is a positive development, with most IDPs in both countries wanting to return. However, analysing the empirical data collected in both countries, the return process, in many cases, led to a decrease in IDP protection. This is because return is seen as another displacement. Therefore, in line with the number and times of displacement arrows, this additional displacement leads to a downward movement in the protection pyramid away from full protection. In any case the empirical data underlined the functioning of both displacement arrows, as explained in chapter two. Observations which lead to changes within PPA component seven are discussed in the next subsection.

7.7.2 Discussion

In this subsection, the theoretical representation of PPA component seven presented in chapter two is, if necessary, adapted by the observations and lessons learned obtained from the analysis of the empirical data. One issue which was mentioned in the literature but observed

to a much larger extent in the empirical data pertains to the occurrence of different displacement phases at the same time. This phenomenon is connected to individual IDPs as well as the IDP population as a whole. In both cases, a situation is created in which some IDPs are already in phase two (or three), while others just enter phase one (or two).

In that sense the Ugandan case study is rather atypical as large parts of the population displaced at almost the same time due to the TD policies of encampment and decampment. Some IDPs also had to displace while already being displaced. In the literature, this is called secondary displacement. In the Protection Pyramid Approach this phenomenon is described in terms of phases, meaning that IDPs who are in phase two, fall back into phase one again. Examples of this were observed in Uganda were IDPs, who were staying in an IDP camp, were forced to flee because TD actors (the LRA) attacked their camp, moving back to phase one. This attack and the resulting displacement meant BU actors, once again, lost everything.

Another manifestation of the negative effect of combining phases of displacement occurs in relation to phase three. This links to the statement above, in which return is described as another displacement which negatively affects IDP protection. The intertwining of phases one and three occurred in both case study countries when TD actors engaged in (or enforced) phase three upon BU actors before phase two had been completed. This TD activity negatively affects IDP protection in two ways. Enforcing phase three on BU actors means that there is no cooperation between both actors, therefore PAP did not develop and IDP protection did not increase. The other way to show that IDP protection has decreased is by taking a normal protection pyramid (represented by the dotted pyramid in figure 7.7.1) in mind. In this pyramid the three phases of displacement occur as theoretically explained in chapter two. However, when TD actors engage in (or enforce) phase three before phases one and two have been completed, phase three occurs at the same time as the other phases creating a protection pyramid which is not as high as the dotted pyramid. Different phases of displacement occurring at the same time, can happen in each displacement phase.

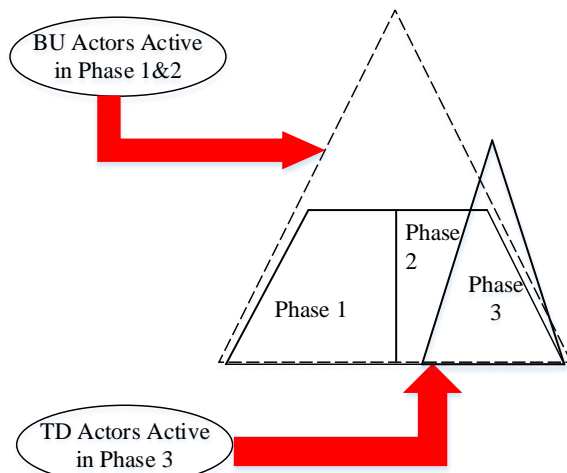


Figure 7.7.1: Effect on Protection Pyramid of TD Actors Engaging in Phase Three while BU Actors are still in Phase Two

The importance of paying attention to the individual phases leads to another observation. In the theoretical description of component seven, the three phases of displacement were presented within the protection pyramid. When component seven was applied to the case studies it became apparent that, rather than being part of one pyramid, the phases should be presented in consecutive form. This means that in each phase an IDP moves through a whole protection pyramid. Once reaching the top of the pyramid, an IDP moves to the next phase (represented by another protection pyramid), until the IDP reaches the top of phase three where an IDP reaches the ultimate goal, which is no longer being an IDP. The top of each phase pyramid represents the highest possible protection level for an IDP in that phase. The highest form of protection for an IDP in phase one, it to arrive at the displacement place (which can be a camp, like in Uganda, or a large town in Colombia). Once arriving at the place of displacement, the IDP finds out that he is struggling again to survive, which is represented by the IDP being at the bottom of the phase two protection pyramid (left part of figure 7.7.2). When the situation at the displacement place is acceptable, then the top of the phase one protection pyramid ends within the phase two protection pyramid (right part of figure 7.7.2). The same two options are available to an IDP moving from phase two to phase three. This dynamic, in which IDPs move through a whole protection pyramid before entering the next phase of displacement can be described with the concept of Consecutive Protection Pyramids. This concept maintains that IDPs move through a whole protection pyramid in each phase of displacement. Both representations of the three phases of displacement have their own benefits.

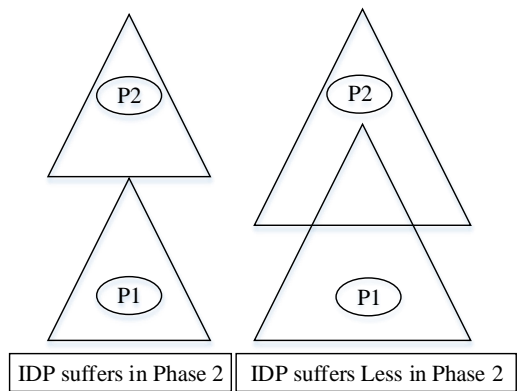


Figure 7.7.2: Displacement Phase 1&2 Protection Pyramids

Building upon the idea of Consecutive Protection Pyramids, the case study data in Uganda (where all three phases of displacement have occurred), showed that the shape of each consecutive pyramid differs from the other. In the unlikely event that each displacement phase takes an equal amount of time, the three consecutive displacement phase protection pyramids would look like the left representation of figure 7.7.3. In the case of Uganda, each displacement phase took a different amount of time. Adapting the base of each displacement phase protection pyramid to the duration of that phase, leads to the representation, in figure 7.7.3, to the right. These Consecutive Protection Pyramids, give a more realistic overview of the situation in Uganda than the generic one (on the left) does. This is why, in the theoretical presentation of component seven, the Consecutive Pyramids should be adapted to the duration of displacement in each phase.

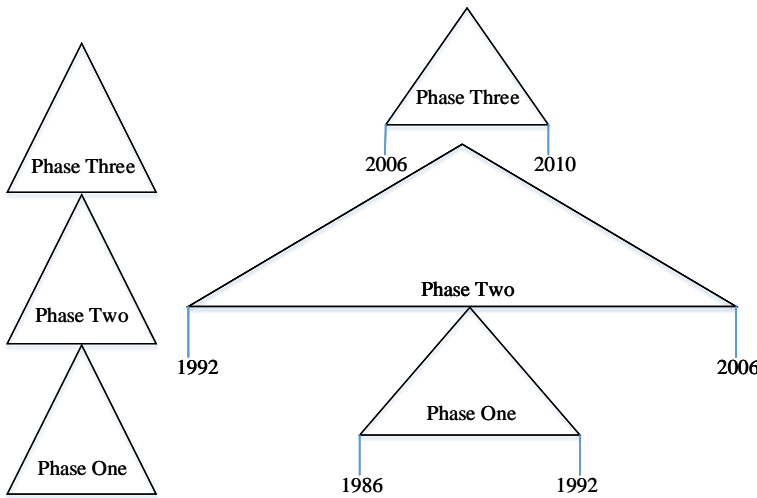


Figure 7.7.3: Displacement Phase Consecutive Protection Pyramid (left=theory, right=Uganda case study)

phases IDPs indicated different needs, capacities and concerns, each affecting IDP protection differently. For example, the level of knowledge IDPs had about their rights in the first displacement phase influenced IDP protection in all subsequent phases. As the provision of knowledge about rights is often provided by TD actors, this activity positively contributes to IDP protection because it is based on the PAP.

It was also observed how IDPs had different professions in the different phases. Analysing the capacities of IDPs this was influenced by whether IDPs were able to bring something or not, whether they were provided with any assistance, whether this assistance was in-kind or mobile and whether it focused on the short or long term. Bringing, or receiving, goods in phase one would impede flight or pose additional security risks to IDPs. In phase two or three, IDPs were provided with indivisible, immobile and long-term goods.

In conclusion, if TD actors want to improve protection in the displacement phases, BU's needs, capacities, preferred goods and concerns have to be considered by both BU and TD actors. This means both actors should continuously look for ways to improve their cooperation because this allows for PAP to develop which has the potential to positively influence IDP protection. This realisation should be included in the explanation of the theoretical PPA component seven, apart from that no visual changes are made to figure 7.7.4. Other changes to the way the theoretical protection pyramid functions are discussed in the next section on PPA component eight. First however, the protection pyramid belonging to PPA component seven is shown in figure 7.7.4 below.

In addition to observations relating to the interaction between displacement phases, the analysis of the empirical data also showed how goods, services and actors influenced IDP protection within the different displacement phases. Lessons which can be learned from that analysis are that in the displacement

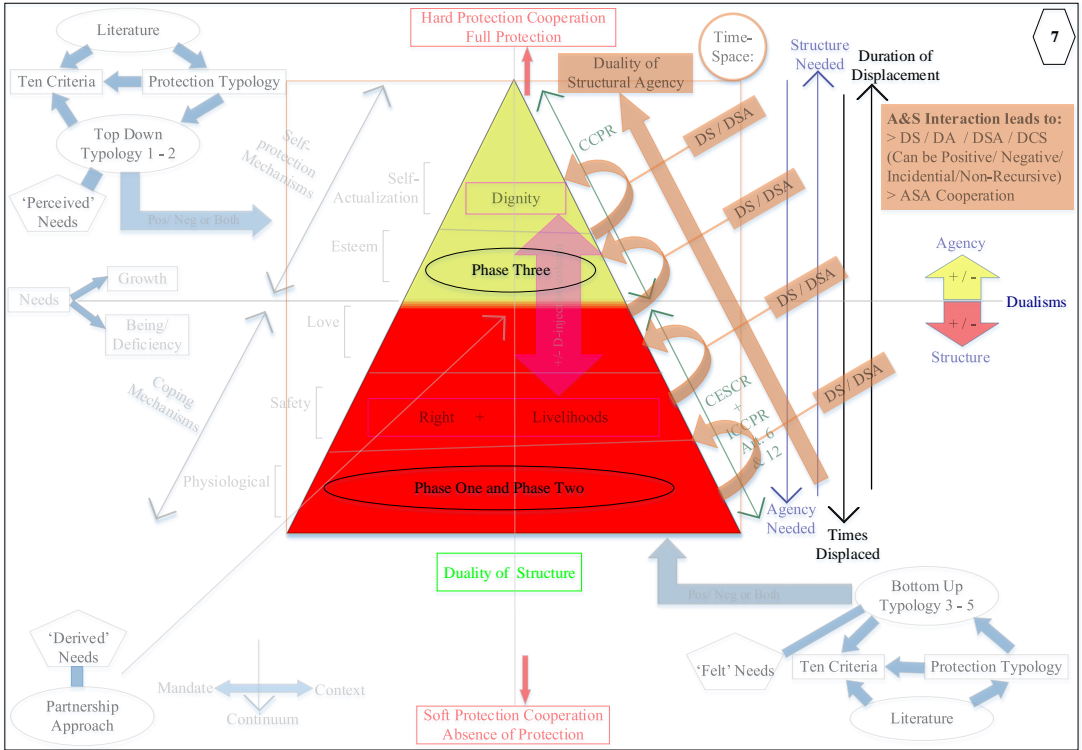


Figure 7.7.4: PPA Component Seven - Three Phases of Displacement

7.8 Component Eight: Feedback of PPA to BU and TD Actors

In the final component of the Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) the lessons which can be learned from the interactions between all PPA components is discussed. This is done in the first subsection through an inter-component analysis. The aim of this analysis is to contribute to increased IDP protection. This is done by increasing the awareness and possibilities of BU and TD actors working together within the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP). Up till this point instances of PAP have only been identified within PPA components (intra component). In the inter-component analysis, new possibilities for PAP can arise as activity by one actor within one component can be built upon by activities of the other actor in other components. With eight components, many more possibilities for PAP exist than at the intra-component level. To ensure that these cases of PAP materialise, it is important to make BU and TD actors aware of the possibilities of interaction which is done in the second subsection.

Within the second subsection, the lessons learned are fed back to BU and TD actors as recommendations. As the feedback to BU and TD actors constitutes the final changes to the PPA, this subsection will also introduce the final protection pyramid (figure 7.8). Figure 7.8 shows all the changes that are made to the individual PPA components, based on the analysis of the empirical data collected in both case study countries from both actors, and discussed in the previous sections. Figure 7.8 connects all the lessons learned to the theoretical representation of the protection pyramid presented in chapter two. The result is a protection pyramid in which theory and practice mutually reinforce each other. Similarly, to chapter two the figures belonging to the individual PPA components contain more detail than what is necessary for the representation of the components in the combined PPA figure (figure 7.8). This extra information has always been shown in blue boxes and information rolls, most of which are omitted for clarity in figure 7.8. For more details on any of the components the reader is advised to return to the discussion of the protection pyramid in the previous corresponding sections.

7.8.1 Inter-Component Analysis Discussion

In this subsection, the ways in which the different components influence each other is discussed. This is done by analysing how the different components or their elements work together, strengthen each other, fill gaps and provide clarifications. Though all PPA components are necessary to contribute to IDP protection, the analysis of the empirical data has also clarified how certain components or component elements play a key role in IDP protection. Though not presented in chronological order, the first observation pertains to component one. Analysing the application of PPA by both actors in the case study countries has led to the realisation that component one is a crucial first step, clearing the way for the other components to contribute to protection. Component one not only determines the existing

level of IDP protection in a country by clarifying the protection culture and context, it also shows how well BU and TD actors are aware of and agree on it. The more they are aligned, the greater the chance for the Partnership Approach to Protection to materialise. Misunderstandings in component one decrease the functioning of the other protection components, and therefore decrease BU and TD actors' contribution to IDP protection in those components as well. The level of understanding by both actors in PPA component one therefore determines the functioning of all remaining PPA components.

Two component elements which play a key role in IDP protection are Dignity and Agency. Based component two, BU actors see a significant role for themselves in their own protection which strengthens the link between Dignity and Agency. The two elements are also located within the same part of the protection pyramid further reinforcing each other. Taking this linkage back to the theoretical level means that in addition to the Dignity-injection column (one of the main findings of component four) it would be possible to also identify an Agency-injection column. However, this Agency-injection column is not identified because it is covered by the Agency in Structure arrow (shown in figures 2.4 and 7.4.6). The connection between Agency and Dignity is even more important when keeping in mind that both are strongly related to the elements within their respective components. Dignity is the outcome of the interaction between Right and Livelihoods, while Agency is in Structure and together with Structure leads to dualities.

In addition to Dignity and Agency, layer four (Esteem Needs) within PPA component three (Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory) fulfils a similar function within the protection pyramid. In the same way as Dignity and Agency respectively influence Rights, Livelihoods and Structure, a strongly developed Esteem Needs helps fulfil the lower level Being Needs. The reason why an Esteem-Needs-injection Column is not suggested is because this downward movement goes against the logic inherent in Maslow's theory. Nevertheless, all three elements (Dignity, Agency and Esteem Needs) have a positive effect on the lower halve of the protection pyramid. The fact that these three elements relate to BU actors shows how BU actors contribute to their own protection. Though Agency and Esteem Needs are not depicted with their own injection column, their influence is captured by the Dignity-injection column of component four, making the Dignity-injection column additionally important to IDP protection. It shows how the Dignity-injection column supersedes the component level and functions at the inter-component as well as the intra-component level.

The BU actors are however, not the only actors contributing to IDP protection. TD actors also play an important role in providing protection. The more aware TD actors are about BU's needs, the more possibilities exist for PAP to develop. Building upon this TD awareness, if TD actors are more open to the fact that BU is not a uniform actor, TD actors can develop a more versatile approach to deal with the differences in needs. This would include creating protection pyramids for the different groups of BU actors. The cooperation between BU and TD actors leading to PAP is replicated and strengthened by BU/TD interaction in the different

components. PAP is replicated in component two's 'Derived Needs', as well as the Dualities in component six. In these Dualities, Agency and Structure mutually influence each other, leading to DS, DA, DSA and DCS.

The inter-linkages between the components also help solve problems. For example, 'fear' has been identified by BU actors in both case study countries as an issue decreasing their protection. Taking Colombia as an example, BU actors have expressed fear when making a declaration. In some cases, their fear even prevented them from making the declaration in the first place. Solving the problem of fear can be done by utilising different PPA components. From a component two perspective BU actors can express the diminishing of their fear as a 'felt' need, while TD actors can indicate awareness of BU actors' fears in the perceived' needs. When fear is mentioned by both actors, fear can be taken up within 'derived' needs and solved by BU and TD actors working together in the PAP.

Additionally, fear can be indicated as a hindrance to IDP protection when locating IDP needs and concerns within Maslow's protection pyramid. When both actors agree that fear relates to the Safety Needs, both the actors, through the roadmap the pyramid provides, know how to solve the problem of 'fear'. Fear can also be solved by utilising component four. Fear is an emotion experienced by BU actors, which influences their Dignity. While TD actors might not be able to directly influence BU actors' dignity (though they could by offering psycho-social assistance) they, in any case, can strengthen the Rights element within component four, and as such try to diminish fear. Finally, fear can also be approached from component six. BU and TD actors can each strengthen their respective PPA component element (meaning BU actors should focus on Agency while TD actors should focus on Structure) and increase the interaction between these two elements in DA or DSA. Alternatively, TD actors could work on diminishing the negative constraining time-space which is present in both case study countries and is responsible for BU actors experiencing fear. What this example of fear shows is that BU and TD actors have different alternative solutions to solve the problem of fear by utilising the different components of PPA.

The problem of 'fear' is just one problem BU and TD actors have highlighted in relation to the fulfilment of (or challenges to) IDP protection. The fact that multiple problems challenge IDP protection is seen most clearly in component three (Maslow), as the analysis of the empirical data showed how each layer consists of multiple topics. Interestingly, while BU and TD actors can agree that a certain layer should be promised, they can completely disagree on what to prioritise within a layer. Therefore, looking at BU and TD actors' priorities only from the point of view of Maslow will hide potential clashes between BU and TD actors. Only when other components of the PPA are added to the analysis, the differences in prioritisation between the two actors will become clear.

Another issue which helped understand the dynamics of a protection crisis is the 'Logic of the Consecutive Protection Pyramids' observed in both case study countries. This logic involves protection components three, four and seven and shows a marked change in

relation to chapter two. In component four and seven, the logic of consecutive pyramids exists both at the element, as well as, the component level, while in component three it only applies to the whole protection pyramid. Component four consecutive pyramid logic at element level means that in each displacement phase each of the three elements is depicted in an individual protection pyramid, which are put in consecutive order. Applying the protection pyramid logic to the component level means that the entire R/L/D pyramid is replicated in each phase of displacement. In component seven BU actors go through all the elements of the previous components (one till six) for each displacement phase. This means that regardless of the displacement phase, the protection context and culture needs to be determined (component one), IDPs' needs, capacities, desires and challenges need to be defined and fulfilled (component two). At that point it is possible to ascertain in which layer of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid they are (component three). IDPs' knowledge on Rights has to be established, their Livelihoods fulfilled and their Dignity respected (component four), for which the ICCPR and ICESCR can be useful (component five). Finally, the extent to which IDPs can use their Agency to influence Structure, how they benefit from Structure, are able to create Dualities and move from their coping to self-protection mechanisms in, what might be a negative constraining time-space, also determines whether IDPs can move on to the next phase of displacement. The use of all PPA components justifies the representation of component seven in both in a Consecutive Protection Pyramid logic or by theoretical visualisation of component seven in chapter two.

Approaching component four at the level of its elements helps understand other elements of the PPA as well. Looking at the physical location of Rights in the protection pyramid it can be observed how Rights relate to Structure. In component four it was explained how IDP protection is increased if the three elements (R/L/D) are shown according to their relative size vis-à-vis each other. The relative size of Rights compared to Livelihoods (also located in the base of the pyramid) says something about the extent to which Structure is enabling. If the Rights element is small, Structure is likely to be constraining. Having said this, a strong Rights element unfortunately does not translate one-to-one to an enabling Structure. This is because Rights is linked to Livelihoods. In other words, a strong Rights element does not translate into an enabling Structure if Rights are not implemented (i.e. when Livelihoods are weak). Not only does the relative size of an element provide an indication of the importance of other elements (such as the link between Rights and Structure indicated), showing Rights by their relative importance within a protection pyramid allows for comparison between different case study countries.

In component four, five and two information rolls were added to the component figures to show the importance of certain topics. It is important to keep these component-specific points of attention in mind when utilising the specific PPA components. In the literature gender has been identified as a cross cutting theme. In PPA it is suggested to move away from cross-cutting themes or component specific information rolls, but instead add

awareness and communications as two overarching points of attention. Having pre-determined cross-cutting issues prevents BU/TD from being open to case study or component specific issues. Adding awareness and communications to PPA forces BU/TD to look at the case study or component at hand and determine which cross cutting issues apply in the specific protection culture and context. One of the reoccurring cross-component issues is land. The issue of land causes a problem for several components, including components four and five, as there is no recognised Right to Land. Without a legal right, the issue of land cannot be addressed. However, the issue of land can be dealt with in other components (such as component two, three and six). The PPA enables BU and TD actors to deal with issues which cannot be solved within one component, by focusing on other components.

In general, protection can be improved by increasing Rights awareness, for example by utilising the Rights-based approach and explaining the Responsibility to Protect. When the Rights awareness increases before displacement, BU actors benefit from their increased Rights knowledge throughout displacement. In addition to having more knowledge, BU actors should also have the means, desire and possibilities to implement or challenge laws. BU actors rely on TD actors to increase the possibilities for this (as TD actors did in Colombia). The interaction between BU and TD actors which develops as a result paves the way for the PAP to materialise, positively contributes to IDP protection. In addition to component two, the fulfilment of component five can also rely on component six. This occurs when TD actors develop enabling Structures enabling BU actors to use their Agency. The presence of both Agency and Structure allows for the different Dualities to develop, which can positively influence IDP protection.

The fact that IDP protection can be increased by solving problems in one component by utilising the logic inherent in another component also applies to the direct and indirect effect of Agency within component six. IDP Agency can have an indirect effect on IDP protection because war, which is explained as a negative layer two (Safety needs) constrains IDPs' education and therefore, indirectly, their Agency. In any case war is a good example of a phenomena which influences most protection components. War negatively influences the protection context and culture (component one), it prevents PAP from developing between BU and TD hampering the identification of 'derived' needs (component two) and is a negative manifestation of layer two within component three. In component four, war even negatively influences all three elements, which it also does to the two elements of component five. War is the reason for component seven. Rather than describing all these effects of war, war can better be depicted as a negative constraining time-space belonging to component six. This time-space surrounds (and therefore influences) all components within the protection pyramid. This is why Giddens' concept of time-space, linked to ontological security, is of key importance to PPA and the protection of IDPs. Having said this, whether or not a time-space, and therefore an IDPs' ontological security is positive or negative, also depends on the perception of the IDP. Different IDPs can perceive a security situation differently. How an

IDP perceive a situation is linked to their Agency and fulfilment of layer four (Esteem needs). Related to this is the concept of Dignity. This means that, when determining the time-space for a protection pyramid, attention should not only be paid to TD actors' contribution to this time-space but also to BU actors' perception of it.

The perception of BU actors is, amongst other things, influenced by BU's coping mechanisms. Coping mechanisms are BU activities dealt with in component one and six. The reason why coping mechanisms are dealt with in both components is because their contribution to protection is different in each component. In component one TD actors' awareness of Coping mechanisms is tested, giving an indication of the protection culture and context. In component six TD actors can strengthen BU's coping mechanisms, allowing PAP to materialise and in that way, contribute to IDP protection.

In summary, it can be observed how the analysis of the empirical data collected in both case study countries from both BU and TD actors has led to a number of lessons learned. When these lessons are reconnected to the PPA as represented in chapter two, this will lead to an improvement of the Protection Pyramid Approach. In this subsection, the inter-component interactions, derived from the empirical data collected in both case study countries from both actors has indicated how PPA can be improved. The theoretical representation of PPA is improved by the lessons learned from the practice of providing IDP protection in reality. However, the extent to which this analysis actually contributes to IDP protection is largely determined by the way in which BU and TD actors incorporate the suggested changes, which enable them to function more in line with PAP in the different PPA components, and hence contribute to IDP protection. This is why the lessons learned in this subsection are presented as recommendations to BU and TD actors in the next subsection.

7.8.2 Feedback BU and TD actors

In the previous chapters PPA has been applied to the case study countries to determine if and how IDPs are protected. In this subsection, the suggested changes to the different PPA component are summarised in figure 7.8 and fed back to BU and TD actors. This is done to indicate to both actors how they can improve their contributions to IDP protection.

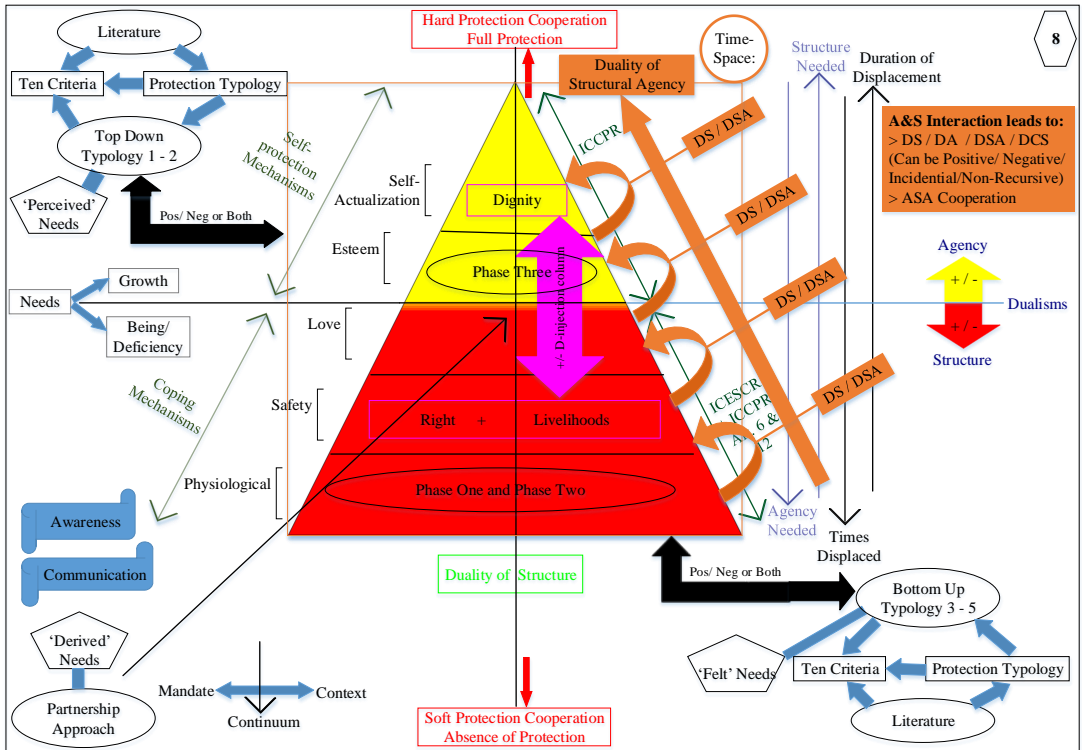


Figure 7.8: PPA Component Eight – Component Interaction and Feedback Mechanisms

The feedback which holds true for both BU and TD actors, based on the analysis of component one, is that the more vocal BU/TD actors are about protection needs, capacities, desires and challenges, the higher the protection potential of all PPA components. In addition to being more vocal, BU and TD actors should also be more aware of the impact of their own activities, the activities of the other actor and the interaction between both. In some cases, this increased awareness results in the necessity to develop individualized, customised protection pyramids. In the data chapters, customised protection pyramids have been created for males and females, but the blue information rolls in component two show that other pyramids should be created too. Instead of listing all information rolls in figure 7.8 BU and TD actors should increase their awareness and communications. If BU and TD actors, in all their activities and interactions, increase their awareness of communication with the other actor, IDP protection will improve significantly. Land is one of these issues which both actors should be aware of.

The awareness information roll also serves another purpose. In the previous subsection, it has been explained how different elements of different components relate to each other. The awareness information roll encourages BU and TD actors to start seeing these linkages. This increased awareness for inter-linkages helps both actors to be more conscious of the impact (or lack thereof) of their activities. In addition to this, the linkages help identify

effects which might otherwise have been unrecognised because they were overlooked. For example, TD actors might be aware of the Agency increasing effect of education. If they, as a result of increased awareness of inter-element-linkages, would acknowledge the linkage between Agency and Dignity, they could, with only limited additional effort, greatly increase the protection potential of their activity because they strengthen Agency and Dignity at the same time. When BU and TD actors are more aware of the positive effect of inter-component and inter-element interaction BU and TD actors are more likely use this inter-component/inter-element approach. If TD actors in Colombia, for example, might have decided differently if they had been aware of BU actors' 'felt' needs about being treated together with other victims in Law 1448, how this is perceived by them as decreasing Dignity and Agency and making it more difficult for them to fulfil their Being Needs. Perhaps unaware of the impact of their activities on BU actors, TD actors decreased the protective potential of the enabling Structure they developed when setting up the Victim's Law.

Awareness and increased use of the linkages between the different elements improves protection. Additionally, using different components when analysing a protection crisis ensures that BU and TD actors are aligned. This is because analysing a protection crisis from only one point of view gives an incomplete overview of the needs, capacities, challenges and desires BU and TD actors have in a specific situation. BU and TD actors should therefore use all components of PPA to contribute to improving IDP protection.

On top of utilising all PPA components, BU and TD actors should differentiate between the presence of a component (or its elements) and their contribution to protection. This difference between presence and contribution was observed in component four. Rights might be present but if they are not implemented the contribution of this element of the Revised Protection Definition is small. The lack of Rights implementation means that the presence of the Rights element does not automatically contribute to protection. Keeping in mind that TD actors are the ones responsible for providing a strong Rights element, this is something they should be aware of. At the same time, this is something BU actors should be vocal about too, as they, as rights-holders, should also contribute to their own protection.

BU and TD actors should also be aware of the PPA-internal discussion on the positioning of the Right to Education. The location of this Right changes depending on the PPA component utilised (it is either located in the bottom or top half of the pyramid). In general BU and TD actors should be aware of the constant link between the two halves of the pyramid, as both are needed to ensure IDPs are fully protected.

A key realisation of chapter seven is the fact that the Protection Pyramid Approach is an approach which can be used not only for IDP Protection, but for any protection deprived group. TD actors are therefore recommended to be aware of the different groups of BU actors both within a case study country as well as within an identified target group. Paying attention to the different target groups within an identified population influences how self-actualisation, Dignity and the Duality of Structural Agency, i.e. the top of the pyramid looks like. In the case

of IDP protection the top of the pyramid means that BU actors are no longer IDPs. However, if the target group consists of rural poor people, then the top of the pyramid might mean that a BU actor belongs to the middle-income class. In any case, being aware of different groups within a population also means being aware of the differences within groups. TD actors should realise that BU actors can consist of many different groups, with different perceptions and prioritisation; they do not constitute a homogenous group.

More attention should also be paid to phase one of component seven. This phase is more complicated than suggested by the literature, actually consisting of an additional 'phase', which is described as the 'moment of displacement'. In addition to this, the term secondary displacement is not used in the PPA. Instead it is recommended that actors specify in which phase a displacement occurs. By utilising the phase terminology, for example saying that an IDP is re-experiencing phase one, clarifies the needs an IDP will have, as phase one needs are markedly different from other phase needs.

In conclusion, the recommendations to BU and TD actors suggested in this subsection contribute to the success of the Protection Pyramid Approach. Key amongst the recommendations is the necessity for increased awareness, communication and the inter-linkage between protection components or their elements. For PPA to function optimally BU and TD actors should use all PPA components. The complex reality of crisis does not allow for single component analysis. BU and TD actors should also aim to develop PAP where possible as this will positively influence IDP protection. Finally, though the Protection Pyramid Approach can be represented by the figure 7.8, parts of the PPA also occur in consecutive form. The 'Logic of Consecutive Pyramids' is therefore a useful addition to the Protection Pyramid Approach which will ensure that the PPA provides protection to whatever deprived group it is focused on. The way the intra and inter interaction at component and element level have increased BU and TD actors cooperation in the Partnership Approach to Protection is determined in the conclusion of this chapter, presented below.

7.9 Conclusion

The aim of this chapter was to analyse the interaction between BU and TD actors, feeding the empirical analysis into the newly developed theory, in order to produce suggestions on how to improve IDP protection. This has been summarised in the fourth sub objective: *'to make recommendations on further improving the way in which IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors can contribute to increased IDP protection by building on their individual activities as well as utilising an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection'*. In order to make recommendations the theoretical representation of the Protection Pyramid Approach (chapter two) has been applied to real-life protection crises in Uganda and Colombia (chapter four and five). The interaction between BU and TD actors, especially when leading to PAP (chapter six) have been re-inserted into theory (chapter seven).

The interface between theory and practice can be visualised by the symbol for infinity. This is because theory and practice should continuously influence each other. Therefore, the protection pyramid showing all PPA components based on chapter two (figure 2.8) should be applied to and informed by reality (shown by the middle of the infinity symbol). By doing so an improved and case study customized protection pyramid (showing all PPA components) develops. For this research, based on the empirical data collected in Colombia and Uganda this protection pyramid is shown by figure 7.8. Figure 7.8 should then be used to improve figure 2.8 (once again going through the centre of the infinity symbol).

The infinity symbol shows how the theoretical PPA is improved by reality, thereby making PPA more relevant and appropriate for applying it to reality. This means the Protection Pyramid Approach continuously incorporates both the latest academic developments as well as the lessons learned from earlier applications of PPA to different case study countries (or the same case study country in different time periods). Visually the process described above is shown in the figure 7.9 below.

One of the findings of chapter seven is that the Protection Pyramid Approach not only contributes to IDP protection but can also be used for any protection-deprived group. The more BU and TD actors are able to synchronise their activities, the better able they are to increase protection. Synchronisation of BU and TD actors' activities increases when both actors increase their awareness of, and communication with, the other actor. Increased awareness and communication creates more occurrences of the Partnership Approach to Protection improving the protection of IDPs or any protection-deprived group. The same positive influence of PAP is ensured when BU and TD actors are more aware of the inter-linkages between components and their elements, and they actively utilise and build upon these links. Within chapter seven the importance of utilising all components of the PPA has been reiterated. The reason for this necessity lies in the fact that if a protection crisis is only analysed from a single component perspective an incomplete and possibly even incorrect understanding of the crisis develops. When BU and TD actors misunderstand the

interrelatedness of needs, capacities, intensions and activities this decreases the extent to which they can cooperate with each other. Suboptimal BU/TD interaction decreases PAP manifestations and the possibility to positively contribute to IDP protection.

A second outcome of this research relates to the benefits of the multiple perspectives represented within the PPA. Utilising all PPA components allows BU and TD actors to solve problems within one component by utilising other component (elements). These component (elements) can be located in both halves of the pyramid, showing the important link between the top and bottom halves of the protection pyramid. The analysis of the empirical data also indicated how different component elements fulfilled a similar role within different PPA components. This refers to the comparable impact of Dignity, Agency and Esteem Needs on the lower half of the protection pyramid. This inter-component-element effect is described as the Dignity-injection column. The Dignity element is of key importance to IDP protection and underrepresented and undervalued in the existing IDP literature.

In addition to using all components and being aware of the link between components, a third finding of the research is that both actors should be aware of the so-called 'Logic of Consecutive Protection Pyramids'. This logic dictates that in order to fulfil a component, each element within a component is represented by a complete protection pyramid. The interaction of elements necessitates the different protection pyramids to be represented in a consecutive way. The logic can be observed in PPA components three, four, six and seven and is different from the *modus operandi* suggested in chapter two. Taking component seven as an example, the 'Logic of Consecutive Pyramids' means that instead of showing the three phases of displacement as part of one protection pyramid, each phase is represented by a complete protection pyramid including all components and their elements. Both logics are correct, BU and TD actors should just be aware of which approach is used. Another observation derived from the interaction between theory and reality (shown by the infinity symbol) was that PPA enables comparisons between different case study countries, different hierarchical levels, different groups and different time periods.

Lessons learned in chapter seven apply to both the components of the pyramid and the pyramid as a whole. For some components, large changes were made, others visually remained the same, but additional explanations were added to improve their operation. To summarise: In order to clarify the protection context and culture (PPA component one) an additional BU and TD protection typology had to be added and more background information provided to the BU Typology of Coping. The Protection Criteria, though not always recognised, used or appreciated by actors, nevertheless suffices to determine the extent to which BU and TD actors understand a protection crisis. In relation to PPA component two it was recognised that BU and TD actors can have a positive and/or negative influence on IDP protection. BU actors should not be seen as a uniform group. Instead, geography, groups and time should be added as specific points of attention while TD actors, in addition to focusing on their mandates should be more attentive to the context of the crisis.

No visual changes were made Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs theory, but further explanations were added to improve the functioning of the component. This included emphasising the fact that the pyramid consisting of two halves visually divided by the horizontal 'needs' line between love and esteem needs. The possibility of moving downwards in the pyramid, as well as higher level needs effecting lower level needs (either constraining, preventing upwards movement or strengthening the lower layers) were included. The link between love and esteem needs was explained as well as the special nature of layer five, introducing the first example of the Logic of Consecutive Protection Pyramids. This logic was replicated in component four, though then at the element level. The most important change in component four was the addition of the Dignity-injection column, while land was identified as a serious point of attention.

Though the analysis of the empirical data showed that PPA component five largely functioned as suggested in chapter two, ICCPR articles 6 and 12 were moved from the top to the lower half of the protection pyramid. The necessity to pay specific attention to IDP law was sufficiently covered in both countries by their focus on general Human Rights Law. Land, once again, was a special point of attention.

Most changes occurred in PPA component six. It was suggested to add six different Dualities to Giddens' model. One of these additions, the Duality of Structural Agency (DSA), was furthermore equated with full protection at the top of the protection pyramid. The importance of DSA lies in the fact that the benefitting element is Agency. As the top of the protection pyramid shows how IDPs (agents) reach their full potential, DSA is the highest attainable goal. The Duality of Structure (DS) is also important because it, together with DSA (as could be seen in figure 7.6.1 on p328) is necessary to ascend in the protection pyramid. However, given that the benefitting element of DS is Structure, and the top of the pyramid is about IDP Agency, DS is not the highest goal. An additional observation reveals that BU and TD actors influence on IDP protection can be both positive and negative as their respective inputs (Agency and Structure) can be both. Furthermore, BU actors at times compensated for TD actors' shortcoming, and TD actors were unaware of BU actor's coping mechanisms. TD actors were also largely responsible for creating a negative constraining time-space, though examples existed in which BU actors utilised their Agency to push this time-space back to its original position. Gender and the family were identified as specific points of attention in this PPA component for their positive and negative contributions.

In PPA component seven, no changes were suggested to the visualisation of the protection pyramid figure, but more explanation was added to improve its functioning. This explanation included increasing the awareness of the negative effect of having displacement phases occurring at the same time, while showing how clarifying the duration of each displacement phase had a positive effect on IDP protection. BU and TD actors should also be aware that, within the first displacement phase, IDPs emphasise the moment of displacement. The Logic of Consecutive Protection Pyramid was also observed in this phase. In the eighth

PPA component the feedback to BU and TD actors included adding Awareness and Communications as specific point of attention with the potential of increasing IDP protection.

These observations and recommendations, relating to both the intra and inter component interactions, conclude the development, application and improvements to the Protection Pyramid Approach. The aim of chapter seven was to analyse the complementarity between BU and TD actors by utilising the instances of PAP (identified in chapter six) and reinserting them into the theoretical representation of PPA (chapter two) with the aim to contribute to improved IDP protection. At the end of this research PPA has been developed to its current most optimal form, based on both theory and reality. The PPA is ready to be used in the analysis of crises involving IDP, or any protection-deprived group. Practitioners and academics are encouraged to continuously improve the Protection Pyramid Approach when using it. This call for continuous improvement is represented by the infinity symbol which emphasises the interface between theory and reality.

In the final conclusion, the way in which the PPA has been able to intertwine BU actors' coping and self-protection mechanisms with the protection approaches and strategies developed by TD actors in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda is reiterated.

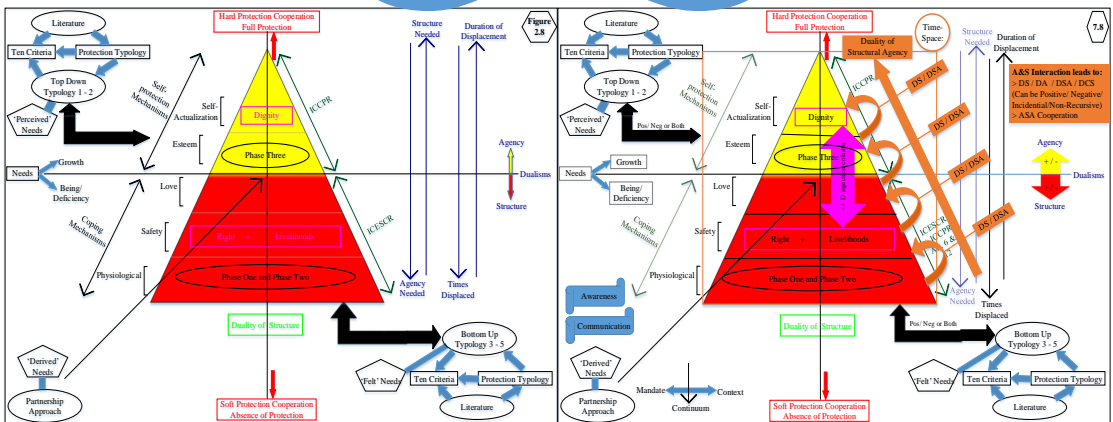
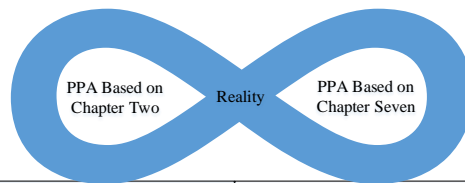


Figure 7.9: Theoretical versus Practical Protection Pyramid

Conclusion

In the world today many people suffer from the effects of Complex Political Emergencies (CPEs). One of the effects is that people are forced to leave their homes and flee. When this flight occurs within the borders of their country these people become Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs). As they have not crossed an international border these IDPs are still part of the jurisdiction of their Government, even if the Government itself was the cause or responsible for their displacement. The State, and in some situations a *de jure* Non-State actor, are legally bound to a role as protector, even though they might have acted as a perpetrator. In the absence of an international (United Nations) agency dedicated solely to their protection (as exists for refugees), IDPs are supported by an (unwilling or incapable) Government, non-governmental (aid) organisations or left to their own devices. As such, actors playing a role in the protection of Internally Displaced Persons are the IDPs themselves, the State, Non-State actor and other (aid) actors.

A problem for the protection of IDPs, observed within this research, is the lack of communications and mutual understanding between these different actors. This, for one, explains the shortcomings in protection experienced by the over 38 million displaced people in the world today, despite the large number of protection models and approaches. The breadth and depth of the IDP dilemma, as well as the continuously increasing trend in the number of IDPs worldwide, justifies further research.

The focus of this research has been on the activities of the so-called Bottom Up (BU) actors (IDPs) and Top Down (TD) actors (State, non-State and other (aid) actors), and their interaction. It was hypothesized that IDP protection would increase if the two groups of actors would not only understand each other better, but also were more aware of each other's perspectives, activities and priorities, leading to better cooperation and hence more protection.

Elaborate literature research has been conducted to determine how to increase mutual understanding and become more aware of actor's perspectives, activities and priorities, while aiming to increasing cooperation. The result of this literature research is presented in the Theoretical Framework. Within the Theoretical Framework it is explained how the newly developed Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA), is considered the way forward for IDP protection. The model is a comprehensive multi-perspective, multi-component, dual actor approach to protection, combining the strengths of academia with elaborate empirical data.

The next step in this research consisted of collecting data for both BU and TD actors, in each case study country, for the eight components of the newly developed model. The underlying hypothesis (the protection increasing effect of BU and TD cooperation) is captured in the newly developed innovative concept of the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP).

While the new model presented in the Theoretical Framework has been used to collect and analyse the empirical data in the case study countries, it, at the same time, has been continuously improved by the collected information. As such, after having presented the

empirical BU and TD data and its interaction in PAP, the final chapter of this research highlighted lessons learned for the model. Here the PPA model is presented in its theoretical form, as a method to collect and analyse information and as a self-improving device, taking in the lessons learned from empirical data. As such, the presented information contributes to improving IDP protection by answering the following main and sub research questions and objectives.

Main and Sub Research Questions

Within the main research question the importance of the two groups of actors, as well as their interaction for the protection of IDPs becomes clear. The main research question reads:

‘What kind of Bottom Up Coping and Self-protection mechanisms are evident amongst IDP populations, which Top Down IDP approaches and strategies are utilised by State, Non-State and other (aid) actors and to what extent can Bottom Up and Top Down Approaches be intertwined to further enhance IDP protection, based on the empirical evidence collected in Bosnia, Colombia and Uganda?’

In order to answer this question, it has been divided into four sub research objectives. Objectives one and two deal with the two main actors, while objective three focuses on the interaction between the actors. Objective four provides recommendations, based on the empirical data collected in the case study countries, to the model developed for IDP protection, discussed in the theoretical chapter. The sub research objectives, are:

- 1. To document and analyse strategies being adopted by IDPs to protect themselves in CPEs;*
- 2. To identify and analyse, in general, and specifically, the approaches and strategies protection providers, mandated to protect IDPs, adopt towards IDP coping and self-protection mechanisms;*
- 3. To critically analyse both the effect and impact of the Bottom Up and Top Down protection strategies, used by IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors, when connected in an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection, to contribute to IDP protection; and*
- 4. To make recommendations on further improving the way in which IDPs and the State, Non-State and other (aid) actors can contribute to increased IDP protection by building on their individual activities as well as utilising an interactive and complementary Partnership Approach to Protection.*

Before these four objectives are dealt with an overview is given of the Theoretical Framework and Methodology which guided this research.

Theoretical Framework

Different fields of study have been consulted to develop the Theoretical Framework for this research. The resulting Protection Pyramid Approach (PPA) requires Bottom Up (BU) and Top Down (TD) actors to utilise each of the eight components of the model. The eight components are; 1) Protection Criteria and Typologies, 2) Protection Providers, Needs and Dualities, 3) Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Theory, 4) The Revised Protection Definition, 5) International Human Rights Covenants, 6) Giddens' Structuration Theory, 7) Three Phases of Internal Displacement and 8) Interaction and Feedback.

The components of the model can be used in an interchangeable manner, meaning possible shortcomings within one component can be compensated by other components, or by the elements within components. Each component emphasises a different aspect of protection. Component one (focusing on protection criteria and typologies) aims to determine how BU and TD actors observe the protection context and culture in a country and how they see their own role in it. Having determined the status quo in a country, the second component of the PPA singles out which actors play a role (both positive and negative) in IDP protection. Actors are divided into Bottom Up and Top Down. To overcome this divide, Dualistic Logic has been used. The resulting, newly developed, Partnership Approach to Protection shows how cooperation between BU and TD actors contributes to IDP protection. To determine whether the contribution is positive or not, a protection continuum has been developed ranging from soft protection cooperation and the absence of protection to hard cooperation leading to full protection. Full protection is easier reached if the needs which BU and TD actors identify as necessary for IDPs are more similar.

Visualising the identified needs in Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs Pyramid (PPA component three) helps actors to see each other's priorities. This provides them the opportunity to work together or complement each other. Additionally, the way needs are fulfilled and which should be prioritised in relation to IDP protection is based on Maslow's writings. As such, the third component gives a roadmap for the prioritisation of activities leading to IDP protection.

The analysis of existing protection literature showed the necessity for a revised protection definition, which has been developed within the fourth PPA component. The three elements of the revised definition are Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity. The Rights element has been further developed within the fifth PPA component. The two Human Rights Covenants dealing with civil, political, economic, social and cultural rights have been situated alongside Maslow's pyramid, creating what has been called the 'Protection Pyramid'. This

pyramid allows each actor to refer to their needs, capacities or priorities within their normal lingua franca, while enabling the other actor to understand what is meant. As such the protection pyramid improves communication, mutual understanding and interaction between both actors.

Structuration Theory developed by Anthony Giddens adds a new perspective to IDP protection and therefore is the sixth component of the PPA. The representation of BU and TD actors through Giddens' concepts of Agency and Structure allows those utilising the model to address IDP protection at a more abstract level without political or other complicating factors. Giddens' theorising on how to transcend the opposition between Agency and Structure, through the Duality of Structure, has further developed the new PAP concept. Importantly, Giddens' legacy grounded the issue of IDP protection within the context it takes place, paying attention to actors' opportunities and challenges while emphasizing the way IDPs themselves contribute to their own protection.

In the seventh PPA component the focus shifts to the actual phenomena of displacement. The opportunities, challenges and cooperation between both actors within the Protection Pyramid have been visualised for each phase of displacement. Additionally, the effect of the number of times an IDP is displaced and the duration of displacement on protection have been shown. The way the interaction between all previous components affects IDP protection is one of the merits of PPA component eight. It allows actors to capitalise on the strengths of a component or compensate any observed shortcomings. Additionally, a feedback loop is added to ensure that the actors improve communications, increase awareness and interaction and implement lessons learned to ensure continuous improvement to IDP protection.

The Protection Pyramid Approach presented above contributes to improved IDP protection because it analyses IDP protection from eight different perspectives. This ensures that IDPs do not solely rely on either themselves (as BU actors) or TD actors for their protection, but benefit from their combined effect through PAP. The Protection Pyramid Approach additionally increases BU and TD actors' communication and mutual understanding, showing the most urgent priorities. The PPA model created in the Theoretical Framework is presented by figure 8.1 below. In the next subsection, the application of the methodology of this research is reiterated.

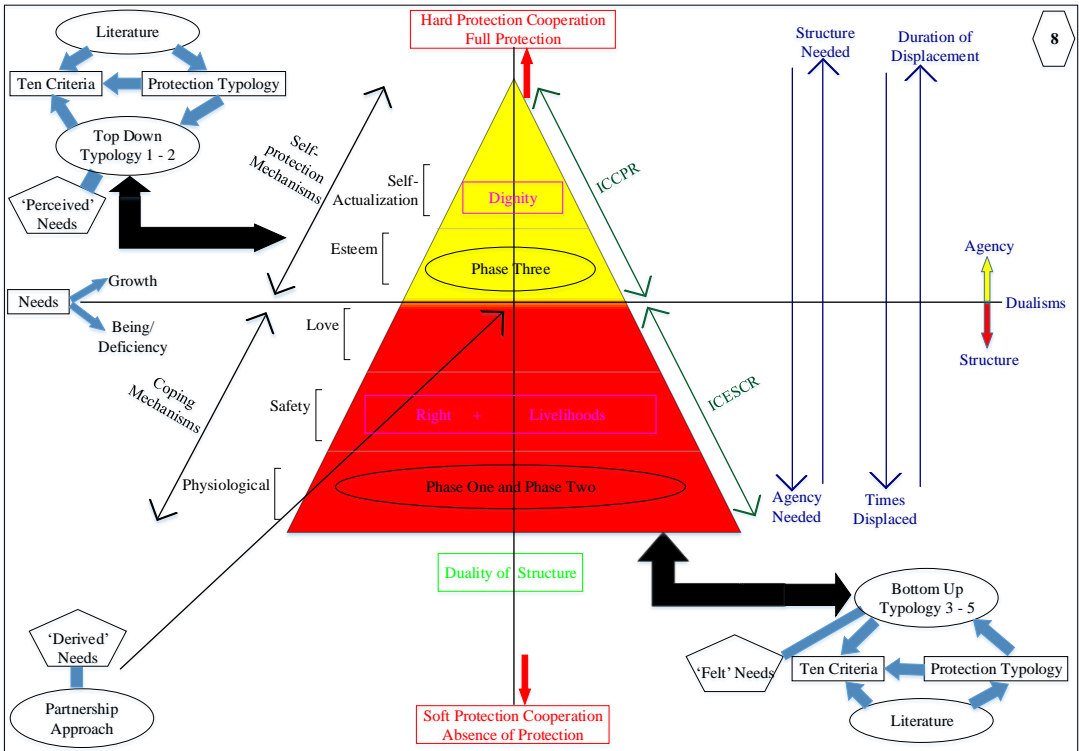


Figure 8.1: Protection Pyramid Approach presented within the Theoretical Framework

Methodology

As this research is informed by Grounded Theory, the methodology chapter has been written upon completion of the data collection, analysis and writing phase. The methodology, as elaborately described in the introduction, has not changed. It suffices here to give a brief summary while referring to the introduction or the methodology chapter for more information.

Within this research, Anthony Giddens' Structuration Theory informed the ontology and epistemology. As dictated by Grounded Theory data collection and analysis guided the sampling procedures, making theoretical sampling the most commonly used approach. The data collection process developed synonymously to the development of the PPA model and was inspired by the insights collected in the case study countries. The use of a female translator enabled the collection of more sensitive data. The interview guide, developed after the explorative research trip to Bosnia, was later further developed into part of the PPA model. During the data collection process, however, the guide was a useful tool to ensure all components of PPA were covered.

Data analysis was partly done during the field trips, but mostly between field trips to ensure sufficient distance to the collected material. This also allowed comparison with already

collected data of earlier field trips. The decision to increase the subgroups interviewed in Uganda (the last case study country) was inspired by the increasing scope of the emerging theory. In line with Grounded Theory this increased scope allowed for PPA to develop from the level of a substantive to a formal theory. This theory has then been applied to, and has been revised by, the analysis of the case study data. The results of which are presented below.

Answers to Sub Research Objectives

Within the first two sub research objectives an actor's perspective was used, in which the empirical findings from a Bottom Up point of view were presented in objective one, while objective two did the same for the Top Down data. In line with the PPA model, in which the divide between BU and TD actors needs to be overcome, the collected empirical data were analysed within the third objective for instances of the Partnership Approach to Protection. The importance of continuous improvement, inherent within the PPA model, is put into practice in the fourth objective. In this objective, the analysis of the empirical data is reinserted into the theoretical PPA model. The findings of each objective are presented below and can be studied in-depth from chapters four to seven.

Sub Research Objective One (Chapter Four)

Within objective one it was clarified how Bottom Up actors view, experience and contribute to IDP protection. The activities they engage in and the priorities they identify in order to provide protection were analysed utilising the eight components of the PPA. Six conclusions can be drawn from the analysed data. Firstly; *IDP protection increased when actors use all eight components of the model.* This is because the interaction between the components (building upon or compensating for each other) increases the protective capacity of the PPA.

Secondly, *IDP protection increased when IDP's engage in their own protection.* The explanation for this is linked to the third finding. *The Dignity element has the largest effect (positively or negatively) on IDP protection, as it affects multiple components of the PPA model.* Dignity is a concept inherently linked to BU actors. It was found that engaging in their own protection increases BU actors' sense of Dignity, which has a strong effect on other components of the model both in the top and bottom half of the pyramid. This phenomenon was termed the Dignity-injection column, which can have a positive and negative effect. As a result, the absence of Dignity had an equally large, though negative, effect on IDP protection. The strong influence of this element showed the importance for all actors to engage in Dignity increasing activities, for example by including IDPs in all protection related undertakings.

The fourth finding also pertains to the fourth PPA component and showed that: *The Right element also has an important effect on IDP protection, but less so than Dignity.* The comparison between the empirical data collected in Colombia and Uganda showed how Rights' knowledge prior to displacement ensured higher protection during and after

displacement. As most BU actors do not speak in terms of human rights, this finding is linked to the fifth finding which *Underlines the importance of the Protection Pyramid as translation device between BU and TD actors*. The protection pyramid helps translate BU actor's needs into the more commonly used Right's language of TD actors. The translation between BU and TD actors, provided by the Protection Pyramid, highlighted the final finding of this objective, which was also observed within the sixth PPA component: *Agency and Structure are both needed to ensure adequate protection for IDPs*. Given the importance of both BU and TD actors, the next objective analyses IDP protection from the point of view of the latter group.

Sub Research Objective Two (Chapter Five)

Within the second sub objective the empirical data collected in Colombia and Uganda was analysed from a Top Down Actors' perspective. It was determined how State, non-State actor and other (aid) actors perceived, prioritised and contributed to IDP protection, utilising the eight components of the Protection Pyramid approach. Seven conclusions can be drawn from this analysis. Firstly, *TD actors do not act as a homogenous group*. Instead the pluriform character of the group is represented in the diverse response to the issue of IDP protection. As a whole however, TD actors had a suboptimal effect on IDP protection. This means that not all potential to positively contribute to the protection of IDPs was utilised. Reasons for this could be found in different actors contributing differently (positive and negatively) to a certain aspect of IDP protection. Or actors would on the one hand positively contribute to IDP protection but on the other hand, often at the same time, endanger protection. This was for example observed in Colombia, where the Government had developed an elaborate legal framework for IDP protection but at the same time was an actor in the war leading to displacement.

IDP protection is secondly, affected by *the concept of war, which is an interesting phenomenon in its own right*. War has a direct negative effect on IDP protection, in addition to a lingering negative effect on protection upon its cessation (observed in Uganda). The suboptimal contribution of TD actors to IDP protection correlates to their involvement in waging war. As such the negative effect of the lingering influence of war can also be attributed to them.

The third finding relates to the way the PPA model is used. *Utilising the PPA model, IDP protection is obtained by following Maslow's Hierarchical Logic as well as a Reversed Approach*. Based on Maslow's theorising, the model is fulfilled in a hierarchical manner, starting at the base of the pyramid and ascending the protection continuum to the top where IDPs are protected and cease to be IDPs. In this logic, the bottom half of the pyramid is fulfilled before the top half. However, the top half of the pyramid materialising before the bottom half was also observed, showing a reversed approach which positively affects IDP protection. This is because having the top half materialise before the bottom half allows

interaction between both halves to occur earlier in the process of providing protection, increasing the protection capacity of the model. This observation links to the fourth finding: *A Dignity Injection Column was observed within the TD actors' data*. This positive phenomenon does however not occur in all protection components, leading to the next finding.

The fifth finding shows that *Prioritising the third phase of displacement (return) before the lower halve of the pyramid is completed decreases IDP protection*. This effect was observed in Colombia and can be explained by the challenges relating to the bottom halve of the pyramid (such as ongoing security breaches) threatening IDPs. This is why, sixthly, *IDPs are best protected if TD actors utilise all components of the PPA model*. Finally, the analysis of the TD data showed that *TD actors, on their own, are not able to provide IDP protection*. Instead the analysis of the TD empirical data showed how it needed the input from BU actors. The manner in which interaction between BU and TD actors through the Partnership Approach to Protection occurred in both case studies is explained in the answer to the next sub research objective.

Sub Research Objective Three (Chapter Six)

In the third specific objective, the extent and manner in which Bottom Up and Top Down actors interact within the Partnership Approach to Protection (PAP) has been researched. This means that for each component of the PPA, the cooperation between IDPs, the State, non-State actors and other (aid) actors has been identified. This interaction has been studied at the level of PPA components and their elements, actors and case study countries. Eight findings resulted from the conducted analysis. Firstly, *Interaction between BU and TD actors (PAP) at all levels, made possible (and necessitating) increased communication and awareness between both actors*. The protective capacity of PAP is challenged if BU and TD actors do not see eye to eye. This was for example observed within the first PPA component. TD actors believed IDPs were better protected than BU actors thought they were. The disagreement on the level of protection hampered the materialisation of PAP in this component. Nevertheless, the importance of PAP is shown by the second finding: *PAP is the only way to counter the negative influence of war on IDP protection, given the specific characteristics of war*.

The comparison of the data also revealed differences in the way and manner IDPs should be protected, leading to the third conclusion: *BU and TD actors developed dissimilar ways to protect IDPs, identifying different needs and priorities*. Identifying and prioritising different needs makes cooperation within PAP more difficult, leaving IDPs less protected in the process. Cooperation between the two actors in PAP was compromised by lack of communication and equality. PAP was easiest to achieve in relation to land but even then, it was challenged by disagreements on important topics.

BU and TD actors' interaction in relation to land highlighted a more general phenomenon, captured within the fourth conclusion: *PAP can be challenged by both internal*

and external phenomena. Utilising Maslow's pyramid, opportunities for PAP were observed within the different layers but PAP was challenged at a lower more practical level because actors did not agree on priority issues and corresponding activities within a layer. In this case, PAP was challenged by internal considerations. As such component three can be used to identify general topics of agreement while using other components to overcome the more practical obstacles preventing PAP. Especially since IDPs indicated that positive developments in relation to their family increased their feeling of esteem. The interrelation of family and esteem needs therefore positively contributes to PAP. A suboptimal PAP can however also be caused by external phenomena such as war and corruption.

The fifth finding shows how *BU and TD interaction occurred most in Rights related matters (while undervaluing the Dignity element).* A higher number of PAP occurred in Colombia than Uganda. This can be explained by the fact that the IDP legal framework is situated on the national level in Colombia and the regional level in Uganda. Additionally, the different bodies of law are better connected in Colombia than Uganda. More in general, TD actors in Colombia are, to a certain extent, forced into cooperation with BU actors by the prioritisation of the International Covenant for Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR). This phenomenon occurs regardless of general prioritisation of the International Covenant for Economic, Social and Cultural Rights (ICESCR). The undervaluing of the Dignity element occurred regardless of the presence of a Dignity Injection Column in both countries.

The sixth finding pertains to the sixth PPA component as was found that: *For BU and TD actors to positively contribute to IDP protection, all key elements of Giddens' theory should be used.* Both BU and TD actors believe in the power of IDPs to positively contribute to their own protection. At the same time, TD actors are believed to have both a positive and negative effect. Part of TD actors' negative role can be explained by the continuous undervaluing of BU actors' coping and self-protection mechanisms. This undervaluing has a double negative effect on IDP protection as BU actors use these mechanisms to compensate for shortcomings in TD actors' protection activities. In its abstract representation, more instances of the Duality of Structure are identified than cases of PAP. An unused PAP potential therefore remains within PPA component six.

The analysis conducted in PPA component seven even showed challenges to PAP leading to the seventh conclusion: *TD actors have seriously failed in providing IDP protection in each of the three phases of displacement.* This is because TD actors are to blame for displacement, preventing cooperation with BU actors in phase one. TD actors have been late to provide protection to IDPs in phase two of displacement, even engaging in activities which challenged IDPs. Finally, in relation to phase three, TD actors used their power dominance to impose their preferences on BU actors. Having said so it is important to reiterate that the TD group consists of a diverse number of actors some of which positively contributed to protection.

The final conclusion of the analysis of TD data showed that *More cases of PAP were observed in Colombia than Uganda*. This shows that inter-component interaction was larger in Colombia than Uganda. More knowledge on protection culture and context and a better developed Rights element paid off for IDP protection, regardless of the fact that, within both countries, the protection enhancing effect of Dignity and protection decreasing effect of war, corruption and lack of political will and security were present. How these realisations impact the theoretical functioning of the Protection Pyramid Approach is discussed in the final sub research objective.

Sub Research Objective Four (Chapter Seven)

In this final sub objective, theory and practice are reconnected to ensure that the theoretical Protection Pyramid Approach is up to date with developments in the field (shown in figure 8.2 at the end of this section). Additionally, tweaking the PPA with empirical data from Colombia and Uganda makes the model uniquely applicable to those two countries. Some of the findings within this sub objective apply to specific components, others to the Approach as a whole. Finding one shows that: *Theory and practice should continuously inform each other (shown by the infinity symbol in figure 8.2)*. In order to make this happen, an inter-actor as well as inter and intra cooperation occurring at the component and element level and a comparative case study country approach has to be used. Using all components of the model as well as increasing communication and awareness between BU and TD actors leads to improved IDP protection.

The second finding applies to the individual PPA components: *Increase mutual (BU and TD actors) and contextual understanding and appreciation*. This applies to the way protection is provided (either directly or indirectly) and enjoyed (actively or passively) as well as, more specifically, to BU coping mechanisms. Related to this is the observation that BU actors, similarly to TD actors, are not a uniform group, with uniform needs and prioritisations. Additionally, needs are also influenced by geography and time, requiring a context sensitive approach by both actors.

The third finding relates to need fulfilment: *Need fulfilment follows Maslow's Logic as well as occurs as a result of the Dignity Injection Column*. Once actors are aware of needs, need fulfilment can follow a hierarchical pathway, or, the intended upward movement towards increased protection can be interrupted, set back or halted. Additionally, the higher located needs can become fulfilled before lower located needs are met. The Dignity injection column influences IDP protection due to its effect on lower located IDP needs. As the Dignity injection column can be positive or negative, so can its influence be. Dignity as an element in IDP protection is therefore very important. Need fulfilment is also strongly influenced by the (often negative) effect of safety on IDP protection, while the interrelatedness between family and esteem needs positively affects IDP protection.

The protection pyramid which developed by adding the two Human Rights Covenants to Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs pyramid has been found to have a very specific contribution to IDP protection, leading to the fourth finding: *The protection pyramid, as utilised within different components, provides a pathway to protection.* It does so by dictating, within a component, how BU and TD actors (individually and in cooperation) can contribute to protection. To develop the protection pyramid, the different articles within the two Covenants are to be positioned alongside the pyramid, paying specific attention to the protection crisis and context. In relation to IDP protection this necessitates locating ICCPR Articles 6 and 12 (dealing with the Right to Life and Freedom of Movement) within the bottom half of the pyramid. Generally, however, the rights contained within the ICESCR are prioritised (and therefore located at the base of the pyramid). Having said so, early development of certain ICCPR articles (such as Freedom of Opinion, Information, Assembly and Legal Personality) can assist IDPs to fulfil priority needs located in the base of the pyramid. When bodies of law in the case study country are located at different hierarchical levels and interacting both within the country, as well as with the regional or international level, IDP protection improves further.

The fifth finding also shows the usefulness of the protection pyramid for protection: *The Protection Pyramid enables Clarifications and Comparisons to be made.* In the former, different elements of several components within the protection pyramid can be used to clarify either the status quo of protection in a country or to determine necessary activities to be undertaken. Utilising this functionality of the model showed that engagement in the third phase of displacement before the second and first phase are completed, challenged IDP protection and should be refrained from. In relation to the latter, taking the three elements of the Revised Protection Definition (Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity) as an example, these elements can be visualised within the protection pyramid in their real-life, relative importance vis-à-vis each other. Doing so for each case study country allows the PPA user to compare the importance of each element in each country, enabling inter-case study comparisons. Additionally, this comparison-functionality of the PPA can assist actors in their communications about necessary actions to be taken to improve protection.

Also, the sixth finding is indirectly based on the protection pyramid and reads: *(IDP) Protection is most realistically represented within the Logic of Consecutive Pyramids.* The Logic of Consecutive Pyramids can be replicated at component element level and as such have a larger impact on protection. This Logic was first observed within PPA component three, but also applies to components four and seven. In relation to PPA component seven this means that in each displacement phase IDPs can only be protected if all components are used and interact with each other. The top of the protection pyramid of the third phase of IDP displacement symbolises the highest goal as IDPs are then fully protected and cease to be an IDP. This however, does not mean that they are without the need for protection. BU actors may still need protection even though they no longer are IDPs. They then move into the protection pyramid of another protection deprived group (such as the urban poor for example).

In addition to the Logic of Consecutive Pyramids, more can be said about IDP protection, such as the observation that: *BU and TD actors both contribute to and challenge IDP protection with the latter, at times, compensating for the former.* Similarly, to TD actors, BU actors also negatively affected IDP protection. However, BU actors have also compensated for TD actors' activities, such as waging war, by relying on their coping and self-protection mechanisms. Due to the strong positive effect on IDP protection, BU coping and self-protection mechanism should increasingly be acknowledged and supported by TD actors.

The interaction between BU and TD actors has another effect on IDP protection as can be read in the eighth finding relating to Giddens' Structuration Theory: *In addition to the Duality of Structure other Modes of Cooperation were observed.* The analysis of the data has shown that BU and TD actors (in their abstract representation of Agency and Structure) interact in more ways than proposed by Giddens. Key in this is the question of which actor initiates and benefits from the interaction. The latter effect, in Giddens' terminology, means to become 'recursively replicated' (i.e. continuously reproduced), which does not always occur, as sometimes interaction takes place for a single purpose. This finding is added to the theoretical framework. Three additional dualistic ways of cooperation between BU and TD actors have been identified within the empirical data, as well as one extra (non-Dualistic) way of cooperating. These are the Duality of Structural Agency, the Duality of Agency, the Duality of Cooperational Structure and ASA Cooperation. Most interesting is the Duality of Structural Agency as it is the exact counterpart to the Duality of Structure and is considered (together with the Duality of Structure) necessary in order to move upwards in the protection pyramid. The findings and observations discussed within the fourth specific objective ensure IDPs are better protected and are added to the PPA (as can be seen in figure 8.2 on the next page).

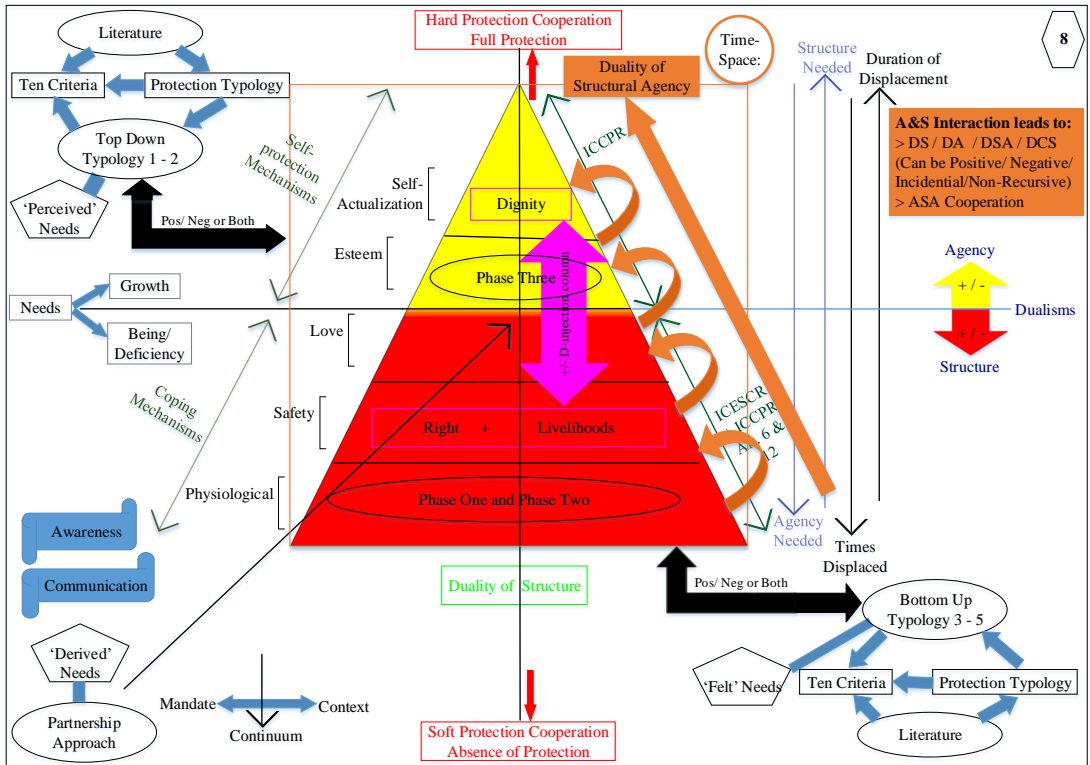
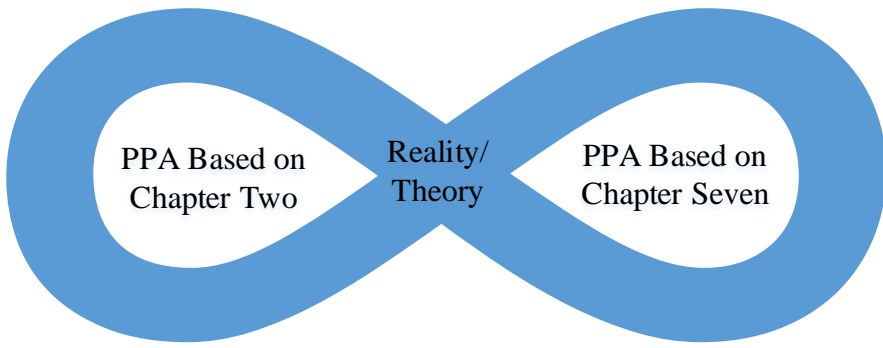


Figure 8.2: Protection Pyramid Approach based on Chapter Seven.

The Protection Pyramid Approach (as represented in figure 8.2) was developed following elaborate research and rigorous data collection and analysis. To summarise the development process: PPA was based on in-depth literature analysis into the ways that protection was provided (historically and practically) to IDPs. This exercise exposed the underrepresented contribution of IDPs to IDP protection. At the same time, more traditional protection providers, the State, but also Non-State and other aid actors, were identified for their contribution to IDP protection. Following the explorative research conducted in Bosnia, the

idea was born that in order to protect IDPs the input of both Bottom Up and Top Down actors were needed. Thanks to the methodological guidance provided by Grounded Theory, the quest for the components of a model contributing to IDP protection, led to the development of the Partnership Approach to Protection. With the actors necessary for IDP protection acknowledged, other components of the new approach to protection were identified. The Revised Protection Definition with its three elements (Rights, Livelihoods and Dignity) guided the empirical journey to uncover further elements of IDP protection. Individual contributions of BU and TD actors, intertwined within the PAP, resonated in the Duality of Structure, 'derived' needs and the ideal protection formula.

The academic process of piecing together the necessary components of IDP protection, augmented by continuous input from the field, led to the conclusion that the Protection Pyramid Approach should consist of eight components. IDPs would only be protected when all these PPA components are met. Only then IDPs are able to reach the top of the Protection Pyramid, where they are no longer an IDP and hence, in light of this research, protected. The academic journey through literature and empirical data showed the necessity of the continuous interaction between theory and practice, represented by the infinity symbol.

The most important findings of the research are that both actors should use all components of the PPA to allow for possible shortcomings in one component to be compensated by another. Increased awareness and communications between BU and TD actors increases the materialization of the Partnership Approach to Protection and therefore positively contributes to IDP protection. The Dignity injection column, the Logic of Consecutive Pyramids and the additional Dualities further increase the functionality of the PPA and hence positively contribute to increased protection. As these additions were based on analysis of empiric data it is crucial that theory and reality continuously inform each other.

The outcome of this research is an academically strong and theoretically well-founded model fine-tuned by rigorous data collection and analysis, which can be used by academics and practitioners alike in their attempts to contribute to improved IDP protection in any of the world's current and future IDP crises. All researchers and practitioners aiming to contribute to improving IDP protection are strongly encouraged to use and, where appropriate, further advance the Protection Pyramid Approach. It is through the infinite interaction between academics and practitioners (similarly to the interaction between BU and TD actors in the Partnership Approach to Protection) that the Protection Pyramid Approach makes the difference to the plight of Internally Displaced Persons worldwide.

Appendices

For certain topics, additional information provides the reader with useful background information. This information is considered too important to only be referred to in a reference, but disrupts the flow of the PhD due to its high level of detail. Information of this nature has therefore been added to the Appendices. The first appendix provides detailed background information on the IDP Protection Framework developed in Colombia. Appendix two shows an overview of the Presidents in Uganda following its independence.

Appendix 1: IDP Protection Framework in Colombia

IDPs in Colombia are offered protection through an elaborate, and difficult to comprehend, system. This system is explained within this appendix. After having gone to any Government entity and filling out a declaration, the IDP's declaration sends it to the national level Victim's Unit, which enters the declarations into the database and decides whether the person is accepted as an IDP or not. The five most common reasons for displacement are threats, possibility of forced recruitment of the children, homicide, land being taken away and being caught in cross-fire.

Law 1448 was set up to fulfil all rights of victims. The Assistance and Reparation component of the Law, managed by the Assistance and Reparations Unit, organizes humanitarian relief (mostly food aid and shelter) for IDPs, while also enabling access to services like education and health care¹¹¹. The other component of the Law focuses on Land Restitution, led by the Land Restitution Unit, and deals with property titles and ensuring IDPs can access land again. Chapter three of the Victim's Law is dedicated solely on IDPs. In the Dignifying Centres the Assistance and Reparations component of Law 1448 is fulfilled when IDPs follow a 'Route of Attention' guiding them past the different entities in the DC. Below the two main components of the Victim's Law are explained, after which the Route of Attention is discussed.

The Assistance and Reparation part of the Law foresees in different ways to rectify IDP suffering, this can be done through: Rehabilitation, Compensation or Indemnization, and symbolic reparations (which could include public excuses). Indemnization is a term often used in Colombia and has different meanings in Colombia's ordinary and transitional law (Law 1448). In ordinary law indemnization means giving economic compensation to a victim when his rights cannot be re-established, this is different from material compensation (simply called compensation). In transitional law (Law 1448), compensation can be either material or economic. In land restitution (explained below), compensation for land can consist of another piece of land or money equalling the worth of your land. Indemnization under transitional law is a financial compensation for the emotional damage as a result of the crime a victim suffered from (in which the type of crime determines the height). Indemnization is an additional component of Reparations provided to victims. IDPs can receive indemnization for the fact that they became displaced. IDPs do not have to know whom displaced them as long as the displacement was caused by an armed group. People who displace because their lands were fumigated as a result of the armed conflict and displaced for economic reasons, are not entitled to reparations (including both compensations and indemnizations). The UAOs/DC provide the assistance to the victims (including IDPs) while the personaria verifies and follows up on the

¹¹¹ The law maintains that Reparations should not bring the person requesting the Reparations back to their original level if this level was below the poverty line. In those cases, Transformative Reparations have to be provided, to improve the situation of the person. (Uprimny Yepes, 2009, p625).

assistance and subsidies provided. The Government does not recognise double or multiple displacements, assistance is only provided after the first displacement.

The Assistance and Reparations component of Law 1448 is fulfilled in the Dignifying Centres by having IDPs follow a 'route of attention'. This means that when IDPs arrive in the DC they can drop their children in the kindergarten and start at the personaria to make a declaration. The next station for IDPs is the humanitarian assistance desk, where it is determined whether IDPs have a social network, a place to sleep and food, if not they are provided with immediate assistance. This means that if IDPs do not have a place to sleep (and they arrive to the DC within five days of their displacement) they have a Right to Shelter and are sent to a Government/Red Cross shelter. In all other cases IDPs have to turn to religious facilities for a place to sleep. Then IDPs go to the Social Integration Programmes, at this station it is determined which Governmental Programmes are necessary for the fulfilment of the human rights of the IDP (these programmes are accessible for IDPs receiving transitional assistance). Government programmes the IDP can access are programmes for the elderly, pregnant and lactating women, the kindergarten and access to community restaurants.

On their 'route of attention' IDPs also meet representative of the Health and Family Welfare Ministry (ICBF). At the health station representatives of the Ministry assist IDPs in transferring their registration at the municipality they displaced from to the municipality they displaced to, which allows them access to health care in the place of displacement. While this process takes place IDPs can access health care through a letter stating that they are IDPs, which is provided to IDPs after they have been admitted into the registry. Representatives of the Health station and/or the ICBF, also visit IDPs at their homes to determine the family situation and their specific needs. The health unit also determines on IDPs' need for Psycho-social support. The assistance provided here is called psychological stabilization and is based more on the individual needs of an IDP, rather than fixed weekly appointments. IDPs can just walk in with their questions and concerns.

An important component of the Dignifying Centres, and one of the important differences between the UAO and the DC is the introduction of Lifeprojects. In the Lifeprojects station the representatives do not only follow up on the assistance assigned to IDPs (determining whether they had problems accessing the assistance) but more importantly help IDPs fulfil their dreams. IDPs are asked to envision where they want to be in five or ten years' time and the Lifeprojects unit helps IDPs realize this. This might mean that they assist IDPs to complete their education or help them set up productive projects. The wishes of the IDPs are leading in determining the characteristics of these Lifeprojects. The aim is to help IDPs to become self-sufficient. When IDPs want to set up productive projects, one requirement is that these projects also create employment for other IDPs. With IDPs fulfilling their dreams and becoming self-sufficient TD actors aim to provide IDPs with protection.

With the introduction of the Dignifying Centres (DC) all Government entities necessary for IDP protection are gathered within one building, coordinated by the Secretary

of Government. This was not the case within the Units of Attention (UAO), though there the IDPs could also access the personaria, legal assistance, emergency relief, receive medical (and psychological) attention and meet representatives of the ICBF and SENA (the entity providing education). After having made a declaration at the UAO/DC the Government has 90/60¹¹² working days to give IDPs an answer. IDPs' details are entered in the SIPOD system which is the Registry of the Victim's Unit¹¹³ to which all Government entities have access so they can see IDP's details and the stage of their application. In addition, State entities can see what kind of assistance has been provided to IDPs. In Colombia, there are three kinds of assistance (immediate, emergency and transitional) that can be provided to victims. Immediate assistance is only provided to an IDP once, but after a victim is acknowledged as an IDP and has been accepted in the registry they can access Transitional Assistance every three months indefinitely.

Differences between UAOs and the Dignifying Centres not only exist in the approach they take; Existential (UAO) with little attention for them as victims or the process they go through versus Integral (DC) where victims not only receive assistance but also Reparations. Another difference is that the UAO is coordinated by the Secretary of Government, while the DC is led by the High Council of Human Rights, emphasizing the importance of the victim's human rights. In addition to the Dignifying Centres there are also Offices for Attention and Reparation (OAR) and Mobile Units of Orientation and Attention. The mobile units are used to reach victims in very remote areas, to tell them about their rights and entitlements. OAR are like the DC but then smaller, servicing fewer IDPs and not housing representatives of all Government entities. The DC are led by the Department of Social Prosperity (DPS) which consists of five units; UAIRV, ICBF, Unidad Consolidacion, Centre Memoria Historica and ANSPE (Overcoming Extreme Poverty). The old Accion Social consists only of the UAIRV, Unidad Consolidacion and ANSPE. The Victim's Unit (UAIRV), replaced Accion Social and consists of two big unit; (1) The Assistance and Reparation Unit and (2) the Land Restitution Unit. UAIRV has divided victims into two groups; IDPs (as identified by Law 387) and all other victims (along the lines of Law 975 and Law 418 from 2004). The system through which the Colombian Government provides assistance to IDPs including the development from the Units of Attention (UAO) to the Dignifying Centres (DC), as well as the differences between them, are depicted in the figure 9.1 below.

¹¹² Under Law 1448 the Government only has 60 days to do so, however in practice often 90 days is taken.

¹¹³ SIPOD has all registries that were entered by Accion Social into the RUV. SIPOD is a web platform which allows all institutions working with the victims to have access to all the information in a safe way.

SNARIV / SNAIPD (System for the Attention to IDP Populations)
 =
Whole Institutional Framework for the Implementation of the Victim's Law at all Levels

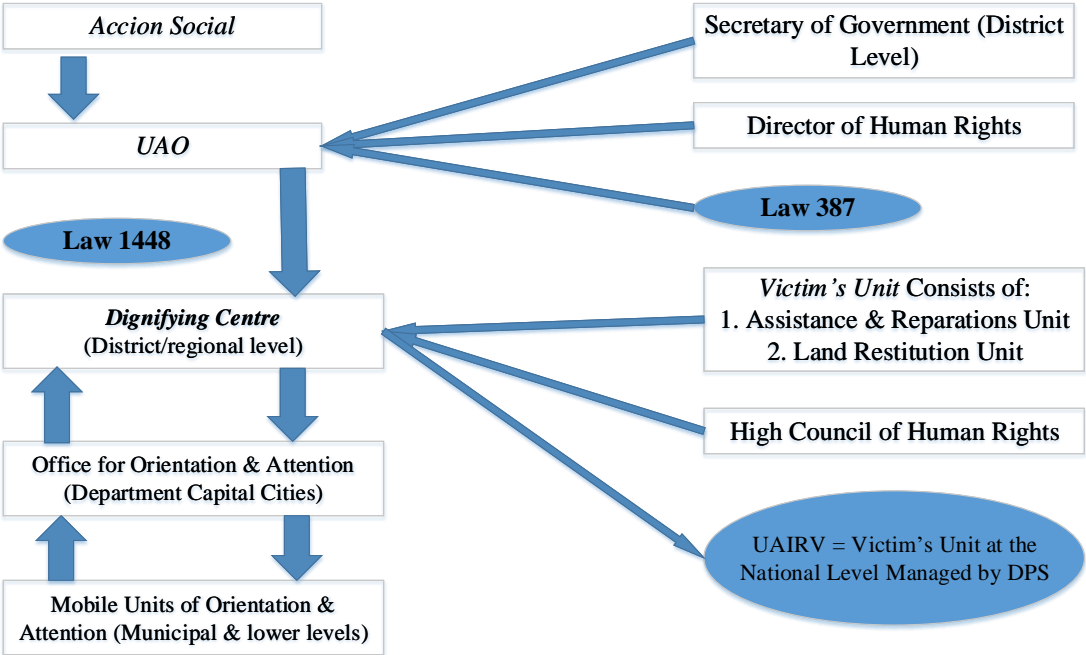


Figure 9.1 Colombian System for IDP Protection

SNARIV is coordinated by an Executive Committee, headed by the President and taking all the decisions on policies and budgets. The Victim's Unit at the national level (UAIRV) is the Technical Secretariat of the Executive Committee. In order to do follow up on the implementation of Law 1448, the Executive Committee has set up ten Technical Sub-Committees. These sub-committees focus on: (1) Attention and Assistance, (2) Prevention and Attention and Guarantees of Non Repetition, (3) Satisfaction Measures (Reparations and Historic Memory Centre, which reconstructs historic conflict memories with the idea that knowing the facts will prevent future conflicts. This centre is also related to the right to know the truth), (4) Administrative Compensation (Indemnization Administrativa), (5) Restitution (which has four components: land, housing, access to the labour market at urban and rural level and a part that deals with debts that victims might have), (6) Collective Reparations (not only for ethnic groups but also for labour union leaders, teachers, peasants and all people who were organised before becoming victims and displacing), (7) Measures of Rehabilitation (not only physical (for example for mine victims) but also community rehabilitation and psycho-social rehabilitation and citizen rehabilitation/citizenship building), (8) Information Systems Sub-committee (working with the Registry of the Victims and managing the National Network

of Information. This committee also tries to unify the criteria of the different institutions that deal with victims or IDPs) (9) Coordination and Territorial Sub Committee (which tries to communicate and coordinate all the work of the nine other groups with the territorial level, following up on the implementation of work at the territorial level) and (10) Subcommittee for the Differential Approach (dealing with women, children, handicapped, ethnic, LGTBI and elderlies). These ten technical sub-committees provide guidelines for, and check upon, the implementation of Law 1448.

Victims can, through the national working groups in which they have representatives, participate in the design and formulation of policy at the municipal, departmental, territorial and national level. IDPs, as one of the groups of victims, set up the National Working Group for IDPs to provide the necessary contribution. This Working Group was created as part of Law 387 (which gave IDPs the power to organize themselves) and continuous to operate but now alongside the National Working Group for Victims. The National Working Group consist of different thematic working groups dealing protection and economic and social stabilization. However, the National Working Group for IDPs does not represent all IDPs, as some IDPs believe that the NWG is corrupt and abuses its power.

To ensure that IDPs' rights are fulfilled, the Ombudsman's Office analyses Public Policy. Public policy analysis is divided into five sectors (a) Land and Returns, (b) Housing Policy, (c) HA Attention, (d) Indigenous and Afro-Colombian communities (the Ethnic communities) and (e) Prevention and Protection of IDPs. There are big differences between the extent to which rights are fulfilled in the different sectors. The education sector (part of section c) is very well advanced while the housing sector experiences many difficulties.

The second part of the Victim's Law refers to Land restitution. Land restitution applies to IDPs who were displaced after 1985 (those who displaced before 1985 have to go through ordinary civil law to get their land restituted). The lack or informality of land titles, together with the different ownership systems, makes land restitution a complex and time-consuming process. To get their land restituted IDPs can go to any public ministry or institution, fill out a form which is then send to the regional Land Restitution office. The Land Restitution Office will start the procedure to determine whether an IDP is eligible for restitution (which is a different process from determining if a person is an IDP or not). If the IDP's land is within the priority regions identified by the Government (the so-called Macro Focalisation areas) and if it is part of one of a few cases the Government started to investigate (Micro Focalisation), then the Government will verify the statement of the IDP by investigating in the area who has the right to the land, and therefore who shall be restituted.

Determining who has the right to land is difficult as there are five different attachments to land in Colombia, some of which result in ownership of the land. This means that one piece of land can be legitimately owned by multiple people. The different attachments to land are: (1) people can own the land and have the titles to the land, (2) people can own the land but do not have the titles to the land, (3) people can possess the land, this means that they

have been on that land for ten years and because of this possess the land, (4) people can be 'good faith land owners', this are people who legally bought land (with titles) from people who acquired the land illegally and there are (5) tenants, who are people who recognise that other people own the land and that they (the tenant) rent the land from the owner.

Land restitution, as part of Law 1448, only applies to people who possess or own the land, therefore to categories one to four, with the additional requirement to the 'good faith person' to prove that they acquired the land through a good faith process (meaning they did not know the land they bought was illegally obtained). Tenants who rent the land have to make their claim about the loss to their rented land to Civil Law institutions. The problem with this land system is that one piece of land can be legally owned by three different people and a fourth person can possess the land and therefore also be entitled to restitution. A judge will determine who is most entitled to the land. The legally determined owner will get restitution of his land, while the possessor receives another piece of land as compensation. If necessary a judicial process starts to delimitated (draw boundaries) of the land. This can again be a difficult process as victims often do not know the exact boundaries of their land, which especially applies to widows. Lastly, land will only be restituted if it is safe for an IDP to return. Risk of secondary displacement, given the ongoing conflict, therefore prevents the restitution of land.

Appendix 2: Ugandan Presidents Following Independence

Period	President	Characteristics	Army
1962 (October) – 1971 (January)	Milton Obote (Obote I)	A Langi from northern Uganda	Mostly Acholi and Langi
1971 (January) – 1979 (April)	Idi Amin	West Nile region	Kakwa and Aringa (West Nile region)
1979 (April) – 1980	Yusuf Lule, Godfrey Binaisa and Paulo Muwanga (headed a Military Commission to set up multi-party elections)	Bagandas	Suggested a quota system for army recruitment (Lule). Wanted to create a modern army (Binaisa)
1980 – 1985 (July)	Milton Obote (Obote II)	A Langi from northern Uganda	Mostly Acholi, also Langi
1985 (July) – 1986 (January)	Tito Okello	Acholi from Kitgum District	Mostly Acholi + UNRF/FUNA / FEDEMU
1986 – Current	Yoweri Museveni	Banyankole, Mbarara district southwest Uganda	Banyankole, Baganda and Banyarwanda (Luwero area)

Nederlandse Samenvatting

In dit onderzoek staat de bescherming van Intern Ontheemde Mensen (Internally Displaced Persons – IDPs) centraal. De noodzaak voor dit onderzoek komt voort uit een steeds toenemend aantal mensen dat vlucht voor geweld, maar binnen de eigen staatsgrenzen blijft. Alhoewel deze groep mensen technisch gezien onder de bescherming van de nationale wetgeving valt, blijkt in de praktijk dat overheden, vaak actoren in de conflicten die tot de vlucht leiden, niet altijd geneigd zijn deze mensen bescherming te bieden. De intern ontheemden zijn dan ook vaak aangewezen op hun eigen overlevingstactieken ('coping strategies'), aangezien externe actoren, zoals de Verenigde Naties of het Internationale Rode Kruis, de soevereiniteit van de staat moeten respecteren. Nationale, niet-gouvernementele organisaties kunnen ook een rol spelen in de bescherming van deze interne vluchtelingen, maar hebben niet altijd de noodzakelijke kennis en kunde. Daar komt nog bij dat binnen de academische wereld verschillen van mening bestaan over wat bescherming precies is en hoe het gegeven moet worden. Dit vormde de grondslag voor de realisatie van de noodzaak voor een nieuwe aanpak op het gebied van bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen.

Bij aanvang van dit onderzoek is begonnen met een gedegen literatuurstudie om de verschillende standpunten over bescherming in kaart te brengen. De uitkomst van dit onderzoek was dat het begrip van bescherming erg uiteenloopt waardoor de samenwerking tussen voor verschillende actoren moeilijk is. Dat gezegd hebbende was de noodzaak tot samenwerking één van de uitkomsten van zowel het literatuuronderzoek als ook de exploratieve onderzoeksreis naar Bosnië-Herzegovina. Tot op heden laat de samenwerking tussen zogenoemde Bottom Up en Top Down actoren vaak te wensen over. Onder de Bottom Up actoren worden de intern ontheemde mensen zelf gerekend, terwijl de Staat, niet-statelijke actoren alsook andere (hulp) organisaties tot de tweede groep behoren. De veldreis naar Bosnië liet zien dat de sleutel tot verbeterde bescherming lag in een verbeterde samenwerking tussen Bottom Up en Top Down actoren. Om dit mogelijk te maken, is het verder van groot belang dat de bijdragen van Bottom Up actoren aan de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen ook onderkend wordt.

Belangrijk in de ontwikkeling van een nieuw model voor het complexe en omstreden onderwerp 'bescherming' is het gebruik van 'Grounded Theory'. Deze theorie propageert dat theorie en praktijk elkaar constant informeren, ervoor zorgend dat ze niet van elkaar vervreemden. Tegelijkertijd voorziet Grounded Theory er ook in dat, nadat een substantiële theorie ontwikkeld is, deze theorie naar het formele, abstracte niveau getild kan worden zodat het breder toepasbaar wordt en dus een groter verschil kan maken. De kenmerken van Grounded Theory hebben geresulteerd in de ontwikkeling van een nieuw model voor de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen. Dit model is stevig gefundeerd op de werkelijke noden en capaciteiten van de actoren die zich, in het veld, daadwerkelijk bezighouden met het bieden van bescherming. Tegelijkertijd, en gaandeweg, is een model tot stand gekomen dat

los staat van de data uit de casus landen (Colombia en Oeganda) en wereldwijd toegepast kan worden.

Het resulterende model voor de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen is gecentreerd rondom de **Beschermingspiramide**. De Engelse titel van het model is de **Protection Pyramid Approach**. Dit model bestaat uit acht componenten die elk weer uit een aantal deelelementen bestaan. Het idee achter het model is dat de verschillende actoren gebruik kunnen (en moeten) maken van die acht componenten om zowel een goed beeld te krijgen van wat bescherming in een bepaalde crisis inhoudt. Verder kunnen actoren (onder andere door middel van samenwerking) ertoe bijdragen dat intern ontheemde mensen bescherming genieten. De acht componenten van het model hebben als doel de verschillende aspecten van bescherming uit te lichten en tegelijkertijd aan te geven hoe bijgedragen kan worden aan het verbeteren van bescherming.

De eerste component probeert door middel van criteria en typologieën inzicht te verwerven in de beschermingscultuur en context waarin actoren moeten gaan werken. In de tweede component wordt meer aandacht besteed aan wie de verschillende actoren zijn die invloed hebben (zowel positief als negatief) op de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen. Ook wordt er in deze component aan de verschillende actoren gevraagd aan te geven wat zij zien als de beschermingsbenodigdheden van intern ontheemde mensen. Het doel achter deze exercitie is, gebaseerd op de academische traditie van dualiteiten, mogelijkheden tot samenwerking op het gebied van bescherming helder te krijgen. De gesuggereerde, meest succesvolle, vorm van samenwerking is in partnerschap te werken (volgens de Partnerschip Approach to Protection). Component drie introduceert de Behoeftetheorie van Abraham Maslow. De, uit vijf lagen bestaande, Pyramide die in deze theorie gebruikt wordt, maakt het mogelijk de geïdentificeerde beschermingsbehoefte visueel weer te geven. Daardoor wordt het makkelijk voor de verschillende actoren te zien waar de prioriteiten voor het aanbieden van bescherming liggen en in hoeverre de verschillende actoren op één lijn zitten wat betreft de beschermingsbehoeften van intern ontheemde mensen.

In de vierde component wordt een nieuwe definitie van bescherming aangeboden om uit te stijgen boven de uitgebreide, maar weinig concrete, bestaande definities van bescherming. De nieuwe definitie berust op drie elementen en de noodzaak die drie elementen te allen tijde te laten samen werken. De drie elementen zijn 'rechten, levensonderhoud en waardigheid'. Het belang van rechten wordt in de vijfde element verder uitgewerkt door twee Convenanten van de Internationale Mensenrechten Wetgeving toe te voegen aan het model. De civiel-politieke en economische, sociaal en culturele rechten convenanten zijn aan Maslow's piramide gekoppeld waardoor de zogenoemde Beschermingspiramide (waaraan dit model zijn naam dankt) ontstaan is. De beschermingspiramide maakt het mogelijk voor de verschillende actoren beter met elkaar te communiceren.

In de zesde component wordt Structuration Theory van Anthony Giddens toegevoegd. Giddens heeft veel denkwerk verricht bij de ontwikkeling van deze abstracte theorie, waardoor

die een unieke mogelijkheid biedt, toegepast te worden op allerlei terreinen, zo ook op dit onderzoeksterrein. Giddens introduceert de concepten van ‘Agency, Structure en Duality of Structure’ die goed vertaald kunnen worden naar de werkwijze van de verschillende actoren (Bottom Up, Top Down en Partnerschap samenwerking). Om er toch voor te zorgen dat het model toepasbaar blijft op de werkelijkheid, concentreert de zevende component zich op de drie fases van ontheemding. In de achtste component wordt tenslotte de interactie tussen alle componenten mogelijk gemaakt. De inzichten die deze interactie tot stand brengt, wordt door middel van een terugkoppelingsmechanisme aan de verschillende actoren teruggespeeld, zodat zij hun activiteiten aan kunnen passen.

Doordat actoren alle componenten van het model gebruiken, wordt hun inzicht in de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen vergroot en zien zij beter welke mogelijkheden tot samenwerking er bestaan met andere actoren, ter verbetering van de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen. Andere bevindingen die uit dit onderzoek voortkomen zijn de conclusie dat de ontwikkelde beschermingspiramide, met de bijbehorende componenten, fungeert als een routekaart met als eindbestemming bescherming van ontheemde mensen. De vervulling van de beschermingspiramide gebeurt echter niet alleen op Maslow’s hiërarchische wijze. Soms wordt eerst het bovenste deel van de piramide vervuld. Andere keren wordt de beschermingspiramide in zijn geheel vervuld maar dan op het niveau van component elementen. Het voordeel van de ontwikkelde beschermingspiramide is dat daardoor vergelijkingen tussen actoren en casestudie landen mogelijk is. Dit is een nuttige eigenschap van het model aangezien zowel BU als TD actoren zowel positief als negatief bijdragen aan bescherming. Verder zijn additionele dualiteiten met betrekking tot Giddens’ theorie gevonden, waardoor de interactie tussen BU en TD actoren realistischer weer kan worden gegeven.

In dit proefschrift is het belang en de noodzaak van de realiteit proefondervindelijk bewezen aangezien de ontwikkeling van het model steeds beïnvloed werd door de empirische data verzameld in Colombia en Oeganda. Daardoor heeft een intrinsieke verweving van theorie en praktijk plaatsgevonden. Eén van de uitkomsten van het onderzoek is dan ook dat deze verweving te allen tijde moet blijven plaats vinden om er zorg voor te dragen dat dit model voor de bescherming van intern ontheemde mensen in alle toekomstige crises van interne ontheemding gebruikt kan worden. Continue interactie tussen de verschillende actoren en gebruik maken van alle componenten van het model zullen er dan voor zorgen dat intern ontheemden de bescherming krijgen die ze verdienen.

Curriculum Vitae

Laura Brinks Janssen was born on the 21st of October 1980 in Rotterdam. When she was 2,5 years old the family moved to the United States where they lived till Laura was almost seven. Her interest in international affairs prompted her to attend a bilingual secondary school, the Wolfert van Borselen. Moving to the far North of the country, Laura enrolled into the Master International Relations/International Organisations after having completed her '*propedeuse*' in History. Doing her internships at the Royal Dutch Embassy in Kigali, Rwanda and the United Nations Organisation for Humanitarian Action (UNOCHA) in Geneva, Laura realized she wanted to specialize in Humanitarianism. Therefore, she applied, and was admitted, to the MA Network on Humanitarian Action programme in Dublin, Ireland. Upon completion of this study she contacted her old boss at UNOCHA, Mr. Rudolf Muller. He was able to organize a local job for her with UNOCHA in South Sudan and Information and Reports Officer. Given her organizational skills, Laura was soon moved to the position of Tracking and Monitoring Officer for UNOCHA. Her duties consisted of training and supporting enumerators working along the border between (then still) North and South Sudan. These enumerators interviewed South Sudanese people who were returning home to South Sudan after having lived in camps in North Sudan during the war. The information collected by the enumerators enable UNOCHA to ensure that assistance was provided where needed.

When the Tracking and Monitoring project was taken over by the International Organisation for Migration (IOM) Laura transferred to this organization as well. IOM soon became the implementing partner for the Joint Plan for Organised Return, agreed upon between the Governments of North and South Sudan and the United Nations. Laura was tasked with developing and setting up a Registration and Verification project. The aim of the project was to ensure that the one million South Sudanese living in camps were able to register and be selected for return. Once this project was up and running Laura decided she wanted to consolidate her knowledge to ensure future operations benefitted from the lessons she had learned. Starting her PhD at the University College in Dublin, she later on transferred to the Rijksuniversiteit Groningen through a Marie Curie scholarship grant. During her PhD research Laura was also employed by the university as lecturer. Lecturing and researching at the same time allowed her to realize the benefit of having a constant interaction between theory and reality, which found its way into her newly developed model called the Protection Pyramid Approach. Upon completion of her PhD Laura became self-employed and has been back to South Sudan with Child Helpline International to research the possibilities of setting up a helpline in this young and traumatized country.

Reference List

- Acemoglu, D., Robinson, J. A., & Santos, R. (2009). Working Paper 15578. *National Bureau of Economic Research*, 1-50. Retrieved April 21, 2015, from www.nber.org/papers/w15578
- Adler, S. (1977). Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs and the Adjustments of Immigrants. *International Migration Review*, 11 (4), 444-451.
- Alderfer, C. P. (1969). An Empirical Test of a New Theory of Human Need. *Organizational Behaviour and Human Performance*, 4, 142-175.
- Alkire, S. (2003). A Conceptual Framework for Human Security [Electronic version]. *Centre for Research on Inequality, Human Security and Ethnicity*, Working Paper 2.
- Allen, T. (2010). Bitter Roots: the 'invention' of Acholi traditional justice. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 242-261). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Alvesson, M. & Sköldbberg, K. (2000). *Reflexive Methodology: New Vistas for Qualitative Research*. London, Thousand Oaks, New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Angrist, J. D., & Kugler, A. D. (2005). Working Paper Series 11219. *National Bureau of Economic Research*, 1-34. Retrieved April 21, 2015, from www.nber.org/papers/w11219
- Angucia, M., Zeelen, J., & De Jong, G. (2010). Researching the Reintegration of Formerly Abducted Children in Northern Uganda through Action Research: Experiences and Reflections. *Journal of Community and Applied Social Psychology*, 20(3), 217-231.
- ARLPI. (2001) Let My People Go [Electronic version]. *Justice & Peace Commission of Gulu Archdiocese* Retrieved December 19, 2014, from www.archdioceseofgulu.org/jpc/let_my_people_go.pdf
- Ashley, C., & Carney, D. (1999). *Sustainable Livelihoods: Lessons from Early Experience*. London: Department for International Development.
- Atkinson, R. R. (2010). "The realists in Juba?" An Analysis of the Juba peace talks. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 205-222). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Baert, P. (1998). *Social Theory in the Twentieth Century*. Cambridge and Oxford: Polity Press.
- Bagguley, P. (2003). Reflexivity Contra Structuration. *Canadian Journal of Sociology*, 28(2), 133-152.
- Bagley, B. M. (1988). Colombia and the War on Drugs. *Foreign Affairs*, 67(1), 70-92.
- Bagshaw, S., & Diane, P. (2003). The Protection Survey. *Internal Displacement Unit and Brookings Institute - SAIS Project on Internal Displacement*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from

https://interagencystandingcommittee.org/system/files/legacy_files/IDP%20Protection%20Survey.doc.pdf

- Bagshaw, S., & Diane, P. (2004). *Protect or Neglect: Towards a More Effective United Nations Approach to the Protection of Internally Displaced Persons*. Brookings-Sais Project on Internal Displacement and UNOCHA Inter-Agency Internal Displacement Division.
- Bakama, B. B. N., (2010). *Contemporary Geography of Uganda*. Dar es Salaam: Mkuki na Nyota Publishers.
- Barkan, J. D. (2011). *Uganda Assessing Risks to Stability*. Available from <http://csis.org/publication/uganda>
- Barya, J., Mugaju, J., & Oloka-Onyango, J. (2000). *No-Party Democracy in Uganda Myths and Realities*. Kampala: Fountain Publishers.
- Baylis, J., Smith, S., & Owens, P. (2014). *The Globalization of World Politics: An Introduction to International Relations* (6th ed.). Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Beehr, T. A., & McGath, J. E. (1996). The Methodology of Research on Coping: Conceptual, Strategic and Operational-Level Issues. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 65-82). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Behrend, H., Hansen, H. B., & Twaddle, M. (1991). *Changing Uganda*. Kenya, London, Kampala, Athens, Nairobi: James Currey, Fountain Press, Ohio University Press, Heinemann.
- Beittel, J. S. (2015). *Peace Talks in Colombia*. Available from www.crs.gov
- Berry, K., & Reddy, S. (2010). Safety with Dignity Integrating Community-based protection into Humanitarian Programming. *ODI HPN*, Network Paper 68 (March), 1-24. Retrieved September 02, 2013, from <http://odihpn.org/resources/safety-with-dignity-integrating-community-based-protection-into-humanitarian-programming/>
- Boas, M., & Hatloy, A. (2005). Northern Uganda Internally Displaced Persons Profiling Study. *UNDP*. Retrieved December 19, 2014, from www.fao.no/ais/africa/uganda/IDP_uganda_2005.pdf
- Bode, I. (2014). Francis Deng and the Concern for Internally Displaced Persons: Intellectual Leadership in the United Nations. *Global Governance*, 20, 277-295.
- Boog, B., Slagter, M., & Zeelen, J. (2008). Developing Ethics and Standards in Action Research. *Social Intervention: Theory and Practice*, 17(4), 15-28.
- Borton, J, Buchanan-Smith, M., & Otto, R. (2005). *Support to IDPs - Learning from Evaluations, Synthesis Report of a Joint Evaluation Programme*. Available from <http://www.alnap.org/resource/3244>
- Boudon, L. (2000). Party System Deinstitutionalization: The 1997-98 Colombian Elections in Historical Perspective. *Journal of Interamerican Studies and World Affairs*, 42(3), 33-57.

- Bouvier, V. M. (2007). *New Hopes for Negotiated Solutions in Colombia*. Washington: United States Institute of Peace.
- Bradley, M. (2007). Return in Dignity: A Neglected Protection Challenge. *Refugee Studies Centre Working Paper Series*, 40. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from www.rsc.ox.ac.uk
- Branch, A. (2013). Gulu in War ... and Peace? The Town as Camp in Northern Uganda. *Urban Studies*, 50 (15), 3152-3167.
- Branch, A. (2007). *The Political Dilemmas of Global Justice: Anti-Civilian Violence and the Violence of Humanitarianism, The Case of Northern Uganda*. Available from https://www.researchgate.net/publication/268045582_The_Political_Dilemmas_of_Global_Justice_Anti-Civilian_Violence_and_the_Violence_of_Humanitarianism_the_Case_of_Northern_Uganda
- Branch, A. (2011). *Displacing Human Rights War and Intervention in Northern Uganda*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.
- Branch, A. (2005). Neither Peace nor Justice: Political Violence and the Peasantry in Northern Uganda, 1986-1998. *African Studies Quarterly*, 8(2), 1-31.
- Branch, A. (2009). Humanitarianism, Violence and the Camp in Northern Uganda. *Civil Wars*, 11 (4), 477-501. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://www.tandfonline.com/doi/abs/10.1080/13698240903403857>
- Branch, A. (2010). Exploring the roots of LRA violence: political crisis and ethnic politics in Acholiland. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 25-44). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Branch, A. (2008). Against Humanitarian Impunity: Rethinking Responsibility for Displacement and Disaster in Northern Uganda. *Journal of Intervention and Statebuilding*, 2(2), 151-173. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://www.tandfonline.com/doi/abs/10.1080/17502970801988057>
- Braun, N. (2009). Displacing, Returning, and Pilgrimage: The Construction of Social Orders of Violence and Non-violence in Colombia. *Civil Wars*, 11(4), 455-476.
- Bredemeier, H. C. (1955). The Methodology of Functionalism. *American Sociological Review*, 20(2), 173-180.
- Brennan, R. J., & Martone, G. (2007). The Evolving Role of Relief Organizations in Human Rights and Protection. In J.D. White, & A. J. Marsella (Ed.), *Fear of Persecution: Global Human Rights, International Law and Human Wellbeing* (pp.75-92). Lanham, Boulder, New York, Toronto, Plymouth UK: Lexington Books (A division of Rowman & Littlefield Publishers INC).
- Brenner, N. (1994). Foucault's New Functionalism. *Theory and Society*, 23(5), 679-709.
- Brigg, M. (2002). Post-Development, Foucault and the Colonisation Metaphor. *Third World Quarterly*, 23(3), 421-436.

- Briggs, C. L. (1986). *Learning how to Ask: A Sociolinguistic Appraisal of the Role of the Interview in Social Science Research*. Cambridge, London, New York, New Rochelle, Melbourne, Sydney: Cambridge University Press.
- Briggs, J., & Sharp, J. (2004). Indigenous knowledges and development: a postcolonial caution. *Third World Quarterly*, 25(4), 661-676.
- Broere, M., & Vermaas, P. (2005). *Uganda*. Amsterdam: KIT Publishers.
- Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement & The Brookings Institution. (2008). *Manual for Law and Policy Makers*. Washington DC: Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement & The Brookings Institution.
- Brookings Institution & Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement. (2008). *Moving Beyond Rhetoric*. Bern: University of Bern.
- Brookings Institution & Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement. (2005). *Framework for National Responsibility*. Bern: University of Bern.
- Brookings Institution & Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement. (2008). *Listening to the Voices of the Displaced - Lessons Learned*. Bern: University of Bern.
- Brookings-Bern Project on Internal Displacement & UNHCR. (2007). Expert Seminar on Protracted IDP Situations. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.brookings.edu/events/expert-seminar-on-protracted-idp-situations/>
- Brubacher, M. (2010). The ICC investigation of the Lord's Resistance Army: an insiders' view. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 262-278). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Bryant, C. G.A. (1992). Sociology without Philosophy? The Case of Giddens's Structuration Theory. *Sociological Theory*, 10(2), 137-149.
- Byrne, C. (2003). *Participation by Crisis-Affected Populations in Humanitarian Action A Handbook for Practitioners*. London: ALNAP.
- Cannon, T., Twigg, J., & Rowell, J. (2004). Social Vulnerability, Sustainable Livelihoods and Disasters. *Report to DFID Conflict and Humanitarian Assistance Department and Sustainable Livelihoods Support Office*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://www.eldis.org/go/home&id=21628&type=Document#.VzNUzun-t8A>
- Care Inc. (2001). *Benefits and Harms Handbook*. Nairobi: Atlanta.
- Caritas Care, Oxfam Australia, & World Vision. (2008). *Minimum Agency Standards for Incorporating Protection into Humanitarian Response - Field Testing Version*. Available from <https://drc.ngo/media/2113371/minimum-agency-standards-for-incorporating-protection-into-humanitarian-reponse.pdf>
- Cashman, G., & Robinson, L. C. (2007). *An Introduction to the Causes of War*. Lanham, Plymouth: Rowman& Littlefield Publishers INC.
- Chambers, R. (1994). The origins and practice of participatory rural appraisal. *World Development*, 22(7), 953-969.

- Chambers, R., & Conway, G. R. (1991). Sustainable Rural Livelihoods: Practical Concepts for the 21st Century. *IDS Discussion Paper 296*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://www.ids.ac.uk/publication/sustainable-rural-livelihoods-practical-concepts-for-the-21st-century>
- CIA Factbook. (2016). *Bosnia People and Society*. Retrieved June 6, 2016, from the CIA Factbook website: <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/bk.html>
- CIA Factbook. (2016). *Colombia People and Society*. Retrieved June 6, 2016, from the CIA Factbook website: <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/co.html>
- CIA Factbook. (2016). *Uganda People and Society*. Retrieved June 6, 2016, from the CIA Factbook website: <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/ug.html>
- CIA Factbook. (2016). *Uganda*. Retrieved December 4, 2014, from the CIA Factbook website: <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/ug.html>
- Cliff, L., & Luckham, R. (1999). Complex Political Emergencies and the State: Failure and the Fate of the State. *Third World Quarterly*, 20(1), 27-50.
- CNN (2001, November 6). You are Either With Us or Against Us. *CNN*. Retrieved February 15, 2016, from <http://edition.cnn.com/2001/US/11/06/gen.attack.on.terror/>
- Cohen, I. J. (1989). *Structuration Theory: Anthony Giddens and the Constitution of Social Life*. Houndsmill, Basingstroke, Hampshire, London: MACMILLAN EDUCATION LTD.
- Cohen, R., & Deng, F. M. (1998). *Masses in Flight*. Washington: The Brookings Institution.
- Cohen, R. (2006). Developing an International System for Internally Displaced Persons. *International Studies Perspective*, 7, 87-101. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/10.1111/j.1528-3585.2006.00233.x/full>
- Cohen, R. (2006). Strengthening Protection of IDPs: The UN's Role. *Law & Ethics*, Winter/Spring, 101-110.
- Cohen, R. (2007). The Global Crisis of Internal Displacement. In J. D. White, & A. J. Marsella (Ed.), *Fear of Persecution: Global Human Rights, International Law and Human Wellbeing* (pp.15-32). Lanham, Boulder, New York, Toronto, Plymouth UK: Lexington Books (A division of Rowman & Littlefield Publishers INC).
- Cohen, R. (2010). Reconciling R2P with IDP Protection. In L. Glanville & S. E. Davies (Ed.), *Protecting the Displaced* (pp. 35-58). Leiden: Koninklijke Brill.
- Cohen, R. (2014). Lessons from the Development of the Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement. *FMR*, 45 (February), 12-14. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/crisis/cohen.pdf>
- Commins, S. (2007). *Treading a Delicate Path NGOs in Fragile States*. London: Save the Children. Retrieved February 11, 2016, from <http://www.alnap.org/resource/9378>

- Commission on Human Security. (2003). *Human Security Now*. Available from <http://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/91BAEEDBA50C6907C1256D19006A9353-chs-security-may03.pdf>
- Cornwall, A., & Nyamu-Musembi, C. (2004). Putting the 'Rights-based Approach' to development into Perspective. *Third World Quarterly*, 25(8), 1415-1437.
- Crisp, J., Kiragu, E., & Tennant, Vicky. (2007). UNHCR, IDPs and Humanitarian Reform. *FMR*, 29, 12-14. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/FMRpdfs/FMR29/12-14.pdf>
- CSOPNU. (2004). *Nowhere to Hide*. Kampala: c/o Care International. Available from www.alnap.org/pool/files/nowhere-hide-northern-uganda-081204-en.pdf
- CSOPNU. (2006). *Counting the Cost Twenty Years of War in Northern Uganda*. Available from www.oxfam.org/sites/www.oxfam.org/files/uganda.pdf
- CSOPNU. (2007). *Between Hope and Fear in Northern Uganda: Challenges on the Ground and an Urgent Need for Peace*. Available from www.oxfamamerica.org/static/oa3/files/between-hope-and-fear.pdf
- Dang, A. (2014). Amartya Sen's Capability Approach: A Framework for Well-Being Evaluation and Policy Analysis?. *Review of Social Economy*, 72(4), 460-484. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from <http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/00346764.2014.958903>
- Darcy, J. (1997). Human Rights and International Legal Standards: What do Relief Workers Need to Know?. *RRN Network Paper*, 19 (February), 5-39. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/2325.pdf>
- Darcy, J., & Hofmann, C. (2003). According to Need? Needs Assessment in Decision-making in the Humanitarian Sector. *ODI HPG Report*, 15 (September). Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/285.pdf>
- Darcy, J., & Collinson, S. (2009). Realising Protection: The Uncertain Benefits of Civilian, Refugee and IDP Status. *HPG Report*, 28 (September). Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/5100.pdf>
- Davies, S. E. (2010). Introduction. In L. Glanville & S. E. Davies (Ed.), *Protecting the Displaced* (pp. 1-12). Leiden: Koninklijke Brill.
- Davis, I., Haghebaert, B., & Peppiatt, D. (2004). Vulnerability and Capacity Analysis *Tools for Mainstreaming Disaster Risk Reduction*, Guidance Note 9. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from http://www.proventionconsortium.net/themes/default/pdfs/tools_for_mainstreaming_GN9.pdf

- Demerath III, N.J. (1996). Who now debates functionalism? From system, change and conflict to “culture, choice, and praxis”. *Sociological Forum*, 11(2), 333-345.
- Deng, F. (1999). *Report of the Representative of the Secretary General Mr. Francis Deng, submitted pursuant to Commission Resolution 1998/50*. Commission on Human Rights E/CN.4/1999/79/Add.2. Available from http://ap.ohchr.org/documents/alldocs.aspx?doc_id=1540
- Department of Disaster Preparedness in the Office of the Prime Minister. (2012). *Uganda Humanitarian Profile – 2012*. Available from reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb..../uganda_humanitarian_profile__2012.pdf
- DfID. (1999). Livelihoods Analysis Model. *Key Sheets for Sustainable Livelihoods*. Available from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/3219.pdf>
- Diagne, K., & Entwisle, H. (2008). UNHCR and the Guiding Principles. *FMR*, GP 10 Special Issue, 33-35. Retrieved June 9, 2015, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/FMRpdfs/GP10/GP10.pdf>
- Díaz, A. M., & Sánchez, F. (2004). A Geography of Illicit Crops (Coca Leaf) and Armed Conflict in Colombia. *LSE International Development Working Papers*, Series 1, 1-67. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://www.lse.ac.uk/internationalDevelopment/research/crisisStates/Publications/phase1papers.aspx>
- Dolan, C. (2005). *Understanding War and Its Continuation The Case of Northern Uganda*. Available from <http://etheses.lse.ac.uk/832/>
- Dolan, C. (2006). Uganda Strategic Conflict Analysis. Available from http://www.sida.se/English/publications/Publication_database/publications-by-year1/2007/mars/uganda-strategic-conflict-analysis/
- Dolan, C., & Hovil, L. (2006). Humanitarian Protection in Uganda: a Trojan Horse? *ODI HPG*, Background Paper (December). Retrieved December 18, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/381.pdf41991>
- Dom, L. (2005). Het Nut van Giddens' Structuratie theorie voor Empirisch Onderzoek in de Sociale Wetenschappen. *Mens & Maatschappij*, 80(1), 69-91.
- Doom, R., & Vlassenroot, K. (1999). Kony's Message: A New Koine? The Lord's Resistance Army in Northern Uganda. *African Affairs*, 98(390), 5-36.
- Drzewicki, K. (2004). The UN Charter and the Universal Declaration of Human Rights. In R. Hanski, & M. Suksi (Ed.), *An Introduction to the International Protection of Human Rights* (pp. Not Available). Turku/Abo: Institute for Human Rights Abo Akademi University.

- Dubois, M. (2010). Protection: Fig-leaves and other delusions. *ODI Humanitarian Exchange*, 46 (March), 1-47. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://odihpn.org/magazine/protection-fig-leaves-and-other-delusions/>
- Durham, H., & McCormack, T. L.M. (1999). *The Changing Face of Conflict and the Efficacy of International Humanitarian Law*. The Hague: Kluwer Law International.
- ECOSOCC. (2010). Making the Kampala Convention Work for IDPs. Available from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/assets/publications/2010/2010-making-the-kampala-convention-work-thematic-en.pdf>
- Elhawary, S. (2010). Security for Whom? Stabilisation and Civilian Protection in Colombia. *Disasters*, 34(3), 388-405.
- Evans, G. (2008). *The Responsibility to Protect: Ending Mass Atrocity Once and for All*. Washington: The Brookings Institute.
- Farrington, J., Carney, D., Ashley, C., & Turton, C. (1999). Sustainable Livelihoods in Practice: Early Applications of Concepts in Rural Areas. *ODI - Natural Resource Perspectives*, Number 42. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from www.ids.a.uk/livelihoods
- Felce, D., & Perry, J. (1995). Quality of life: Its definition and measurement. *Research in Developmental Disabilities*, 16(1), 51-74.
- Feller, E. (2006). UNHCR's Role in IDP Protection. *FMR/Brookings-Bern Special Issue*, 11-13. Retrieved January 22, 2016 from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/FMRpdfs/BrookingsSpecial/07.pdf>
- Ferris, E. G. (2008). Internally Displaced Persons: A Neglected Issue on the International Agenda. *New Routes*, 4. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/01_internal_displacement_ferris.pdf
- Ferris, E. G. (2011). *The Politics of Protection*. Washington: The Brookings Institute.
- Ferris, E. G. (2014). Ten Years After Humanitarian Reform: How have IDPs Fared? *Brookings Institute -LSE Project on Internal Displacement publication*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/Introduction-to-final-report-IDP-Study-FINAL.pdf>
- Finnstrom, S. (2003). *Living with Bad Surroundings War and Existential Uncertainty in Acholiland, Northern Uganda*. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.
- Finnstrom, S. (2010). An African hell of colonial imagination? The Lord's Resistance Army in Uganda, another story. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 74-92). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Fisher, D. (2006). *Guide to International Human Rights Mechanisms for Internally Displaced Persons and their Advocates*. Available from http://www.globalprotectioncluster.org/_assets/files/tools_and_guidance/protection_of_idps/Human_Rights_Mechanisms_for_IDPs-EN.pdf

- Fiszbein, A. (1997). The Emergence of Local Capacity: Lessons From Colombia. *World Development*, 25(7), 1029-1043.
- Flyvbjerg, B. (2001). *Making Social Science Matter: Why Social Inquiry Fails and How it can Succeed Again*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Foucault, M., & Faubion, J. D. (2000). *Power*. New York: The New Press.
- Frankl, V.E. (2000). *Man's Search for Ultimate Meaning*. New York: Perseus Publishing.
- Friedman, V. J. (2006). Action Science: Creating Communities of Inquiry in Communities of Practice. In P. Reason, & H. Bradbury (Ed.), *Handbook of Action Research Participative Inquiry and Practice* (pp. 159-170). London, Thousand Oaks, New Delhi : Sage Publications Ltd.
- Frohardt, M., Paul, D., & Minear, L. (1999). *Protecting Human Rights: The Challenge to Humanitarian Organizations*. Occasional Paper 35. Providence, USA: The Thomas J. Watson Jr. Institute for International Studies. Available from www.alnap.org/pool/files/op35.pdf
- Galtung, J. (1994). *Human Rights in Another Key*. Cambridge and Oxford: Polity Press.
- Garfield, R., Blake, C., Chatainger, P., & Walton-Ellery, S. (2011). Common Needs Assessments and Humanitarian Action. *ODI HPN Network Paper*, 69 (January). Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://odihpn.org/resources/common-needs-assessments-and-humanitarian-action/>
- Gelsdorf, K., Maxwell, D., & Mazurana, D. (2012). Livelihoods, Basic Services and Social Protection in Northern Uganda and Karamoja. *Secure Livelihoods Research Consortium*, Working Paper 4. Retrieved December 22, 2014, from <http://www.odi.org/publications/6755-livelihoods-basic-services-social-protection-northern-uganda-karamoja>
- Gersony, R. (1997). *The Anguish of Northern Uganda Results of a Field-based Assessment of the Civil Conflicts in Northern Uganda*. Kampala: USAID. Retrieved December 15, 2014, from pdf.usaid.gov/pdf_docs/PNACC245.pdf
- Giddens, A. (1979). *Central Problems in Social Theory*. London and Basingstoke: The Macmillan Press Ltd.
- Giddens, A. (1984). *The Constitution of Society*. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press.
- Glanville, L. (2010). The International Community's Responsibility to Protect. In L. Glanville & S. E. Davies (Ed.), *Protecting the Displaced* (pp. 185-204). Leiden: Koninklijke Brill.
- Glaser, B. G., & Strauss, A. L. (1977). *The Discovery of Grounded Theory* (8th ed.). Chicago: Aldine Publishing Company.
- Goble, F. G. (1977). *De Psychologie van Abraham Maslow: De Derde Weg* (4th ed.). Rotterdam: Lemniscaat.

- Gomez-Suarez, A. (2007). Perpetrator blocs, genocidal mentalities and geographies: the destruction of the Union Patriótica in Colombia and its lessons for genocide studies. *Journal of Genocide Research*, 9(4), 637-660.
- Gomez-Suarez, A., & Newman, J. (2013). Safeguarding Political Guarantees in the Colombian Peace Process: have Santos and FARC learnt the lessons from the past? *Third World Quarterly*, 34(5), 819-837.
- Goodhand, J., & Hulme, D. (1999). From Wars to Complex Political Emergencies: Understanding Conflict and Peace-building in the New World Disorder. *Third World Quarterly*, 20(1), 13-26.
- Goodman, R.A. (1968). On the Operationality of the Maslow Need Hierarchy. *British Journal of Industrial Relations*, 6(1), 51-57.
- Government of Uganda. (2007). *Peace Recovery and Development Plan for Northern Uganda*. Kampala: Republic of Uganda. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://opm.go.ug/resource-center/special-programmes-publications/northern-uganda1/northern-uganda-prdp.html>
- Government of Uganda – Office of the Prime Minister. (2008). *Camp Phase Out Guidelines for All Districts that have IDP Camps*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from www.brookings.edu/~/.../Uganda_Camp_Closure_Guidelines_2008.pdf
- GPCWG. (2007). *Handbook for the Protection of IDPs - Provisional Release*. Geneva: Global Protection Cluster Working Group.
- GPCWG. (2008). *Protection of Conflict-Induced IDPs: Assessment for Action*. Geneva: Protection Cluster Working Group and the Early Recovery Cluster Working Group.
- GPCWG. (2010). *Handbook for the Protection of IDPs*. Geneva: Global Protection Cluster Working Group.
- Gray, V. J. (2008). The New Research on Civil Wars: Does It Help Us Understand the Colombian Conflict?. *Latin American Politics and Society*, 50(3), 63-91.
- Groarke, S. (2002). Psychoanalysis and Structuration Theory: The Logic of Identity. *Sociology*, 36(3), 559-576.
- Gubrium, J. F., & Holstein, J. A. (2000). Analyzing Interpretive Practice. In N. K. Denzin, & Y. S. Lincoln (Ed.), *Handbook of Qualitative Research* (pp. 487-508) (2nd ed.). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications Ltd.
- Gutiérrez Sanín, F. (2004). Criminal rebels? A discussion of civil war and criminality from the Colombian experience. *Politics and Society*, 32(2), 257-285.
- Gutiérrez Sanín, F. (2006). Internal conflict, terrorism and crime in Colombia. *Journal of International Development*, 18(1), 137-150.
- Gutiérrez Sanín, F. (2008). Telling the Difference: Guerrillas and Paramilitaries in the Colombian War. *Politics and Society*, 36(1), 3-34.
- Hables, G. (1997). *Postmodern War*. London and New York: Routledge.

- Hall, D. T., & Nougaim, K. E. (1968). An Examination of Maslow's Need Hierarchy in an Organizational Setting. *Organizational Behaviour and Human Performance*, 3, 12-35.
- HAP Editorial Steering Committee. (2007). *Humanitarian Accountability Project*. Available from www.hapinternational.org
- Harbaugh, T. E. (1972). *A Validation Study of Maslow Hierarchy of Needs*. Ann Arbor, Michigan: University Microfilms, A Xerox Company.
- Harvey, P. (2009). Towards Good Humanitarian Government. *ODI HPG Report*, 29 (September). Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/5076.pdf>
- Hatakka, M., & Lagsten, J. (2012). The capability approach as a tool for development evaluation – analysing students' use of internet resources. *Information Technology for Development*, 18(1), 23-41. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from <http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/02681102.2011.617722>
- Hobfoll, S. E., Freedy, J. R., Green, B. L., & Solomon, S. D. (1996). Coping in Reaction to Extreme Stress: The Roles of Resource Loss and Resource Availability. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 322-349). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Holahan, C. J., Moos, R. H., & Schaeffer, J.A. (1996). Coping, Stress, and Growth: Conceptualising Adaptive Functioning. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 24-43). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Horowitz, I. L. (1963). Sociology and Politics: The Myth of Functionalism Revisited. *The Journal of Politics*, 25(2), 248-264.
- Hoskin, G., & Castrano, G. M. (2001). Colombia's Perpetual Quest for Peace. *Journal of Democracy*, 12(2), 32-45.
- Howard, R. E., & Donnelly, J. (1986). Human Dignity, Human Rights and Political Regimes. *The American Political Science Review*, 80(3), 801-817. Retrieved from JSTOR database.
- HRC. (2010). *Right to Development - Report to the High-level Task Force on the Implementation of the Right to Development on its Sixth Session*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://www.ohchr.org/EN/HRBodies/HRC/Pages/Documents.aspx>
- HRC. (2011). *Report of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights on the situation of human rights in Colombia*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from http://www.hchr.org.co/documentoseinformes/informes/altocomisionado/Informe2010_eng.pdf
- HRC. (2012). *Annual report of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from

- http://www.ohchr.org/Documents/HRBodies/HRCouncil/RegularSession/Session19/A-HRC-19-21-Add3_en.pdf
- HRW. (2005). *Uprooted and Forgotten Impunity and Human Rights Abuses in Northern Uganda*. Human Rights Watch, 17(12A), 1-76. Retrieved December 19, 2014, from www.hrw.org/reports/2005/uganda0905/uganda0905.pdf
- Huitt, W. (2011). Motivation to Learn: An Overview. *Educational Psychology Interactive*. Retrieved March, 30, 2012 from www.edpsycinteractive.org/topics/motivation/motivate.html
- Huizinga, G. (1970). *Maslow's Need Hierarchy in the Work Situation*. Groningen: Wolters-Noordhoff.
- HRI. (2006). Report on Indicators for Monitoring Compliance with International Human Rights Instruments. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://www2.ohchr.org/english/issues/indicators/docs/HRI-MC-2006-7.pdf>
- HRI. (2008). *Report on Indicators for Promoting and Monitoring the Implementation of Human Rights*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from http://www2.ohchr.org/english/issues/indicators/docs/HRI.MC.2008.3_en.pdf
- Hylton, F. (2006). *Evil hour in Colombia*. London and New York: Verso.
- IASC. (2000). *Protection of Internally Displaced Persons*. IASC Policy Paper Series, 2. New York.
- IASC. (2002). *Growing the Shelter Tree: Protecting Rights through Humanitarian Action*. Available from <http://www.refworld.org/docid/483eb0d62.html>
- IASC. (2004). *Implementing the Collaborative Response to Situations of Internal Displacement*. Available from <http://www.refworld.org/pdfid/41ee9a074.pdf>
- IASC. (2006). *Guidance Note on Using the Cluster Approach to Strengthen Humanitarian Response*. Available from [https://www.humanitarianresponse.info/system/files/documents/files/IASC%20Guidance%20Note%20on%20using%20the%20Cluster%20Approach%20to%20Strengthen%20Humanitarian%20Response%20\(November%202006\).pdf](https://www.humanitarianresponse.info/system/files/documents/files/IASC%20Guidance%20Note%20on%20using%20the%20Cluster%20Approach%20to%20Strengthen%20Humanitarian%20Response%20(November%202006).pdf)
- Ibingira, G.S.K. (1973). *The Forging of an African Nation The Political and Constitutional Evolution of Uganda from Colonial Rule to Independence*. New York and Kampala: The Viking Press & Uganda Publishing House.
- ICISS. (2001). *The Responsibility to Protect*. Available from <http://responsibilitytoprotect.org/ICISS%20Report.pdf>
- ICRC., Giossi Caverzasio, S. (Ed.) (2001). *Strengthening Protection in War*. Geneva: ICRC Central Tracing Agency and Protection Division.
- ICRC. (2008). *Enhancing Protection for Civilians in Armed Conflict and Other Situations of Violence*. Geneva: International Committee of the Red Cross.

- ICRC. (2009). *Humanitarian and Human Rights Actors in Armed Conflict and Other Situations of Violence Professional Standards for Protection Work*. Geneva: International Committee of the Red Cross.
- IDMC. (2003). *Profile of Internal Displacement: Uganda*. Geneva: IDMC and NRC. Retrieved December 21, 2014, from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/sub-saharan-africa/uganda/new-archive/uganda-profile-of-internal-displacement-june-2006>
- IDMC. (2010). *Uganda: Difficulties Continue for Returnees and Remaining IDPs as Development Phase begins*. Geneva: IDMC and NRC. Retrieved December 20, 2014, from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/sub-saharan-africa/uganda/2010/uganda-difficulties-continue-for-returnees-and-remaining-idps-as-development-phase-begins>
- IDMC., & Norwegian Refugee Council. (2011). *Property restitution in sight but integration still distant*. Available from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/americas/colombia/2011/colombia-property-restitution-in-sight-but-integration-still-distant-december-2011>
- IDMC. (2012). *Domesticating and Implementing the Kampala Convention: A Dialogue for Action*. Retrieved April 24, 2013, from www.internal-displacement.org/.../201407-af-kampala-convention-law-pdf
- IDMC. (2012). *Uganda: Need to Focus on Returnees and Remaining IDPs in Transition to Development*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/sub-saharan-africa/uganda/2012/need-to-focus-on-returnees-and-remaining-idps-in-transition-to-development>
- IDMC. (2013). *Bosnia and Herzegovina: Internal Displacement in Brief*. Available from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/europe-the-caucasus-and-central-asia/bosnia-and-herzegovina/summary>
- IDMC. (2015). *Understanding the Root Causes of Displacement*. Available from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/assets/publications/2015/20151208-root-causes-displacement.pdf>
- IEP. (2016). *Sen's Capability Approach*. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from the Internet Encyclopaedia of Philosophy website: <http://www.iep.utm.edu/sen-cap/#H3>
- Inter-American Commission on Human Rights. *Colombia 1999*. Available from www.cidh.org/countryrep/Colom99en
- IOM-FOM. (1994). *UNHCR*.
- IRIN. (2003). *Uganda: Civilians Targeted by their Own People*. IRIN News. Retrieved December 19, 2014, from <http://www.irinnews.org/in-depth/70561/31/uganda-civilians-targeted-by-their-own-people>

- IRIN. (2004). Uganda: The 18-Year Old War that Refuses to go Away. IRIN News. Retrieved December 19, 2014, from <http://www.irinnews.org/report/48313/uganda-the-18-year-old-war-that-refuses-to-go-away>
- Jackson, P. (2010). Politics, Religion and the Lord's Resistance Army in Northern Uganda. *Religions and Development Research Programme*, 43, 1-27. Retrieved December 18, 2014, from www.birmingham.ac.uk/Documents/college-social.../rad/.../wp-43.pdf
- Jacoby, T. (2008). *Understanding Conflict and Violence*. London and New York: Routledge.
- Janesick, V. J. (2000). The Choreography of Qualitative Research Design: Minuets, Improvisations and Crystallization. In N. K. Denzin, & Y. S. Lincoln (Ed.), *Handbook of Qualitative Research* (pp. 379-400) (2nd ed.). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications Ltd.
- Jary, D., & Jary, J. (1995). The Transformations of Anthony Giddens - The Continuing Story of Structuration Theory. *Theory, Culture & Society*, 12, 141-160.
- Jaspars, S., & O'Callaghan, S. (2008). Challenging Choices: Protection and Livelihoods in Darfur. *ODI HPG Working Paper*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/3492.pdf>
- Jaspars, S., O'Callaghan, S., & Stites, E. (2007). Linking Livelihoods and Protection: A Preliminary Analysis based on a Review of the Literature and Agency Practice. *ODI HPG Working Paper*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/2362.pdf>
- Joireman, S. F., Sawyer, A., & Wilhoit, J. (2012). A Different Way Home: Resettlement Patterns in Northern Uganda. *Political Geography*, 31, 197-204.
- Jong, M. de. (1999). *Grootmeesters van de Sociologie* (2nd ed.). Amsterdam and Meppel: Boom.
- Kälin, W. (2008). *Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement Annotations 2nd Edition*. Available from <http://www.brookings.edu/research/reports/2008/05/spring-guiding-principles>
- Kälin, W. (2011). Walter Kälin on the Outlook for IDPs. *FMR*, 37, 43-44. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/non-state/43-44.pdf>
- Kent, R. (2009). *Mapping the Models: The Roles and Responsibilities of the Humanitarian Coordinator*. Available from <http://www.humanitarianfutures.org/publications/mapping-the-models-the-roles-and-responsibilities-of-the-un-humanitarian-coordinator/>
- Kincheloe, J. L., & McLaren, P. (2000). Rethinking Critical Theory and Qualitative Research. In N. K. Denzin, & Y. S. Lincoln (Ed.), *Handbook of Qualitative*

- Research* (pp. 279-314) (2nd ed.). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications Ltd.
- King, A. (2000). The Accidental Derogation of the Lay Actor: A Critique of Giddens' Concept of Structure. *Philosophy of the Social Sciences*, 30(3), 362-383.
- Kooistra, J. (1988). *Denken is Bedacht*. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam.
- Krohne, H. W. (1996). Individual Differences in Coping. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 381-409). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Krueger, R. A. (1998). *Developing Questions for Focus Groups*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Kunder, J., & Bylund, B. V. (1998). *Mission to Colombia with a View to Develop Field Practices in Internal Displacement*. New York: UNICEF. Retrieved February 7, 2013, from www.icva.ch/printer/doc00000775.html
- Lane, R. (1994). Structural-Functionalism Reconsidered: A Proposed Research Model. *Comparative Politics*, 26(4), 461-477.
- Lautze, S., & Hammock, J. (1996). *Coping with Crisis; Coping with Aid Capacity Building, Coping Mechanisms and Dependency, Linking Relief and Development*. Available from <http://www.alnap.org/resource/2690>
- Lautze, S., Leaning, J., Raven-Roberts, A., Kent, R., & Mazurana, D. (2004). Assistance, Protection and Governance Networks in Complex Emergencies. *The Lancelot*, 364 (9451), 2134-2141.
- Lawler III, E. E., & Suttle, J. L. (1972). A Causal Correlational Test of the Need Hierarchy Concept. *Organizational Behaviour and Human Performance*, 7, 265-287.
- Layder, D. (1994). *Understanding Social Theory*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Lee, L. T. (2001). The London Declaration of International Law Principles on Internally Displaced Persons. *The American Journal of International Law*, 95(2), 454-458.
- Lee, M. Y. K. (2008). Universal Human Dignity: Some Reflections in the Asian Context. *Asian Journal of Comparative Law*, 3(1), 1-33.
- Leggett, I. (2001). *Uganda*. Oxford and Kampala: Oxfam & Fountain Publishers Ltd.
- Lepore, S. J., & Evans, G. W. (1996). Coping with Multiple Stressors on the Environment. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 350-377). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Levine, S., & Adoko, J. (2006). Land Rights and Displacement in Northern Uganda. *Humanitarian Exchange*, 34, 23-25. Retrieved December 22, 2014, from <http://www.odihpn.org/humanitarian-exchange-magazine/issue-34/land-rights-and-displacement-in-northern-uganda>

- Livesay, J. (2003). The duality of systems: Networks as media and outcomes of movement mobilization. In J. M. Lehmann (Ed.), *Critical Theory: Diverse Objects, Diverse Subjects* (pp185-221). Oxford: Elsevier Science Ltd.
- Livingstone, G. (2003). *Inside Colombia Drugs, Democracy and War*. New Brunswick: Rutgers University Press.
- López Caballero, A. (2013). Calgary Papers in Military and Strategic Studies, Occasional Paper Number 9, 169-172. Retrieved April 21, 2015, from cpmss.journalhosting.ucalgary.ca/index.php/cpmss/article/download/45/38
- Lowe, L., & Schilderman, T. (2001). The Impact of Policies, Institutions and Processes in Urban Up-Grading. Bourton on Dunsmore: RGUU International Workshop. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from http://r4d.dfid.gov.uk/PDF/Outputs/Urbanisation/R7850_LoweandSchilderman_RG UU1.pdf
- Mabikke, S. B. (2011). *Escalating Land Grabbing in Post-Conflict Regions of Northern Uganda: A Need for Strengthening Good Land Governance in Acholi Region*. Retrieved December 22, 2014, from <http://www.oicrf.org/document.asp?ID=10200>
- Macfarlane, S. N., Thielking, C. J., & Weiss, T. G. (2004). The Responsibility to Protect: Is Anyone Interested in Humanitarian Intervention. *Third World Quarterly*, 25(5), 977-992.
- Manaktala, S., & Dixit, P. (2005). Livelihood analysis in the Rayagada Block of the Gajapati District, Orissa. *International Development Enterprises (India), Delhi, India and Centre for Community Development (CCD)*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://r4d.dfid.gov.uk/PDF/Outputs/CropPostHarvest/R8266-Livelihood-analysis-20pp.pdf>
- Marsh, E. R. (1978). Maslow's Implied Matrix: A Clarification of the Need Hierarchy Theory. *Social Behavior and Personality*, 6(1), 113-116.
- Marthoz, J., Gibbons, P., & Piquard, B. (2003). *Working in Conflict - Working on Conflict*. Bilbao: University of Deusto.
- Martin, E. (2010). Capacity-building and Partnership in Northern Uganda. Humanitarian Exchange, Number 46, 41-43. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from http://www.globalprotectioncluster.org/_assets/files/aors/protection_mainstreaming/Humanitarian_Exchange_Vol.46_2010_EN.pdf
- Martin, S. (2010). Forced Migration, the Refugee Regime and the Responsibility to Protect. In L. Glanville & S. E. Davies (Ed.), *Protecting the Displaced* (pp.13-34). Leiden: Koninklijke Brill.
- Martiniello, G. (2013). *Accumulation by Dispossession, Agrarian Change and Resistance in Northern Uganda*. Kampala: Makere University.
- Maslow, A. (1943). A Preface to Motivation Theory. *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 5(1), 85-92.
- Maslow, A. (1943). A Theory of Human Motivation. *Psychological Review*, 50(4), 370-396.

- Maslow, A. (1959). *New Knowledge in Human Values*. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers.
- Maslow, A. (1970). *Motivation and Personality* (3rd ed.). New York: Harper and Row Publishers INC.
- Maslow, A. (1973). R. J. Lowry (ed.), *Dominance, Self-Esteem, Self-Actualization: Germinal Papers of A.H. Maslow*. Monterey California: Brooks/Cole Publishing Company.
- Maslow, A. (1996). E. Hoffman (ed.), *Future Visions The Unpublished Papers of Abraham Maslow*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Mason, J. (1996). *Qualitative Researching*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Matt, I. (2013). Defeating Colombia's Oldest Insurgency. *The RUSI Journal*, 158(1), 20-27. Retrieved April 21, 2015, from <http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/03071847.2013.774636>
- Mattar, V., & White, P. (2005). *Consistent and Predictable Responses to IDPs*. Geneva: UNHCR Evaluation and Policy Analysis Unit.
- McCracken, G. (1988). *The Long Interview*. New Bury, Beverly Hills, London and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- McLean, P. (2002). Colombia: Failed, failing, or just weak? *The Washington Quarterly*, 25(3), 123-134.
- McCorquodale, R. (2006). Beyond State Sovereignty: The International Legal System and Non-State Participants. *International Law*, 8, 103-159.
- Mooney, E. (2008). The Guiding Principles and the Responsibility to Protect. *FMR-GP10*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/FMRpdfs/GP10/GP10.pdf>
- Mooney, E. (2010). Something Old, Something New, Something Borrowed... Something Blue? The Protection Potential of a Marriage of Concepts between R2P and IDP Protection. *Global Responsibility to Protect*, 2, 60-85.
- Morris, T. (2006). UNHCR, IDPs and Clusters. *FMR*, 25, 54-55. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/sites/fmr/files/FMRdownloads/en/FMRpdfs/FMR25/FMR2531.pdf>
- MSF. (2004). *Life in Northern Uganda All Shades of Grief and Fear*. Available from <http://www.doctorswithoutborders.org/country-region/uganda>
- Mugaju, J. (2000). *No-Party Democracy in Uganda Myths and Realities*. Kampala: Fountain Publishers.
- Mundt, A., & Ferris, E. (2008). Durable Solutions for IDPs in Protracted Situations: Three Case Studies. Available from <http://www.brookings.edu/research/papers/2008/10/28-internal-displacement-mundt>

- Murray, C. (2001). Livelihoods Research: Some Conceptual and Methodological Issues. *Chronic Poverty Research Centre*, Background Paper 5. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from http://r4d.dfid.gov.uk/PDF/Outputs/ChronicPoverty_RC/05Murray.pdf
- Mutibwa, P. (1992). *Uganda since Independence A story of Unfulfilled Hopes*. London: Hurst & Company.
- Mwenda, A. (2010). Uganda's politics of foreign aid and violent conflict: the political uses of the LRA rebellion. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 45-58). London, New York: Zed Books.
- Mychajlyszyn. (2005).
- Nanda, V. P. (2007). History and Foundations for Refugee Security, Health and Wellbeing under International Law. In J. D. White, & A. J. Marsella (Ed.), *Fear of Persecution: Global Human Rights, International Law and Human Wellbeing* (pp.151-176). Lanham, Boulder, New York, Toronto and Plymouth UK: Lexington Books (A division of Rowman & Littlefield Publishers INC).
- Nations Online. (n.d.). *Map Colombia*. Retrieved May 15, 2015, from http://www.nationsonline.org/oneworld/map/colombia_map.htm
- No Author. (2008). *Is the PRDP Politics as Usual: Update on the Implementation of Uganda's Peace, Recovery and Development Plan*. Retrieved December 22, 2014, from www.beyondjuba.org/BJP1/Conference.../PRDPpresentation.pdf
- Nowak, M. (2004). The International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights. In R. Hanski, & M. Suksi (Ed.), *An Introduction to the International Protection of Human Rights* (pp. Not available). Turku/Abo: Institute for Human Rights Abo Akademi University.
- NRC/IDMC., & UNOCHA. (2008). *Guidance on Profiling Internally Displaced Persons*. Available from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/assets/publications/2008/200804-idp-profiling-guidance-thematic-en.pdf>
- O'Callaghan, S., Jaspars, S., & Pavanello, S. (2009). Losing Ground: Protection and Livelihoods in the Occupied Palestinian Territory. *ODI HPG Working Paper*, July. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from www.alnap.org/pool/files/4616.pdf
- OCHA. (1999). *OCHA Orientation Handbook on Complex Emergencies*. Geneva: United Nations Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs.
- OCHA. (2006). *Update on Humanitarian Reform*. Geneva: United Nations Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs.
- OCHA/HRSU. (2007). *Background Note for Global Cluster/ Donor Meeting on 30 October 2007*. Retrieved January 13, 2009, from the Humanitarian Reform Support Unit website: www.humanitarianreform.org/.../cluster%20approach%20page/.../The%20Cluster%20Approach%20-%20Reflections.doc

- Ofcansky, T. P. (1996). *Uganda Tarnished Pearl of Africa*. Boulder: Westview Press.
- OHCHR. (1948). *Universal Declaration of Human Rights*. Retrieved November 09, 2010, from http://www.ohchr.org/ENG/UDHR/Documents/IDHR_Translations/eng.pdf
- OHCHR. (1966). *International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights and International Covenant on Economic Social and Cultural Rights*. Retrieved November 09, 2010, from <http://www2.ohchr.org/english/law/>
- OPM. (2012). *Peace, Recovery and Development Plan for Northern Uganda 2*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from the Office of the Prime Minister website: <http://opm.go.ug/resource-center/policy-archive/prdp-2-to-translate-existing-investments-into-functional-facilities-for-development.html>
- OPM-DDRR. (2004). *The National Policy for Internally Displaced Persons*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from the Office of the Prime Minister Department of Disaster Preparedness and Refugees website: <http://www.opm.go.ug/departments/department-of-disaster-preparedness-management-refugees/department-of-relief-disaster-preparedness-and-management.html>
- OAS. (1999). *Context for the Analysis of the Human Rights Situation in Colombia*. Retrieved May 9, 2012 from www.cidh.org/countryrep/Colom99en/Chapter-1.htm
- Oslender, U. (2007). Violence in development: the logic of forced displacement on Colombia's Pacific coast. *Development in Practice*, 17(6), 752-764.
- Otto, J.A.A. (2002). *Between Two Fires The light of IDPs in Northern Uganda*. Gulu: Human Rights Focus. Retrieved December 18, 2014, from www.humiliationstudies.org/documents/OnenBetweenTwoFires.pdf
- Otunnu. (1998).
- Oxfam. (2008). *The Guide to the HAP Standard Humanitarian Accountability and Quality Management*. London, Dorset, Herndon: Oxfam GB for HAP International. Available from <http://policy-practice.oxfam.org.uk/publications/the-guide-to-the-hap-standard-humanitarian-accountability-and-quality-management-115518>
- Oxfam. (2008). *From Emergency to Recovery: Rescuing Northern Uganda's Transition*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from www.oxfam.org/sites/.../bp118-uganda-from-emergency-to-recovery.pdf
- Palacios, M. (2006). *Between Legitimacy and Violence - A History of Colombia , 1875-2002*. Durham and London: Duke University Press.
- Pantuliano, S., & O'Callaghan, S. (2006). The 'Protection Crisis': A Review of Field-based Strategies for Humanitarian Protection in Darfur. *ODI HPG Discussion Paper*, December. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/publications/230-protection-crisis-strategies-humanitarian-darfur>

- Parfitt, T. (2004). The Ambiguity of Participation: A Qualified Defence of Participatory Development. *Third World Quarterly*, 25(3), 537-556.
- Park, P. (2006). Knowledge and Participatory Research. In P. Reason, & H. Bradbury (Ed.), *Handbook of Action Research Participative Inquiry and Practice* (pp. 81-90). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications Ltd.
- Parker, J. D. A., & Endler, N.S. (1996). Coping and Defense: A Historical Overview. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 3-23). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Paul, D. (1999). Protection in Practice: Field-Level Strategies for Protecting Civilians from Deliberate Harm. *RRN Network Paper*, 30 (July), 1-43. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <https://www.odi.org/publications/385-protection-practice-field-level-strategies-protecting-civilians-deliberate-harm>
- Pavlish, C., & Ho, A. (2009). Displaced Persons' Perceptions of Human Rights in Southern Sudan. *International Nursing Review*, 56, 416-425. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/19930069>
- Perrot, S. (2010). Northern Uganda: a 'forgotten conflict' again? The impact of the internationalization of the resolution process. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 187-204). London and New York: Zed Books.
- Pham, P., & Vinck, P. (2010). *Transitioning to Peace A Population-Based Survey on Attitudes About Social Reconstruction and Justice in Northern Uganda*. Berkeley: Human Rights Center. Retrieved December 20, 2014 from http://www.researchgate.net/publication/228198488_Transitioning_to_Peace_A_Population-Based_Survey_on_Attitudes_About_Social_Reconstruction_and_Justice_in_Northern_Uganda
- Pham, P., Vinck, P., Stover, E., Moss, A., Wierda, M., & Bailey, R. (2007). *When the War Ends A Population Based Survey on Attitudes about Peace, Justice and Social Reconstruction in Northern Uganda*. Retrieved December 20, 2014 from http://www.researchgate.net/publication/228191511_When_the_War_Ends_A_Population-Based_Survey_on_Attitudes_about_Peace_Justice_and_Social_Reconstruction_in_Northern_Uganda
- Pham, P., Vinck, P., Wierda, M., Stover, E., & Di Giovanni, A. (2005). *Forgotten Voices A Population-Based Survey of Attitudes about Peace and Justice in Northern Uganda*. Available from <http://www.law.berkeley.edu/11979.htm>
- Porter, L. S., & Stone, A. A. (1996). An Approach to Assessing Daily Coping. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 133-150). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.

- Porter, L. W. (1961). A Study of Perceived Need Satisfactions in Bottom and Middle Management Jobs. *Journal of Applied Psychology*, 45(1), 1-10.
- Pugh, M., & Cobble M. (2001). Non-Nationalist Voting in Bosnian Municipal Elections: Implications for Democracy and Peacebuilding. *Journal of Peace Research*, 38(1), 27-47.
- Ramsbotham. (2005).
- Rangel Suárez, A. (2000). Parasites and Predators: Guerrillas and the Insurrection Economy of Colombia. *Journal of International Affairs*, 53(2), 577-601.
- Refugee Law Project. (2012). *From Arid Zones into the Desert The Uganda National IDP Policy Implementation 2004-2012*. Kampala: Refugee Law Project.
- Reid-Cunningham, A. R. (2008). *Maslow's Theory of Motivation and Hierarchy of Needs: A Critical Analysis*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Reychler. (2001).
- Reynolds Whyte, S., Mpisi Babiiha, S., Mukyala, R., & Meinert, L. (2012). Remaining Internally Displaced: Missing Links to Security in Northern Uganda. *Journal of Refugee Studies*, 26(2), 283-301.
- Richani, N. (1997). The political economy of violence: the war-system in Colombia. *Journal of Interamerican Studies & World Affairs*, 39(2), 37-81.
- Ridderbos, K. (2011). The Kampala Convention and Obligation of Armed Groups. *FMR*, 37, 36-37. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.fmreview.org/non-state/Ridderbos.html>
- Robertson, A.H. (1982). *Human Rights in the World* (2nd ed.). Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Romero, M. (2000). Changing identities and contested settings: Regional elites and the paramilitaries in Colombia. *International Journal of Politics, Culture and Society*, 14(1), 51-69.
- Rowan, J. (1999). Ascent and Descent in Maslow's Theory. *Journal of Humanistic Psychology*, 39, 125-133.
- Rubongoya, J. B. (2007). *Regime Hegemony in Museveni's Uganda*. New York, Houndmills, Basingstoke and Hampshire: Palgrave Macmillan.
- Rugadya, M. (2006). *A Review of Literature on Post Conflict Land Policy and Administration Issues, During Return and Resettlement of IDPs: International Experience and Lessons from Uganda*. Retrieved December 19, 2014, from www.globalprotectioncluster.org/.../Uganda/.../Uganda_Post-conflict_L
- Russell, B. H. (2000). *Social Research Methods: Qualitative and Quantitative Approaches*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Saikal, A. (2000). Dimensions of State Disruption and International Responses. *Third World Quarterly*, 21(1), 39-49.
- Sandole, D.J.D. (1999). *Capturing the Complexity of Conflict*. London: Pinter.

- Sarantakos, S. (2005). *Social Research* (3rd ed.). Houndsmills, Basingstoke and New York: Palgrave Macmillan.
- Scherrer, C. P. (2003). *Ethnicity, Nationalism and Violence*. Aldershot and Burlington: Ashgate.
- Schlachter, O. (1983). Human Dignity as a Normative Concept. *The American Journal of International Law*, 77(4), 848-854. Retrieved from JSTOR database.
- Schomerus, M. (2010). Chasing the Kony story. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 93-112). London and New York: Zed Books.
- Schultz, D. (1979). *Groei Psychologie*. Haarlem: De Toorts.
- Schwandt, T. A. (2000). Three Epistemological Stances for Qualitative Inquiry: Interpretivism, Hermeneutics and Social Constructivism. In N. K. Denzin, & Y. S. Lincoln (Ed.), *Handbook of Qualitative Research* (pp. 189-214) (2nd ed.). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications Ltd.
- Schwarzer, R., & Schwarzer, C. (1996). A Critical Survey of Coping Instruments. In M. Zeidner, & N. S. Endler (Ed.), *Handbook of Coping* (pp. 107-132). New York, Chichester, Brisbane, Toronto and Singapore: John Wiley & Sons INC.
- Sen, A. (1979). *Equality of What*. The Tanner Lecture on Human Values, Stanford University. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from http://www.tannerlectures.utah.edu/_documents/a-to-z/s/sen80.pdf
- Sen, A. (1985). Well-Being, Agency and Freedom: The Dewey Lectures 1984. *The Journal of Philosophy*, 82(4), 169-221. Retrieved from JSTOR database.
- Sen, A. (1985). *The Standard of Living*. The Tanner Lecture on Human Values, Cambridge University. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from <http://www.tannerlectures.utah.edu/lectures/documents/sen86.pdf>
- Sen, A. (2002). Response to Commentaries. *Studies in Comparative International Development*, 37(2), 78-86. Retrieved June 24, 2016, from DOI: 10.1007/BF02686264
- Sen, A. (2009). *The Idea of Justice*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press.
- Sewell Jr, W. J. (1992).
- Shafer. (1953).
- Shipway, M. (2008). *Decolonization and its Impact*. Malden MA USA, Oxford UK and Carlton Victoria Australia: Blackwell Publishing.
- Simon Okolo, B. (2008). Human Security and the Responsibility to Protect Approach. *Human Security Journal*, 7 (Summer), 46-60.
- Simons, G. (2004). *Colombia - Brutal History*. London: SAQI.
- Slim, H., & Bonwich, A. (2005). *Protection An ALNAP Guide for Humanitarian Agencies*. London: ODI. Retrieved January 13, 2009, from <http://www.alnap.org/resource/5263>

- Smaling, A., Wester, F.A., & Mulders, L. (2000). *Praktijkgericht Kwalitatief Onderzoek*. Bussum: Coutinho.
- Soones, I. (1998). Sustainable Rural Livelihoods: A Framework for Analysis. *IDS Working Paper*, 72. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from, <http://www.ids.ac.uk/ids/research/env/index.html>
- Springhall, J. (2001). *Decolonization since 1945*. Houndsmill, Basingstroke, Hampshire and New York: Palgrave.
- Stebbins, R. A. (2001). *Exploratory Research in the Social Sciences*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Steets, J., & Grünewald, F. (2010). *Uganda*. Berlin: Plaisians, Groupe Urgence Réhabilitation Développement and Global Public Policy Institute. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://reliefweb.int/report/uganda/uganda-iasc-cluster-approach-evaluation-2nd-phase-country-study-april-2010>
- Steiner, R. (1998). Colombia's income from the drug trade. *World Development*, 26(6), 1013-1031.
- Stoddard, A., Harmer, A., Haver, K., Salomons, D., & Wheeler, V. (2007). *Cluster Approach Evaluation Final*. OCHA Evaluation and Studies Section. Available from <https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/odi-assets/publications-opinion-files/4955.pdf>
- Strauss, A., & Corbin, J. (1998). *Basics of Qualitative Research: Techniques and Procedures for Developing Grounded Theory*. London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Sweig, J. (2002). What Kind of War for Colombia? *Foreign Affairs*, September/October, 122-141.
- Tadi, S. (2014, December 09). 12 Ways the Kampala Convention Protects Displaced People from Legal Limbo [Web log message]. Retrieved from <http://www.internal-displacement.org/blog/2014/12-ways-the-kampala-convention-protects-displaced-people-from-legal-limbo>
- Theidon, K. (2007). Transitional Subjects: The Disarmament, Demobilization and Reintegration of Former Combatants in Colombia. *The International Journal of Transitional Justice*, 1(1), 66-90.
- Theidon, K. (2009). Reconstructing Masculinities: The Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration of Former Combatants in Colombia. *Human Rights Quarterly*, 31(1), 1-34.
- Thomas, M., Moore, B., & Butler, L.J. (2008). *Crisis of Empire*. London: Hodder Education.
- Titeca, K. (2010). The spiritual order of the LRA. In T. Allen & K. Vlassenroot (Ed.), *The Lord Resistance Army Myth and Reality* (pp. 59-73). London and New York: Zed Books.
- Trexler, & Schuh. (1964).

- Tribe, C. (1982). *Profile of Three Theories*. Dubuque, USA: Kendall/Hunt Publishing Company.
- Trigg, A.B. (2004). Deriving the Engel Curve: Pierre Bourdieu and the Social Critique of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs. *Review of Social Economy*, LXII (3), 393-406.
- Tripp, A. M. (2010). *Museveni's Uganda Paradoxes of Power in a Hybrid Regime*. Boulder and London: Lynne Rienner Publishers, Inc.
- Tumwine, F., & BakamaNume, B. (2010). *Contemporary Geography of Uganda*. Dar es Salaam: Mkuki na Nyota Publishers.
- Ugarriza, J. E., & Craig, M. J. (2012). The Relevance of Ideology to Contemporary Armed Conflicts A Quantitative Analysis of Former Combatants in Colombia. *Journal of Conflict Resolution*, 57(3), 445-477.
- UNDP. (1994). *Human Development Report 1994: New Dimensions of Human Security*. New York: UNDP. Available from http://hdr.undp.org/sites/default/files/reports/255/hdr_1994_en_complete_nostats.pdf
- UNGA. (2005). *General Assembly Resolution A/60/L.1*. Retrieved February 08, 2011, from <http://www.unep.org/greenroom/documents/outcome.pdf>
- UNHCR. (1951). *Convention and protocol Relating to the Status of Refugees*. Retrieved November 09, 2010, from <http://www.unhcr.org/3b66c2aa10.html>
- UNHCR. (1994). *UNHCR's Operational Experience with Internally Displaced Persons*. Retrieved November 09, 2010, from <http://www.refworld.org/pdfid/3ae6b3400.pdf>
- UNHCR. (2006). *Global Report 2006*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/publications/fundraising/501f7d2e2/global-report-2006.html>
- UNHCR. (2006). *The State of the World's Refugees: Human Displacement in the New Millennium*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press. Available from <http://www.unhcr.org/4a4dc1a89.html>
- UNHCR. (2007). *Global Report 2007*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr07/>
- UNHCR. (2007). *UNHCR's Role in Support of Enhanced Humanitarian Response to Situations of Internal Displacement. Update on UNHCR's Leadership Role within the Cluster Approach and IDP Operational Workplans*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/464dd68f2.html>
- UNHCR. (2007). *The Protection of Internally Displaced Persons and the Role of UNHCR Informal Consultative Meeting*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/protection/idps/50f951df9/protection-internally-displaced-persons-role-unhcr-excom-informal-consultative.html>
- UNHCR. (2007). *Global Appeal 2007*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/publications/fundraising/4a0a900f6/unhcr-global-appeal-2007.html>

- UNHCR. (2008). *Global Report 2008*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr08/#/home>
- UNHCR. (2009). *Global Report 2009*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr09/>
- UNHCR. (2010). *Global Report 2010*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr10/#/home>
- UNHCR. (2011). *Global Report 2011*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr11/index.xml>
- UNHCR. (2012). *Global Report 2012*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr12/index.xml>
- UNHCR. (2013). *Global Report 2013*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr13/index.xml>
- UNHCR. (2014). *Global Report 2014*. Retrieved January 22, 2016, from <http://www.unhcr.org/gr14/index.xml>
- UNPBF. (2009). *UN Peace Building and Recovery Assistance Plan for Northern Uganda*. Available from <http://www.unpbf.org/countries/uganda/>
- UNPO. (2008). United Nations Peacekeeping Operations Principles and Guidelines. Retrieved January 22, 2016 from http://www.un.org/en/peacekeeping/documents/capstone_eng.pdf
- UNOCHA. (1998). *Guiding Principles on Internal Displacement*. Available from <https://docs.unocha.org/sites/dms/Documents/GuidingPrinciplesDispl.pdf>
- UNRC. (2010). *United Nations Development Assistance Framework 2010 to 2014*. Retrieved December 23, 2014, from <http://www.undg.org/?P=232>
- Uprimny Yepes, R. (2009). Transformative Reparations of Massive Gross Human Rights Violations: Between Corrective and Distributive Justice. *Netherlands Quarterly of Human Rights*, 27(4), 625-647. Retrieved June 9, 2015, from <http://heinonline.org>
- US Department of Justice. (2010). *WWI Casualties and Death Rates*. Retrieved February 16, 2016, from https://www.pbs.org/greatwar/resources/casdeath_pop.html
- Uttamchandani, S. (2004). Humanitarianism. P. Gibbons (Ed.) unpublished project submitted in partial fulfilment of M.Sc. during 7th Humanitarian Congress Theory and Practice of Humanitarian Action. Dublin: UCD. Retrieved February 16, 2016, from https://www.google.nl/url?sa=t&rct=j&q=&esrc=s&source=web&cd=1&cad=rja&uact=8&ved=0ahUKEwiN-czj6fvKAhVEvA8KHRJ-BIIQFggdMAA&url=http%3A%2F%2Fhumanitarian-congress-berlin.org%2Fdownload_file%2F25%2F192%2F&usq=AFQjCNGAhdJ2yXF8Jg-sYtNEUSLRBM5NHw
- van Strien, P. J. (1997). Towards a Methodology of Psychological Practice. *Theory of Psychology*, 5, 683-700.

- Villegas de Posada, C. (2009). Motives for the enlistment and demobilization of illegal armed combatants in Colombia. *Peace and Conflict*, 15, 263-280.
- Wahba Mahmoud, A., & Bridwell, L. G. (1976). Maslow Reconsidered: A Review of Research on the Need Hierarchy Theory. *Organizational Behaviour and Human Performance*, 15, 212-240.
- Wairimu, W. W. (2014). *Transition of Stagnation? Everyday life, food security and recovery in post-conflict Northern Uganda*. Wageningen: PhD.
- Waites, B. (1999). *Europe and the Third World*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Water Management Consultants. (2004). *Small scale private sector participation in the rural water supply sector. Phase I Knowledge review*. Retrieved May 17, 2012, from <http://r4d.dfid.gov.uk/PDF/Outputs/Water/R8335-Inceptionreview.pdf>
- Waters, L.K., & Roach, D. (1973). A Factor Analysis of Need-fulfilment items designed to measure Maslow's Need Categories. *Personnel Psychology*, 26, 185-190.
- Weeks, W. (2002). *Pushing the Envelope Moving Beyond 'Protected Villages' in Northern Uganda*. Retrieved December 18, 2014 from friendsforpeaceinafrica.org/documents/uganda_idp_study.pdf
- Weerasinghe, S., & Ferris, E. (2011). *Security Council, Internal Displacement and Protection – Recommendations for Strengthening Action through Resolutions*. Brookings Institute - London School of Economics Project on Internal Displacement. Available from https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/Security_Council_ID_Protection.pdf
- Weinstein, J. M. (2007). *Inside Rebellion: The Politics of Insurgent Violence*. Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Weiss, T. G. (2003). Internal Exiles: What Next for Internally Displaced Persons? *Third World Quarterly*, 24(3), 429-447.
- White, J. D. (2007). Introduction: Fear of Persecution. In J. D. White, & A. J. Marsella (Ed.), *Fear of Persecution: Global Human Rights, International Law and Human Wellbeing* (pp.1-14). Lanham, Boulder, New York, Toronto and Plymouth UK: Lexington Books (A division of Rowman & Littlefield Publishers INC).
- Williams, G. (2004). Evaluating participatory development: tyranny, power and (re)politicisation. *Third World Quarterly*, 25(3), 557-578.
- Wofford, J.C. (1971). The Motivational Bases of Job Satisfaction and Job Performance. *Personnel Psychology*, 24, 501-518.
- Wolf. (1958).
- Woodward, G. (2004).
- Yin, R. K. (2003). *Case Study Research: Design and methods* (3rd ed.). London, Thousand Oaks and New Delhi: Sage Publications.
- Zeelen J.J.M. (1994). Handelingsonderzoek en programma-evaluatie. *Sociale Interventie*, 3(1), 21-27.

- Zeelen J.J.M., Rampedi, M., & De Jong, G. (2011). Adult Education in South Africa: challenges for implementation. *International Journal of Lifelong Education*, 30(3), 385-402.
- Zeelen J.J.M., Blaak, M., & Openjuru, G.L. (2013). Non-formal vocational education in Uganda: Practical empowerment through a workable alternative. *International journal of educational development*, 33(1), 88-97.
- Zeelen J.J.M., Rampedi, M., & Van der Linden, J. (2014). Grounding Adult Education Research in Rural Areas Reflections on the Development of a Research Program at the University of Limpopo in South Africa. *Adult Education Quarterly*, 64(1), 20-38. Retrieved June 25, 2016 from <http://dx.doi.org/10.1177/0741713613495086>